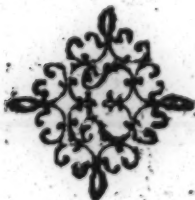


THE
NEW TESTAMENT
OF OUR LORD IESVS
CHRIST, TRANSLATED
out of Greeke by THEOD.
BEZ. And Eng-
lished by I. T.

LUKE II. X.

*Beholde, I bring you glad tidings of great joy
that shall be to all the people.*



AT DORT.

Printed, by Isaac Canin,
1601.

At the expensis of the wircs of Henric
Charteris, and Andrew Hays, in
Edinburgh.

Cum Privilegio Regali.

THE VSE OF THE EPACT to know the age of the Moone, &c.

IF ye would know how old the Moone is, ye shall looke what daye of the Moneth it is, that ye would know the age of the Moone. Then looke what number the Epact is that yeere, & put them both together: then count how many moneths it is from the moneth of March, & count March for one: and put the al together, and see what number that maketh. And if the number be more then xxx, cast away \S xxx. & looke what resteth, & the Moone shall be so many daies old. If the number be lesse then xxx. whatsoeuer that number bee, the Moone is so many daies old. But if the number bee iust xxx, then the Moone changech the same day, or it is \S first day of the Moone. As for example. If ye would know how old the Moone is the xxij. day of May 1575. which is Whit-sunday first keepe in remembrance the xxij. day, then looke the Epact that yeere, which is xviij. put them together, & they make xl. then count so many moneths as are from the moneth of March to May, & then shall be three: eke thereto the foresaid number xl. and they make xliij. Then cast away xxx. shall rest xiiij. and so the Moone shall be xiiij. daies old the same day, when you know the change of the Moone put thereto viij. & the beginning of the first quarter, for the xv. day is first Moone, & the next viij. dayes beginneth the last quarter.

Note also, that the Epact keepeth continually a course of xxx. yeeres, by putting to each yeare xj. and casting away the number of xj. and whatsoeuer remaineth more then xxx. the same is \S Epact that yeare. As you shall know by the yeare 1577. wherein the Epact is x. eke therunto xj. & that maketh xli. cast away xxx. so resteth x. which shall be the Epact the yeare 1572. The Epact changech euery yeere the first day of March.

PAC
, &c.

ome is, y
acth it is
loome. The
yeere, &
ow many
ch, & con
er, and for
the num
X. & looke
any daies
xhauso
s for many
xxx. wh
it is 5 sup
ye would
day of May
cepe is a
le Epact
er, &
onech u
, & then
numbers
ay xxx.
xiiij. da
the chang
beginn
dione, &
quarter
in contin
to e
ber of x
en xxx
shal ha
act is x
call an
Epact
every yere

AN ALMANACK

for the space of 14. yeares
to come

The year of God.	Dominicall letter	Golden number.	The Epact.	Fasting euen.	Easter day.	Whitsunday.
601 D.	6	6	25.	Feb 12.	Apr. 31.	May
602 C.	7	17	17.	Feb 4.	Apr. 23.	May
603 B.	8	28	9.	Marc. 24.	Apr. 12.	June
604 A. G.	9	9	22.	Feb. 8.	Apr. 27.	May
605 F.	10	20	13.	Feb. 13.	Mar 19.	May
606 E.	11	1	5.	Marc. 20.	Apr. 8.	June
607 D.	12	12	18	Feb. 5.	Apr. 24.	May
608 C. B.	13	23	10.	Feb. 27.	Mar 15.	May
609 A.	14	4	1.	Mar. 16.	Apr 4.	June
610 G.	15	15	21.	Feb. 8.	Apr 27.	May
611 F.	16	26	6.	Feb. 24.	Mar 12.	May
612 E. D.	17	7	6.	Feb. 12.	Apr 13.	May
613 C.	18	18	17.	Feb. 4.	April 23.	May
614 B.	19	29	9.	Mar. 24.	Apr. 12.	June

AN

IANVARY.

name	A	1	Circumcision.	Sunne
riseth	b	2	The 6. daye, the	setteth
3. 25	c	3	three wise men ac-	5. 35
	d	4	knowledge Christ	
	e	5	and offer gifts vnto	
	f	6	him.	3. 41
	g	7	Epiphanie.	
	A	8		
5. 19	b	9		
	c	10		
	d	11		
	e	12		
8. 11	f	13	Sun in Aquarius.	3. 49
	g	14	The 10. day Na-	
	A	15	buchodonosor be-	
	b	16	sieged Ierusalem	18 3. 58
8. 2.	c	17	Moneths in the 9.	
	d	18	yeere of Sedechias.	
	e	19	The 29. daye the	4. 7.
	f	20	middes of winter	
	g	21	after Ptolomy.	
7. 43	A	22		
	b	23	The 24. day Cai-	
	c	24	us Caligula was kil-	4.
	d	25	led with his wife &	
7. 34	e	26	his daughter.	
	f	27	Conuerfion of Paule.	
	g	28		
	A	29		
	b	30		
	c	31		

FEBRVARIE.

Sunne riseth	d	1	Purificatiō of Mary.	Sunne setteth
7. 27	e	2		4. 33
	f	3		
	g	4		
	A	5		
	b	6	The 8. daye the	
7. 19	c	7	beginning of spring	4. 21
	d	8	time among y Ro-	
	e	9	manes after Plinius	
	f	10	Sunne in Pīscer.	
	g	11		
7. 9	A	12		4. 51
	b	13	The 14 day 1594.	
	c	14	HENRY FRE-	
	d	15	DERICKE Prince	5. 4
	e	16	of Scotland, Sonne	
6. 56	f	17	to King IAMES	
	g	18	the 6. was borne in	
	A	19	the Castell of Stri-	
	b	20	vilng.	5. 16
	c	21		
6. 44	d	22		
	e	23		
	f	24		
	g	25		
	A	26		
	b	27		5. 27
	c	28		

MARCH.

<i>Sunne</i>	d	1		<i>Sunne</i>
<i>rises</i>	e	2		<i>seteth</i>
6. 21	f	3	The 3. daye the	5. 39
	g	4	Temple of Ierusa-	
6. 14	A	5	lem was builded a-	
	b	6	gaine, & consecra-	5. 46
	c	7	ted with great so-	
	d	8	lemnity 1. Efd. 6.	
	e	9	Before the birth of	6. 0.
6. 0	f	10	Christ. 515.	
	g	11	<i>Sunne in Aries</i>	
	A	12	The 12. Lazarus	
	b	13	dyeth.	
	c	14	The 13. The fa-	
	d	15	sting of Hester is	
	e	16	celebrate, because	
	f	17	that daye was ap-	6. 9
5. 51	g	18	oynted for the	
	A	19	slaughter of J. Iews	
	b	20	and thereafter was	
	c	21	stayd. Efd. 3.	6. 21
	d	22		
5. 39	e	23		
	f	24		
	g	25	<i>Annunt. of Mary.</i>	7. 31
	A	26	The 5. Venis	
5. 27	b	27	was begun to bee	
	c	28	builded, anno 421.	
	d	29		
	e	30		
	f	31		

APRILL.

Sunne setteih	Sunne riseth			The firste daye	Sunne setteih
5. 39	5. 12	b	3	Rome was destroi-	6. 49
		c	4	ed by Alarick king	
5. 46	5. 1.	d	5	of Goths, after two	
		e	6	yeares siege. anno	
		f	7	412. Blondus. The	6. 59
6. 0.		g	8	Temple of Ierusa-	
		A	9	lemis purged from	
		b	10	Idolatrie by King	
	4. 50	c	11	Ezech .2.Par.2.9.	7. 10
		d	12	Sunne in Taurus	
		e	13		
		f	14		7. 22
6. 9	4. 38	g	15		
		A	16	The 17. Pharaoh	
		b	17	pursued the people	7. 30
		c	18	of Israel.	
6. 21	4. 30	d	19	The 18. the peo-	
		e	20	ple passeth throw	
		f	21	the red Sea, and	
		g	22	Pharach with his	
7. 31		A	23	hoste is drowned.	7. 47
		b	24	Exod.14.15,	
		c	25		
		d	26		
	4. 19	e	27		
		f	28		
		g	29		
		A	30		

M A I E.

<i>Sonne</i>	b	1	<i>Philip and Iacob,</i>	<i>Sonne</i>
<i>riseth</i>	c	2		<i>seteth</i>
4. 7	d	3		7. 53
	e	4		
3. 59	f	5	The 6. Rome was	8. 1
	g	6	taken by the Duke	
	A	7	of Burbone, Anno,	
	b	8	1527.	
	c	9		
	d	10		
3. 49	e	11	<i>Sun in Gemini</i>	
	f	12		
	g	13	The 15. God did	8. 11
	A	14	rayne Manna to	
	b	15	people. Exod. 15	
	c	16	The 17. Noe en-	
	d	17	tered in the Arke,	
3. 36	e	18	Gen. 7.	8. 24
	f	19		
	g	20		
	A	21		
	b	22		
	c	23		
	d	24		8. 30
3. 30	e	25		
	f	26	The 27. Noe came	
	g	27	furth of the Arke,	
	A	28	Gen. 8. 9	
	b	29	The 29. Con-	
	c	30	stantinople was ta-	
	d	31	ken by Mahomet.	

IVNE.

Sunne setteth	Sunne riseth	e 1	The first day, the	Sunne setteth
7. 53	3. 24	f 2	people of Israel	8. 38.
8. 1		g 3	came in the hill of	
		A 4	Sinai: otherwise cal-	
	3. 22	b 5	led Casius, & there	
		c 6	abode almoste ane	8. 30
		d 7	yeare. Exo. 19.	
		e 8	The 6. daye, A-	
		f 9	lexander the greate	
		g 10	was borne.	
8. 11		A 11	S. Barnarde.	
	3. 21	b 12	The sun in cancer	8. 39
		c 13		
		d 14		
		e 15	The 23. King	
		f 16	Assuerus sent a Pro-	
8. 24		g 17	clamation thorowe	8. 37
		A 18	his Prouinces, in the	
		b 19	fauour of y ^e Iewes	
	3. 13	c 20	against Amā, & his	
		d 21	conspiration. Ester.	
		e 22	8.	
8. 30		f 23		
	3. 16	g 24	Nativitie of Iohn B	8. 34
		A 25		
		b 26		
		c 27		
		d 28		
		e 29		
		f 30		

IVLY.

Sunne rise	g A	1 2		Sunne setteth
3. 31	b	3		8 29.
	c	4		
3. 36	d	5		
	e	6	The 2. daye Iohn	8. 24
	f	7	Hus was hurut in	
	g	8	the Connfell of	
	A	9	Constance for the	
	b	10	trueth. 415.	
	c	11	Sunne in Leo.	
	d	12		8. 11
	e	13		
	f	14		
3. 49	g	15	The 16. Rome	
	A	16	was ouerthrowen	
	b	17	by the Galles, be-	8. 1
	c	18	fore Christs birth,	
3. 59	d	19	376.yeares.	
	e	20		
	f	21		
	g	22	Mary Magdalene.	
	A	23		7 51.
	b	24		
	c	25	James the Apost.	
4. 9	d	26	The 29. James the	
	e	27	6. King of Scotland	
	f	28	was Crowned in	
	g	29	Striviling & ij. yeare	
	A	30	of his age. Anno,	
	b	31	1567.	

AUGVST

<i>Sunne setteeth</i>	<i>Sunne risseth</i>			<i>James day.</i>	<i>Sunne setteeth</i>
8. 29.	4. 23	c 1		The 1. day Aaro	7. 39
		d 2		died, the 1. 3. yeres	
		e 3		of his age. 40. yeres	
		f 4		after the coming	
8. 24	4. 32	g 5		out of Egypt. Nom.	7. 28
		A 6		10. 33.	
		b 7		<i>Saint Lawrence,</i>	
		c 8			
		d 9			
		e 10			
		f 11			
8. 11		g 12			7. 10
		A 13			
		b 14			
	4. 50	c 15		<i>Assump. of Mary</i>	
		d 16		<i>Sunne in virgo.</i>	
8. 1		e 17			
		f 18			
		g 19			
		A 20		The 19. Octavi-	
		b 21		us Augustus the	6. 5
		c 22		Emperour died, the	
7 51.	5. 4.	d 23		79. yere of his age	
		e 24		after Christs birth	
		f 25		15. yeres.	
	5. 18	g 26		<i>Saint Barthol.</i>	6. 5
		A 27			
		b 28			
		c 29			
		d 30		<i>Decollat. of Ioh.</i>	
		e 31		<i>Bapt.</i>	

SEPTEMBER.

Sunne riseth	f	1	Sunne setteih
5. 38	g	2	6. 28
	A	3	
	b	4	
	c	5	
	d	6	
5. 41	e	7	6. 19
	f	8	
	g	9	
	A	10	
	b	11	
	c	12	
6. 0	d	13	4. 0.
	e	14	
	f	15	
	g	16	
	A	17	
	b	18	
	c	19	
	d	20	
7 16	e	21	5. 44
	f	22	
	g	23	
	A	24	
	b	25	5. 32
6. 28	c	26	
	d	27	
	e	28	
	f	29	
	g	30	

The Nativ. of Mary.

Sun in Libra.

The 13. Titus the
Emperour dyed the
41 yere of his age,
the yere of Christ
83. after the destru-
ction of Ierusalem
10. yeres.

The 26. Solyman
with 140. Thousand
Turks beseged Vi-
enna in Austrich, but
in vaine. An. 1529.

Saint Michael.

OCTOBER.

<i>Sunne</i> <i>riseth</i> 6 42.	A 1 b 2 c 3 d 4 e 5 f 6	The first daye. The feast of the Trum- pets in remembrance that Isaac was de- liuered from the sacryfying. Luc. 23	<i>Sunne</i> <i>setteth</i> 5. 18
6. 54.	g 7 A 8 b 9 c 10 d 11 e 12		5. 6.
	f 13 g 14 A 15 b 16 c 17 d 18 e 19 f 20	<i>The Sunne in Scorp.</i> The 15. the feast of the Tabernacles continued 7. dayes Leu. 23. Ioh. 7. <i>Saint Luke</i>	4. 51
7. 9.	g 21 A 22 b 23 c 24 d 25 e 26 f 27		4. 35
7. 25	g 28 A 29 b 30 c 31		4. 24
7. 63	g 28 A 29 b 30 c 31	<i>Simon and Iude</i>	

NOVEMBER.

<i>Sonne seth</i>			<i>Sonne seth</i>
	d	1	
	e	2	
51	f	3	The 3. day Con-
	g	4	stantin the Empe-
	A	5	rour, the Sonne of
7. 59	b	6	Constantine dyed:
	c	7	the yeare of Christ.
	d	8	Anno 364.
	e	9	
	f	10	<i>Saint Martin</i>
	g	11	<i>Sun in Sagittarius.</i>
	A	12	
11	b	13	The 16. Ieroboam
	c	14	after the defection
	d	15	of the ten Trybes
	e	16	frō Roboā, erected
	f	17	two golden Calues
	g	18	in Dan & Bethell,
	A	19	& caused the peo-
	b	20	ple to goe worship
24	c	21	thē, y they should
	d	22	not goe vpto Ieru-
	e	23	salem. 1. King. 12.
	f	24	The 17. Vespasi-
	g	25	an the Emperour
	A	26	was borne, the yere
30	b	27	of Christ. 11.
	c	28	
	d	29	
	e	30	<i>Saint Andrew.</i>

*Sonne
riseth*
8. 3

8.

8. 3

8. 3

8. 3

DECEMBER.

ae	Sonne	f	1		Sonne
th	rifeth	g	2		ferreth
5.	8. 35	A	3		3. 25
		b	4		
	8. 8.	c	5		
		d	6		3. 22
2.		e	7	Concept. of Mary.	
		f	8		
		g	9		
		A	10		
		b	11		
		c	12	Sonne in Capricor.	
		d	13	Luci Virgo.	
49	8. 39	e	14	The 15. The Ile	3. 21
		f	15	of Rhodes, after 6.	
		g	16	Moneths siege, was	
		A	17	rendred to Solyman	
		b	18	the Turke. Anno	3. 23
36	8. 37	c	19	1523.	
		d	20		
		e	21	Thomas Apostle.	
		f	22		
		g	23		3. 26
		A	24		
30		b	25	Nativity of Christ.	
	8. 34	c	26		
		d	27		
		e	28		
		f	29		
		g	30		
		A	31		

THE ORDER OF THE

Bookes of the New Testament, with
the number of their Chapters.

THE Gospel written by Matthew.
Chapters

By Marke

By Luke

By Iohn

The A&es of the Apostles.

THE EPISTLES.

Paul to the Romanes

The first to the Corinthians

The second to the Corinthians

To the Galatians

To the Ephesians.

To the Philippians

To the Colossians

The first to the Thessalonians

The second to the Thessalonians

The first to Timothie

The second to Timothie

To Titus

To Philemon

The Epistle to the Hebrewes

The Epistle of Iames

The first Epistle of Peter

The seconde Epistle of Peter

The first Epistle of Iohn

The second of Iohn

The third of Iohn

The Epistle of Iude

The Revelation of Iohn

22

16

24

21

22

16

16

13

6

6

4

4

5

3

6

4

3

one

13

5

5

3

5

one

one

one

22

That

misfe

Christ

I

hac beg

his bre

3 Ar

Thama

om be

4 A

rinada

gate S

5 A

Abd B

egate

6 A

David

was st

7 A

gan

A

one

one

one

one

one

one

one

one

one

one

one

one

one

one

one

THE HOLY GOSPEL
OF IESVS CHRIST AC-
cording to Saint Matthew.

CHAP. I.

*That Iesus is that Messias the Saviour pro-
mised to the fathers. 18 The nativite of
Christ.*

THE booke of the generation of Ie-
sus Christ the sonne of David the
sonne of Abraham.

1 Abraham begate Isaac. And I-
sac begate Iacob. And Iacob begate Iudas &
his brethren.

2 And Iudas begate Phares and Zara of
Thamar and Phares begate Esrom. And Es-
rom begate Aram.

3 And Aram begat Aminadab. And A-
minadab begate Naalson. And Naalson be-
gate Salmon.

4 And Salmon begate Booz of Rachab.
And Booz begate Obed of Ruth. And Obed
begate Iesse.

5 And Iesse begate David the king. And
David the king begate Solomon of her that
was the wife of Urias.

6 And Solomon begate Roboam. And
Roboam begate Abia. And Abia begate Asa

7 And Asa begate Iosaphat. And Iosaphat
begate Ioram. And Ioram begate Hozias.

8 And Hozias begate Ioatham, And Io-
atham begate Achaz. And Achaz begate Eze-

9 And Ezekias begate Manasses. And
Manasses begate Amon, And Amon begate
Iosias.

10 And Iosias begate Iakim. And Iakim
begate

5. MATTHEW.

begate Iechonias & his brethren about
time they were caried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were caried away
to Babylon Iechonias begat Salathiel, And
Salathiel begate Zorobabel.

13 And Zorobabel begate Abiud. And
Abiud begate Eliacim. And Eliacim begate
Zor.

14 And Azor begate Sadoc. And Sadoc
begate Achim. And Achim begate Eliud.

15 And Eliud begate Eleazar. And Eleazar
begate Matthan, And Matthan begate
Jacob.

16 And Iacob begat Ioseph the husband
of Mary, of whom was borne IESVS, the
is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham
to David, are fourteene generations. And
David vntil they were caried away into
Babylon, fourteene generations, and after they
were caried away into Babylon vntil Christ
fourteene generations,

18 ¶ Now of the birth of IESVS Christ was
thus, When as his mother Mary was betrothed
to Ioseph, before they came together
shee was founde with childe of the holy
Ghost.

19 Then Ioseph her husband being a
iust man, & not willing to make her a publicke
example, was minded to put her away secretly.

20 But whiles hee thought these things,
behold, the Angel of the Lord appeared
to him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph the
of David, feare not to take Mary thy
for that which is conceived in her, is
holy Ghost.

21 And shee shall bring forth a sonne,
thou shalt call his name IESVS: for hee
shall save his people from their sinnes.

22 And all this was done that it might
fulfill

CHAP. II:

filled, which is spoken of the Lord by the prophet saying.

23 Behold, a virgin shalbe with child, & shal beare a son, and they shal call his name Immanuel, which is by interpretation, God with vs.

24 ¶ Then Ioseph being raised frō sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lorde inioyned him and tooke his wife.

25 But he knew hir not, til she had brought forth her first borne sonne, & hee called his name IESVS.

CHAP. II:

The wise men, who are the first fruits of the Gentiles, worship Christ.

¶ When Iesus the was borne at Beth-lehem in Iudea in the dayes of Herod the king; holde, there came Wisemen from the East into Hierusalem;

2 Saying, Where is y King of the Iewes, that is borne? for wee haue seen his starre in the East, & are come to worship him.

3 When King Herod heard this, hee was troubled and al Hierusalem with him.

4 And gathering together all the chiefe Iestes and Scribes of the people, hee asked them where Christ should be borne.

5 And they sayd vnto him, At Beth-lehem in Iudea: for so it is written by the Prophet.

¶ And thou Beth-lehem in the lande of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes of Iuda: for out of the shal come the gouernour of Israel: for thou shalt feed that my people Israel.

¶ Then Herod priuily called the Wise-men, and diligently enquired of them the time of the starre that appeared,

8 And sent them to Beth-lehem, saying, Go and search diligently for the babe: and when ye haue found him, bring me word a-

A 2 gaing,

S. MATTHEWE.

gaine, that I may come also and wor-
him.

9 ¶ So when they had heard the King
they departed: and loe, the starre which they
had scene in the East, went before them,
it came and stood ouer the place where the
babe was.

10 And when they sawe the starre, they
reioyced with an exceeding great ioy.

11 And went into the house, and found
the babe with Marie his mother, & fel down
& worshipped him, & opened their treasures
and presented vnto him gifts, euen golde,
frankincense, & myrrhe.

12 And after they were warned of God
in a dreame that they should not goe againe
to Herode, they returned into their countrey
another way.

13 ¶ After their departure, beholde,
an Angel of the Lorde appeareth to Ioseph in
dreame, saying, Arise, and take the babe
his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be there
till I bring thee worde, for Herode wil seeke
the babe to destroy him.

14 So hee arose and tooke the babe
his mother by night, and departed into
egypt.

15 And was there vnto the death of Herod,
that that might bee fulfilled, which
spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying
Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne.

16 ¶ Then Herode, seeing that hee
mocked of the Wisemen, was exceeding wroth
& sent forth, and slew all the male children
that were in Bethleem, and in all the countrey
thereof, from two yere old and vnder,
according to the time which hee had diligently
searched out of the Wisemen,

17 Then was that fulfilled which is

en by the Prophet Ieremias, saying,
18 In Rhama was a voyce heard, mourning, and weeping, & great howling: Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they were nor.

19 And when Herod was dead, beholde, an Angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Ioseph in Egypt,

20 Saying Arise, and take the babe and his mother, and goe into the lande of Israel, for they are dead which sought y^e babes life

21 Then he arose vp. and tooke the babe and his mother, and came into the lande of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in stead of his father Herode, he was afraid to go thither: yet after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galile,

23 And went and dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, y^e it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, *which was*, That he should be called a Nazarite.

CHAP. III.

1 *Iohn preacheth. 4 His apparel and meate, 5 He baptizeth 8 The fruit of repentance.*

And in those dayes Iohn y^e Baptist came & preached in the wildernes of Iudea,

2 And saide, repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

3 For this is he of whom it is spoken by the Prophet Esaias, saying, The voyce of him crieth in the wilderness, Prepare yee y^e way of the Lord: make his paths straight.

And this Iohn had his garments of camels haire, & a girdle of skin about his loins: his meate was also locusts & wild honie:

4 Then went out to him Hierusalem and Iudea, and al the region round about Ior-

6 And they were baptized of him in
dan, confessing their sinnes.

7 Now when he saw many of the Pha-
sees, & of the Saduces come to his baptis-
he saide vnto them, O generations of vipers
who hath forewarned you to flee from y
ger to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy
mendment of life.

9 And thinke not to say with your selfe
We haue Abraham to our Father: for I haue
vnto you, y God is able euen of these stones
to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

10 And now also is y axe put to the root
of the trees: therefore every tree which bring-
geth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe,
cast into the fire.

11 In deed I baptize you with water
amendment of life, but he that commeth af-
ter me, is mightier then I, whose shooes I am
not worthy to beare: he will baptize you
the holy Ghost, & with fire,

12 Which hath his fanne in his hande,
will make cleane his floore, and gather
wheate into his garner, but wil burne vp
chaffe with vnquencheable fire.

13 ¶ Then came Iesus from Galilee to Io-
dan vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him.

14 But Iohn earnestly put him back, say-
ing, I haue need to be baptized of thee, & thou
comest thou to me?

15 Then Iesus answering, saide to him
Let be now: for thus it becometh vs to
fulfill all righteousness. So he suffered him.

16 And Iesus when he was baptized, came
straight out of y water. And loe, the hea-
uens were opened vnto him, and Iohn sawe y
spirit of God descending like a dove, & li-
ting vpon him.

17 And loe, a voice came from heauen
saym

him in saying, This is my beloued sonne, in whom I
am wel pleased.

CHAP. IIII.

*Christ is tempted. 4 He vanquisheth the Di-
uill with Scripture.*

THē was Iesus led aside of the Spirit in-
to y wildernes, to be tēpted of y deuill
2 And when he had fasted fortie daies &
fortie nightes, he was afterward hungry.

3 Then came to him the tempter, & said,
If thou be the Sonne of God, command that
these stones be made bread.

4 But hee answering saide, It is written,
Mā shal not liue by bread only, but by enery
word y proceedeth out of y mouth of God.

5 Then the deuill took him vp into y ho-
ly Citie, & set him on a pinacle of y Tēple,

6 And said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne
of God, cast thy self downe: for it is writtē,
y he wil giue his Angels charge ouer thee,
and with their hands they shal lift thee vp,
least at any time thou shouldest dash thy
foote against a stone.

7 Iesus said vnto him, It is written again,
Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

8 Againe the deuill tooke him vp into an
exceeding hie mountaine, and shewed him all
the kingdomes of the worlde, and the glory
of them,

9 And saide to him, All these will I giue
thee, if thou wilt fall down, and worshipping me.

10 Then sayd Iesus vnto him, Auid Sa-
tan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship y
Lord thy God, & him only shalt thou serue.

11 Then the deuill left him: and behold,
the Angels came and ministred vnto him.

12 ¶ And when Iesus had heard y Iohn
was committed to prison, hee returned into
Galile,

13 And leauing Nazareth, went & dwelt

In Capernaum which is nere the Sea
borders of Zabulon and Nephtholim.

14 That it might be fulfilled which
spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying.

15 The land of Zabulon; and the land
Nephtholim by the way of the Sea, beyon
Jordan, Galile of the Gentiles:

16 The people which sat in darknes, for
great light: and to them which sat in the
gion and shadow of death light is risen.

17 From that time Iesus began to preach
& to say, Amend your liues for the kingdome
of heauen is at hand.

18 And Iesus walking by the sea of Gal
le, sawe two brethren, Simon, which was
called Peter, & Andrew his brother, casting
net into the Sea (for they were fishers)

19 And he said vnto them, Followe me,
I wil make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway leauing their
nettes, followed him.

21 And when he was gone forth from
thence, he saw other two brethren, James,
son of Zebedeus, & Iohn his brother in asse
with Zebedeus, their father, mending their
netts, and he called them.

22 And they without tarying leauing their
Shippe, and their father, followed him.

23 So Iesus went about all Galile, teaching
in their Synagogues; and preaching the Gos
pel of the kingdome, and healing euery sick
nes and euery disease among the people.

24 And his fame spred abroad through
Syria and they brought vnto him all sick
people, that were taken with diuers diseases
and torments, and them that were possessed
with deuils: and those which were lunaticke
and those that had the palsey and he healed
them.

25 And there folowed him great multi
tude.

the Sea, and out of Galilee and Tiberias, and Hierusalem, and Iudea, and from beyond Iordā.

CHAP. V.

Who are blessed. 13. The Apostles are the salt and light of the world.

And when he saw the multitude, he went up into a mountaine: & when he was set, his disciples came vnto him.

2 And he opened his mouth, & taught them saying.

3 Blessed are the poore in spirit, for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.

4 Blessed are they that mourne: for they shalbe comforted.

5 Blessed are the meeke: for they shal inherite the earth.

6 Blessed are they which hunger & thirst for righteousnesse: for they shal be filled.

7 Blessed are the mercifull: for they shal obtaine mercie.

8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shal see God.

9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shalbe called the children of God.

10 Blessed are they, which suffer persecution for righteousnesse sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.

11 Blessed shall yee be when men reuile you, & persecute you, & say all manner of euill against you for my sake, falsely,

12 Reioyce and be glad, for great is your reward in heauen: for so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.

13 Ye are the salt of the earth, but if the salt haue lost his sauour, where with shall it be salted? It is therefore good for nothing but to bee cast out and to be troden vnder foote of men.

14 Ye are the light of the world. A citie that

that is set on an hill cannot be hid.

25 Neither do men light a candle, and put it vnder a bushel, but on a candlestick, and it giveth light vnto all that are in the house.

26 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, & glorifie your Father which is in heauen.

27 Thinke not that I am come to destroy the Lawe, or the Prophets, I am not come to destroy them, but to fulfil them,

28 For truly I say vnto you, Til heauen and earth perish, one iote, or one tittle of the Lawe shal not escape, til all things be fulfilled.

29 Whosoever therefore shall breake one of these least commandements, and teach men so, he shalbe called the least in the kingdom of heauen: but whosoever shall obserue and teach them, the same shalbe called great in the kingdom of heauen.

30 For I say vnto you except your righteousness exceede the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharises, ye shal not enter into the kingdom of heauen.

31 Yee haue heard that it was sayd vnto them of the olde time, Thou shalt not kill: for whosoever killeth, shall be culpable of iudgement,

32 But I say vnto you, whosoever is angry with his brother vnadvisedly, shalbe culpable of iudgment. And whosoever saith vnto his brother, Raca, shalbe worthy to be punished by the Council. And whosoever shall say, Foole, shalbe worthy to be punished with hel fire.

33 If then thou bring thy gift to thy altar, & there remembreth that thy brother hath ought against thee.

34 Leaueth there thine offering before the altar, & goe thy way: First be reconciled to thy brother, and then come & offer thy gift.

35 Agree

25 Agree with thine aduersarie quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him, lest thine aduersarie deliuer thee to the iudge, & the iudge deliuer thee to the sergeant, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily I say vnto thee, thou shalt not come out thence, til thou hast paid y^e vtmost farthing.

27 ¶ Ye haue heard y^e it was said to the of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery

28 But I say vnto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adulterie with her already in his heart.

29 Wherefore if thy right eye cause thee to offend, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for better it is for thee that one of thy members perish, then that thy whole body should be cast into hel.

30 Also if thy right hand make thee to offend, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for better it is for thee that one of thy members perish, then that thy whole body should be cast into hel.

31 It hath bene said also, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him giue her a bil of diuorcement,

32 But I say vnto you, whosoever shall put away his wife (except it be for fornication) causeth her to comit adulterie: & whosoever shall marrie her that is diuorced, committeth adulterie.

33 Againe ye haue heard y^e it was said to the of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thy self, but shalt performe thine othes to y^e Lord

34 But I say vnto you, Swear not at al, neither by heauen, for it is the thron of God

35 Nor yet by the earth, for it is his foot stoole: neither by Hierusalem: for it is the ci tie of the great King.

36 Nei-

36 Neither shalt thou sweare by thine head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.

37 But let your communication be yea: yea: Nay, nay. For whatsoever is more than these, commeth of evil.

38 ¶ Ye haue heard that it hath bin said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

39 But I saye vnto you, Resist not euil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turne to him the other also.

40 And if any man will sue thee at the lawe, and take away thy coate, let him haue thy cloke also.

41 And whosoever will compel thee to goe a mile, goe with him twaine.

42 Giue to him that asketh, and from him that would borrow of thee, turne not away.

43 Yee haue heard that it hath bin said, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour & hate thine enemy.

44 But I say vnto you, Loue your enemies: blesse them that curse you: do good to them which hate you, and pray for them which hurt you and persecute you,

45 That ye may be the children of your Father that is in heauen: for hee maketh his sun to arise on the euil, and the good, & sendeth raine on the iust and vniust.

46 For if yee loue them which loue you, what reward shal you haue? Do not so the Publicanes euen the same?

47 And if ye be friendly to your brethren only, what singular things doe yee? doe not the Publicans likewise?

48 Yee shall therefore be perfect, as your Father which is in heauen, is perfecte.

CHAP. VI.

1 Almes. 5 Prayer. 14 Forgiuing our brother.
16 Fasting. 19 Our treasure.

Take

Take heed that yee giue not your almes before men, to be seene of them, or els ye shal haue no reward of your Father which is in heauen.

2 Therefore when thou giuest thine almes, thou shalt not make a trumpet to be blown before thee as hypocrites doe in the Synagogues & in the streetes to be praised of men, Verely I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

3 But when thou doest thine almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth.

4 That thine almes may be in secret, and thy Father that seeth in secret, he wil reward thee openly.

5 And when thou prayest, be not as the hypocrites: for they loue to stand and pray in the Synagogues, & in the corners of the streets, because they would be seene of men. Verily I say, vnto you, they haue their reward.

6 But when thou prayest, enter into thy chamber: & when thou hast shut thy doore, pray vnto thy Father which is in secreete, & thy Father which seeth in secret, shal reward thee openly,

7 Also when ye pray vse no vaine repetitions as the heathen: for they thinke to be heard for their much babbling.

8 Bee ye not like them therefore: for your Father knoweth whereof yee haue neede, before ye aske of him.

9 After this maner therefore pray yee, Our Father which art in heauen, hallowed be thy Name.

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy wil bee done euen in earth, as it is in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our daily breed.

12 And forgive vs our detts, as we also forgive our detters.

13 And

S. MATTHEW.

13 And leade vs not into tentation, deliuer vs from euil : for thine is the kingdom, and the power and the glory for euer Amen.

14 For if ye do forgine men their trespasses, your heauenly Father wil also forgine you.

15 But if ye do not forgine men their trespasses, no more wil your Father forgine you your trespasses.

16 Moreover, when yee fast, looke not sowe as y hipocrits? for they disfigure their faces, y they might seeme vnto men to fast, Verily I saye vnto you, that they haue their reward.

17 But when thou fastest, anoynt thine head, and wash thy face.

18 That thou seeme not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy father which is in secret: & thy Father which seeth in secret, wil reward thee openly.

19 Lay not vp treasures for your selues vpon the earth, where the mothe & canker corrupt, and where theues dig through and steale.

20 But lay vp treasures for your selues in heauen, where neither the moth nor canker corrupteth, and where theues neither dig through, nor steale.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also,

22 The light of the body is the eye: if then thine eye be single, thy whole body shalbe light,

23 But if thine eye be wicked, then al thy body shalbe darke. Wherefore if y light y is in thee, be darknes, how great is y darknes?

24 No man can serue two masters: for either he shal hate the one, & loue the other, or els he shal leane to the one, and despise

other.

CHAP. VII

ion, neither, Ye cannot serue God and riches
 he kinge 25 Therefore I say vnto you, be not care-
 or enen all for your life, what ye shall eat, or what
 ee shall drinke; nor yet for your body what
 eeshaI put on, Is not the life more worth
 e respa then meate? and the body then rayment?

26 Behold the foules of the heauen: for
 ir tref they sow not, neither reape, nor cary into the
 ue yoe barnes: yet your heavenly fatherly feedeth
 hem, Are ye not much better then they.

27 Which of you by taking care is able
 o adde one cubite vnto his stature?

28 And why care yee for rayment? Learne
 ow the lilies of the field doe grow: they are
 ot wearied, neither spin:

29 Yet I say vnto you, y^e euen Salomon in
 his glory was not arrayed like one of these

30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grasse
 of the field which is today, & to morow is
 east into y^e ouen, shal he not do much more
 nto you, O ye of litle faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, what
 shal we eate; or what shal we drinke? or
 wherewith shal we be clothed?

32 (For after al these things seeke the Ge-
 niles) for your heavenly Father knoweth, y^e
 ee haue neede of al these things.

33 But seeke ye first the kingdom of God
 and his righteousnesse, & al these things shal
 be ministred vnto you.

34 Care not then: for the morow: for the
 morow shal care for it selfe: the day hath y-
 ough with his owne griefe.

CHAP. VII

*We may not giue iudgement of our neighbour
 nor cast that which is holy, to dogges. 13 The
 broad and strait way.*

I Vdge no, that ye be not iudged:

2 For with what iudgement ye iudge,
 ye shalbe iudged, and with what measure ye
 mete

S. MATTHEW.

mote it shalbe measured to you againe.

3 And why seeest thou the mote, that is in thy brothers eye; and perceiuest not the beame that is in thine owne eye.

4 Or how sayest thou to thy brother, Sefer me to cast out the mote out of thine eye; & behold, a beame is in thine own eye?

5 Hypocrite, first cast out that beame of thine own eye, & then shalt thou see clearly to cast out thy mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Give yee not that which is holy to dogs, neither cast ye your perles before swine, least they tread them vnder their feet, and turning againe, al to rent you.

7 ¶ Aske, and it shall be giuen you: seek, & ye shal finde: knocke, & it shalbe opened vnto you.

8 For whosoever asketh, receiuerh: & he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shal be opened.

9 For what mā is there among you, whose sonne aske him bread, would he giue him a stone?

10 Or if he aske fish, will he giue him a serpent?

11 If ye then, which are euil, can giue your children good gifts, howe much more shal your Father which is in heauen, giue good things to them that aske him?

12 Therefore whatsoeuer ye would that men should do to you, euen so do ye to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets.

13 ¶ Enter in at the strait gate: for it is the wide gate: and broad way that leadeth to destruction: & many there be which go in there.

14 Because the gate is strait, and the way narrow that leadeth vnto life, & few there be that finde it.

15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are

...the hearing wolves.
16 Ye shall knowe them by their fruit.
...the women gather grapes of thornes? or figs of
...not thistles?

17 So euery good tree bringeth forth
...er, good fruit, and a corrupt tree bringeth forth
...ne euill fruit.

ye? 18 A good tree cannot bring forth euill
...ame fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth
...e cleane fruit.

erse 19 Euery tree that bringeth not forth
...noly good fruit, is hewen down, and cast into the
...refire.

et, and 20 Therefore by their fruits ye shall know
...em.

: feel 21 ¶ Not enery one that sayth vnto mee,
...open Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of
...he, but he y doth my Fathers wil which
...h: & in heauen.

at know 22 Many wil say to me in that day, Lord
...rd, haue we not by thy Name prophesied?
...which by thy Name cast out deuils? and by thy
...ue done many great works?

3 And then wil I professe to them, I ne-
...e him know you: depart from me ye that work
...quity.

gine 24 Whosoener then heareth of mee these
...h words, and doth the same, I will liken him
...n, giue him a wise man which hath builded his house
...a rocke:

uld the 25 And the raine fel, and the floods came
...to the winds blew, & beat vpon that house,
...it fel not: for it was grounded on a rocke
...r it is. But whosoener heareth these my words
...h to dooth them not, shall be likened vnto a foo-
...t her man, which hath builded his house vpon
...the waie sand:

w then 26 And the raine fel, & the floods came,
...the windes blew, & beat vpon that house,
...ch com it fel, and the fall thereof was great,

ally the 27 And

18 ¶ And it came to passe, when Iesus
ended these words, y people were aston-
ished at his doctrine.

19 For he taught them as one hauing
authority, and not as the Scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

2 The leper cleansed. 5 The Centurions saith
The calling of the Gentiles.

NOwe when he was come downe from
the mountaine, great multitudes follo-
wed him.

2 And loe there came a leper, and wo-
shipped him, saying, master, if thou wilt, thou
canst make me cleane.

3 And Iesus putting forth his hand, tou-
ched him, saying, I will, bee thou cleane: and
immediatly his leprosie was cleansed.

4 Then Iesus saide vnto him See thou
no man but go, and shew thy selfe vnto the
Priest, & offer the gift that Moses comma-
nded, for a witnes to them.

5 ¶ When Iesus was entred into Cap-
ernaum, there came vnto him a Centurion,
seeching him,

6 And said, Master, my seruant lieth
at home of the palsey, and is grievously
tormented.

7 And Iesus sayde vnto him, I will come
and heale him.

8 But the Centurion answered sayin-
g, Matter, I am not worthy that thou should
come vnder my roofe: but speake the word
only, and my seruant shalbe healed.

9 For I am a man also vnder the authori-
tie of another, and haue souldiers vnder me:
& I say to one, Go, & he goeth: & to another,
Come, and he cometh: and to my seruant
Doe this, and he doeth it.

10 When Iesus heard that, hee marvelled
and sayd to them that followed him, Verily

I say v
uen in
11 I
from th
with A
kingdo
12
shalbe
be wee
13
Go thy
it vnto
same he
14
he siw
of the f
15 A
left her
them.
16 V
vnto him
& he ca
healed
17 T
spoken
tooke on
18
des of p
to go ou
19 T
said vn
therfoer
20 B
haue hol
ests, bu
to rest h
21
to him, M
fath
I

I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith
euen in Israel.

11 But I say vnto you, y many shal come
from the East and West, and shal sit downe
with Abraham, and Isaac and Iacob, in the
kingdom of heauen.

12 And the children of the kingdome
shalbe cast out into vnter darkenes, there shal
be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 Then Iesus said vnto the Centurion,
Go thy way, & as thou hast beleued, so be
it vnto thee. And his seruant was healed the
same houre.

14 ¶ And whē Iesus came to Peters house
he saw his wiues mother laid down & sicke
of the feuer.

15 And he touched her hand, and y feuer
left her: so shee arose, and ministred vnto
them.

16 When y euē was come, they brought
vnto him many that were possessed w deuils
& he cast out the spirits with his word, and
healed al that were sicke,

17 That it might be fulfilled, which was
spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying, Hee
tooke our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.

18 ¶ And whē Iesus sawe great multitu-
des of people about him, hee commanded the
to go ouer the water.

19 Then came there a certain Scribe, and
said vnto him, Master, I wil follow y whi-
ther soeuer thou goest.

20 But Iesus saide vnto him, The foxes
haue holes, and the birds of the heauen haue
nests, but the son of man hath not whereon
to rest his head.

21 ¶ And another of his disciples said vn-
to him, Master, suffer me first to goe. & bury
my father.

22 But Iesus said vnto him, Follow me,
and let the dead bury their dead.

23 ¶ And when he was entred into y^e ship
his disciples followed him.

24 And behold, there arose a great tempest
in the sea, so that the ship was couered with
waves: but he was asleepe.

25 Then his disciples came, and awoke
him, saying, Master, saue vs: we perish.

26 And he said vnto them, Why are ye
feareful, O ye of litle faith? Then hee arose
& rebuked the winds & the sea: and so there
was a great calme.

27 And the men marueiled, saying, What
man is this, that both the winds and the sea
obey him?

28 ¶ And when he was come to y^e other
side into the countrey of y^e Gergesenes, there
met him two possessed with devils, which
came out of the graves, very fierce, so that
no man might goe by that way.

29 And behold, they cryed out, saying, Is
this the Sonne of God, what haue wee to doe
with thee? Art thou come thither to torment
vs before the time?

30 Now there was a farre off from them
a great heard of swine feeding.

31 And the devils besought him, saying,
thou cast vs out, suffer vs to goe into y^e heard
of swine.

32 And he sayd vnto them, Goe. So they
went out & departed into the heard of swine
and behold, the whole heard of swine ran
headlong into the sea, & died in the water.

33 Then the heard men fled: & when they
were come into the citie, they told all things
that what was become of them that were pos-
sessed with the devils.

34 And beholde, all the citie came out
to meete Iesus: and when they sawe him, they
began to

besought him to depart out of their coasts.

CHAP. IX.

2 One sicke of the palsie is healed. 5 Remission of sins. 9 Matthew called. 10 Sinners.

Then he entred into a ship, & passed ouer and came into his own ciue.

2 And loe, they brought to him a mā sick of the palsie, laide on a bed. And Iesus seeing their faith, said to the sicke of the palsie, Sonne be of good comfort: thy sinnes are forgiven thee.

3 And behold, certaine of the Scribes said with themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 But when Iesus saw their thoughts, he sayd, Wherefore thinke ye evil things in your hearts?

5 For whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiven thee, or to say, Arise, & walke?

6 And that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgive sinnes, (then said he vnto the sicke of y^e palsie,) Arise, take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his own house.

8 So when the multitude sawe it, they marueiled, and glorified God, which had giuen such authoritie to men.

9 ¶ And as Iesus passed forth frō thence, he sawe a man sitting at the receite of customs named Matthew, & saide to him, Follow me. And he arose, & followed him.

10 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at eate in his house, behold, many Publicanes & sinners, that came thither, sate down at y^e table with Iesus, and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharises saw that, they saide to his disciples, Why eareth your ma-

publicanes and sinners.

12 Now when Iesus heard it, he said vnto them, The whole need not a Phisition, but they that are sick.

13 But goe yee and learne what this is, I will haue mercy, & not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance.

14 ¶ Then came the disciples of Iohn to him saying, Why doe wee and the Pharisees fast oft, and thy disciples fast not?

15 And Iesus said vnto them, Can y^e children of y^e marriage chamber moune, as long as the bridegrome is with them: but y^e day wil come, when the bridegrome shal be taken from them, and then shal they fast.

16 Moreover, no man pieceth an old garment with a piece of new cloth, for that should fil it vp, taketh away from the garment, & the breach is worse.

17 Neither do they put newe wine in old vessels: for then the vessels would breake, & the wine would be spilt, and the vessels should perish: but they put new wine in new vessels, and so are both preserved.

18 ¶ While hee thus spake vnto them, behold, there came a certaine ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is now deceased, but come & lay thine hand on her, & she shal liue.

19 And Iesus arose & followed him with his disciples.

20 (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeeres came behinde him, and touched the hem of his garment,

21 For she said in her selfe, If I may touch but his garment only, I shal be whole.

22 Then Iesus turned him about, & saw

ing her did say, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And a woman was made whole at that same moment.)

23 Now when Iesus came into a rulers house, & saw the minstrels & the multitude making noyse,

24 Hee saide vnto them, Get you hence: for the maide is not dead but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.

25 And when the multitude were put forth, hee wente in and tooke her by the hand, & the maide arose.

26 And this bruit went throughout all the land.

27 And as Iesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, & saying, O sonne of Dauid, haue mercy vpon vs.

28 And when he was come into the house the blinde came to him and Iesus saide vnto them, Beleeue ye that I am able to doe this? And they saide vnto him, Yea Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, according to your fayth be it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, and Iesus gaue them great charge, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But when they were departed they spread abroad his fame throughout all that land.

32 ¶ And as they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a deuil.

33 And when the deuil was cast out, the dumbe spake: then the multitude marvelled, saying, The like was neuer seene in Israel.

34 But the Pharises saide, Hee casteth out devils through the prince of devils.

35 ¶ And Iesus went about all cities and townes, teaching in their Synagogues, & prea-

every sicknes and every disease among the people.

36 But when he saw the multitude, he had compassion upon them, because they were dispersed and scattered abroad, as sheepe having no shepheard.

37 Then sayd he to his disciples. Surely *haruest* is great, but the labourers are fewe.

38 Wherefore pray the Lord of the haruest that he would send forth labourers into his haruest.

CHAP. X.

1 *The gift of healing giuen to the Apostles.*

5 *They are sent to preach the Gospel.*

And he called his twelue disciples vnto him, & gaue them power against vncleane spirits, to cast them out, & to heale every sicknes, & every disease.

2 Now *y* names of the twelue Apostles are these. The first is Simon, called Peter, & Andrew his brother: James the son of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother.

3 Philip and Bartlemew: Thomas, and Matthew that Publicane: James the sonne of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus whose surname was Thaddeus.

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelue did Iesus send forth, & commanded them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Gentiles, and into the cities of Samaritanes enter ye not:

6 But goe rather to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

7 And as ye goe, preach, saying, The kingdom of heauen is at hand,

8 Heale the sicke: cleanse the lepers: raise the dead: cast out the devils. Freely ye shall

readily be received freely giue.

9 Possesse not golde, nor siluer, nor money
in your girdles.

10 Nor scrip for the journey, neither two
shoes, neither shooes, nor a staffe: for the
workeman is worthy of his meate.

11 And into whatsoever citie or town ye
shall come, enquire who is worthy in it, and
there abide til ye goe thence.

12 And whē ye come into an house, salute
the same.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your
peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthy,
let your peace returne to you.

14 And whosoever shall not receiue you,
nor heare your wordes, when ye depart out
of that house, or that citie, shake off the dust of
your feete.

15 Truly I say vnto you, It shall be easier
for them of the land of Sodom & Gomorraha
in the day of iudgement, then for that citie,

16 ¶ Behold, I send you as sheepe in the
widdes of the wolues: be ye therefore wise
as serpents, and innocent as doves.

17 But beware of men, for they wil deli-
uer you vp to the Councils, and wil scourge
you in their Synagogues.

18 And ye shall be brought to the gouer-
nours and kings for my sake, in witness to
them, and to the Gentiles.

19 But whē they deliuer you vp, take no
thought how or what ye shall speake for it
shall be giue you in that houre, what ye shall say

20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit
of your Father which speaketh in you.

21 And the brother shall betray his brother
to death, and the father the sonne, and the
children shall rise against their parents, & shall
kill them to die.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for
my sake.

my Name; but he that endureth to the end
he shall be saved.

23 And when they persecute you in
citie, flee into another: for verely I say
you, ye shall not goe ouer all the cities of
rael, til the Sonne of man be come.

24 The disciple is not above his master,
nor the seruant above his Lord.

25 It is enough for the disciple to be
his master is, and the seruant as his Lord:
they haue called the master of the house
Beelzebub, now much more the of his house
should?

26 Feare them not therefore: for there
nothing couered, that shall not be disclosed:
nor hid, that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darkenes, I speake
ye in light: and what ye heare in the earne,
preach ye on the houses.

28 And feare ye not them which kill
body but are not able to kill the soule: but
rather feare him, which is able to destroy
soule and body in hel.

29 Are not two sparrowes sold for a
thing & one of the shall not fall on the ground
without your father?

30 Yea, & al the haire of your head
numbred,

31 Feare ye not therefore, ye are of
value then many sparrowes.

32 Whosoener therefore shall confesse
before men, him wil I confesse also before
my Father which is in heauen.

33 But whosoener shall denie me before
men, him wil I also denie before my Father
which is in heauen.

34 Thinke not I am come to send
into the earth: I came not to send peace
& sword.

35 For I am come to see a man at variance

not his father, & y daughter against her
mother, and the daughter in law against her
mother in law.

6 And a mans enemies shalbe they of his
household.

7 He that loueth father or mother more
than me, is not worthy of me. And he that
loeth sonne, or, daughter more then me, is
not worthy of me.

8 And he that taketh not his crosse, and
followeth after me is not worthy of me.

9 He that wil find his life, shal lose it, &
that loseth his life for my sake, shal find

10 He that receiueth you, receiueth me: &
that receiueth me, receiueth him that
sent me.

11 He that receiueth a Prophet in y name
of a Prophet, shal receiue a Prophets reward:
12 hee that receiueth a righteous man in the
name of a righteous man shal receiue the re-
ward of a righteous man.

13 And whosoever shal giue vnto one of
these litle ones to drinke a cup of cold wa-
ter only, in the name of a disciple, verely I
say vnto you, he shall not lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

*Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ. 7 Christs
testimony of Iohn.*

And it came to passe that when Iesus had
made an end of commanding his twelue
disciples, he departed thence to teach and to
preach in their cities.

And when Iohn heard in y prison the
works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,
and vnto him,

Art thou he that should come, or shal
I looke for another?

And Iesus answering, sayd vnto the, Goe
and shew Iohn, what things ye heare, & see.

5 The

3 That will be the fight, and the
walk: the body is cleansed, and the
heart: the dead are rayfed vp, and they
receiue the Gospel.

6 And blessed is he that shal not be
ded in me.

7 And as they departed, Iesus began
speake vnto the multitude of Iohn, What
ye out into the wildernes to see? A reed
ken with the wind?

8 But what went ye out to see? A man
clothed in soft raiment? Beholde, they y^e we
soft clothing are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out to see? A
phet? yea, I say vnto you, and more then
Prophet.

10 For this is he of whom it is writ
Behold I send my messenger before thy
which shal prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verely I say vnto you, among the
which are begotten of womē, arose there
a greater then Iohn Baptift, notwithstanding
he that is the least in the kingdome of hea
is greater then he.

12 And from the time of Iohn Baptift
thereto, the kingdome of heaven suffereth
lenge, and the violent take it by force,

13 For all the Prophetes, and the Law
prophected vnto Iohn.

14 And if ye wil receive it, this it is
Elias, which was to come.

15 ¶ He that hath eares to heare, let
heare.

16 But whereunto shal I liken this ge
ration? it is like vnto litle children who
sit in the markets, & cal vnto their fellowe

17 And say, We haue piped vnto you,
ye haue not daunced, we haue mourned
to you, and yee haue not lamented.

18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drink

and they say, He is a glutton and
drinker of wine, a friend vnto Publicanes &
sinners: but wisdome is iustified of her chil-
dren.

20 ¶ Then beganne he to vpbraide the ci-
ties, wherein most of his great workes were
done, because they repented not.

21 Woe be to thee, Chorazin: Woe be to
thee, Bethsaida: for if $\frac{y}{y}$ great workes, which
were done in you, had bene done in Tyrus &
Sidon, they had repented long agoe in sack-
cloth and ashes.

22 But I say to you, It shalbe easier for Ty-
rus and Sidon at the day of iudgement, then
for you.

23 And thou, Capernaum, which art lif-
t vp vnto heauen, shalt be brought down
to hel: for if the great workes, which haue
beene done in thee, had bene done among the
cities of Sodom, they had remained to this day.

24 But I say vnto you, that it shalbe ea-
sier for them of the land of Sodom in $\frac{y}{y}$ day
of iudgement, then for thee.

25 At that time Iesus answered, and said,
Praise thee thākes, O Father, Lord of heaue
and earth because thou hast hid these things
from the wise and men of vnderstanding, &
hast opened them vnto babes.

26 It is so, O Father, because thy good
secret was such.

27 All things are giuen vnto me of my Fa-
ther: & no man knoweth the Sonne, but the
Father: neither knoweth any man the Fa-
ther, but the Sonne, & he to whom the Sonne
will reueile him.

28 Come vnto me, al ye that are wearie
and laden, and I will ease you.

29 Take my yoke on you, and learne of
me

me that I am lowly
and yee shall finde rest vnto your souls.
30 For my yoke is easie, and my burden
light.

CHAP. XII

1 The disciples plucke the eares of corne,
eie, Sacrifice. 10 The withered hand is heale.

AT ȝ time Iesus went on a Sabbath
thorow the corne, & his disciples
an hungred, and began to pulcke the eares
of corne, and to eate.

2 And when the Pharises saw it, they
vnto him, Beholde, thy disciples do ȝ which
is not lawful to do vpon the Sabbath.

3 But he sayd vnto them, Haue yee
read what David did when he was an-
hungred, and they that were with him?

4 How he entred into the house of God,
& did eat the shew bread, which was
lawful for him to eat neither for they
were with him, but onely for the Priests.

5 Or haue ye not read in the Law, how
on the Sabbath dayes the Priests in the
temple, breake the Sabbath & are blamelesse?

6 But I say vnto you, that heere is
greater then the Temple.

7 Wherefore if ye knew what this is, I
haue mercy, and not sacrifice, yee would
haue condemned the innocents.

8 For the son of man is Lord, euen of
the Sabbath.

9 And he departed thence, and went
into their Synagogue:

10 And beholde, there was a man which
had his hand dried vp. And they asked him
saying, Is it lawful to heale vpon a Sabbath
day? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said vnto the, What man
there be among you, that hath a sheepe,
if it fall on a Sabbath day into a pit, doth
he not take it and lift it out?

12 He

How much more shall a man better
in a sheepe? therefore it is lawful to do
on a Sabbath day.

3 Then said he to the man, Stretch forth
thy hand. And he stretched it forth, and it
was made whole as the other,

4 Then the Pharisees went out, and con-
spired against him, how they might destroy
his disciples.

5 But when Iesus knew it, he departed
thence, & great multitudes followed him, &
healed them all.

6 And charged them in threatening wise
that they should not make him known,

7 That it might be fulfilled, which was
spoken by Esaias the Prophet saying,

8 Behold my seruant whom I have cho-
sen, my beloued in whom my soule deligh-
th: I wil put my Spirit on him, & he shall
show iudgement: to the Gentiles.

9 He shall not strue, nor crie, neither shall
any man heare his voice in the streetes:

10 A bruised reed shall he not breake, and
smoking flax shall he not quench, til he bring
forth iudgement vnto victory.

11 And in his Name shall the Gentiles
trust.

12 ¶ Then was brought to him, one pos-
sessed with a deuill, both blinde and dumbe, &
he healed him, so that he which was blinde
and dumbe, both spake and saw.

13 And all the people were amased, and
said, Is not this that Sonne of David?

14 But when the Pharisees heard it, they sayd,
How can a man casteth devils no otherwise out,
than through Beelze bub the prince of devils,

15 But Iesus knew their thoughts, & sayd
vnto them, Every kingdome deuided against it
selfe, is brought to nought: and every city or
house deuided against it selfe, shall not stand.

36 I say vnto you, Satan, he is
against himselfe? how shal then his king-
dome endure?

37 Also if I through Beelzebub cast
out devils, by whom do your children cast
them out? Therefore they shalbe your iudges.

38 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit
of God, then is the kingdome of God come
unto you.

39 Els how can a man enter into a
mans house, and spoile his goods, except
he first binde the strong man, and then spoile
his house?

40 He that is not with me, is against
me, and he that gathereth not wth me, scattereth
him.

41 Wherfore I say vnto you, Every sin
and blasphemie shalbe forgien vnto men,
but the blasphemie against the holy Ghost shal
not be forgiven vnto men.

42 And whosoever shall speake a word
against the Sonne of man, it shalbe forgiven
him, but whosoever shall speake against
the holy Ghost, it shal not be forgiven him,
neither in this worlde, nor in the worlde
to come.

43 Either make the tree good, & his
fruit shall be good: or else make the tree
evil, and his fruit shall be evil: for the tree is
known by the fruit.

44 O generations of vipers, how can ye
speak good things when ye are evil? For
the abundance of the heart the mouth
spaketh.

45 A good man out of the good treasure
of his heart bringeth forth good things:
and an evil man out of an evil treasure,
bringeth forth evil things.

46 But I say vnto you, that of every
word that men shal speake, they shall
account thereof at the day of iudgement.

47 For by thy words thou shalt be
justified, and by thy words thou shalt be
condemned.

CHAP. XII:

...ed, & by thy words thou shalt be con-
demned.

38 ¶ Then answered certain of the Scribes
of the Pharises, saying, Master, we would
see a signe of thee.

39 But he answered and said to them, An
ill and adulterous generation seeketh a
signe, but no signe shall be ginen vnto it, save
the signe of the Prophet Ionas.

40 For as Ionas was three dayes & three
nights in the whales belly: so shall the Sonne
of man be three dayes and three nights in
the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Nineue shall rise in iudge-
ment with this generation, & condemne it: be-
cause they repented at the preaching of Ionas:
and beholde a greater then Ionas is here.

42 The Queene of the South shall ryse in
iudgement with this generation and shall
condemne it: for shee came from the vtmost
partes of the earth to heare the wisdom of
Solomon: & beholde, a greater then Solomon
is here.

43 ¶ Nowe when the vncleane spirite is
cast out of a man, hee walketh throughout
desertes, seeking rest, and findeth none.
44 Then he saith, I wil returne into mine
house from whence I came: and when he is
there, he findeth it empty, sweepe and garni-
shed.

45 ¶ Then he goeth, and taketh vnto him
other spirites worse then himselfe, and
they enter in and dwell there, and the ende
of that man is worse then the beginning.
So shall it be with this wicked gene-
ration.

¶ While hee yet spake to the multi-
tude, beholde his mother, and his brethren
without desiring to speake with him.

¶ Then one saide vnto him, Beholde,
C thy

S. MATTHEW.

thy mother & thy brethren stand waiting desiring to speake with thee.

48 But he answered, & said to him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

50 For whosoever shall doe my Fathers will which is in heaven, the same is my mother and sister and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The parable of the sower. 11 and 34 Christ spake in parables.

THe same daye went Iesus out of his house, and sate by the sea side.

2 And great multitudes resorted to him so y^e he went into a ship, & sate downe, & the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 Then hee spake many things to them in parables, saying, Beholde a sower went forth to sow,

4 And as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the fowles came and deuoured them vp.

5 And some fell vppon stonie ground, where they had not much earth, and they sprung vp, because they had no depth of earth.

6 And when the sunne was vp, they were parched, and for lacke of rooting, withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprung vp, and choked them.

8 Some againe fell in good ground, and brought forth fruit, one came an hundred fold, some sixty fold, & an other thirty fold.

9 Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 ¶ Then the disciples came, and said

CHAP. XIII.

Why speakest thou to them in par-

1 And he answered & said vnto them,
cause it is giuen vnto you to know the se-
crets of the kingdome of heauen, but to them
it is not giuen.

2 For whosoever hath, to him shalbe gi-
uen, and he shall haue abundance: but who-
uer hath not, from him shall be taken a-
way, euen that he hath.

3 Therefore spake I to them in parables,
cause they seeing, do not see: & hearing,
they heare not, neither vnderstand.

4 So in them is fulfilled the prophesie
Esai's, which prophesie saith, By hearing
ye shall hear, and shall not vnderstande, &
seeing, ye shall see, and shall not perceiue.

5 For this peoples heart is waxed fatte,
their eares are dull of hearing and with
their eyes they haue winked, least they
should see with their eyes, and heare with
their eares, & should vnderstand with their
hearts, & should returne, that I might heale
them.

But blessed are your eyes, for they
see, and your eares, for they heare.

7 For verely I saye vnto you that many
prophets and righteous men haue desired to
see those things which ye see, and haue not
seen them, and to heare those things that
ye heare, and haue not heard them.

8 ¶ Heare yee therefore the parable of
the sower.

¶ Whensoever any man heareth the
word of that kingdome, and vnderstandeth
it, that euill one commeth, and catcheth
it, that which was sowne in his heart: &
it is he which hath receiued the seede by
the way side.

¶ And he that receiued seed in the stony
ground

me that I am lowly
and yee shall haue rest vnto your feet.
30 For my yoke is easie, and my burden
light.

CHAP. XII

1 The disciples plucke the eares of corne,
eie, Sacrifice. 10 The withered hand is heale.

AT $\frac{1}{2}$ time Iesus went on a Sabbath
thorow the corne, & his disciples
an hungred, and began to pulcke the eares
of corne, and to eate.

2 And when the Pharises saw it, they
vnto him, Beholde, thy disciples do $\frac{1}{2}$ what
is not lawful to do vpon the Sabbath.

3 But he sayd vnto them, Haue ye
read what David did when he was an-
hungred, and they that were with him?

4 How he entred into the house of
& did eat the shew bread, which was
lawful for him to eat neither for the
were with him, but onely for the Priests.

5 Or haue ye not read in the Law,
on the Sabbath dayes the Priests in the
ple, breake the Sabbath & are blameles.

6 But I say vnto you, that heere
greater then the Temple.

7 Wherefore if ye knew what this is,
haue mercy, and not sacrifice, yee would
haue condemned the innocents.

8 For the son of man is Lord, euen of
Sabbath.

9 And he departed thence, and went
their Synagogue:

10 And beholde, there was a man
had his hand dried vp. And they asked
saying, Is it lawful to heale vpon a Sab-
bath? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said vnto the, What man
there be among you, that hath a sheepe,
if it fal on a Sabbath day into a pit, doe
take it and lift it out?

...wly ...
your ...
and my ...
...a sheepe? therefore it is lawfull to do
...on a Sabbath day.

3 Then said he to the man, Stretch forth
...the hand. And he stretched it forth, and it
...was made whole as the other,

4 Then the Pharises went out, and con-
...ed against him, how they might destroy
...disciples.

5 But when Iesus knew it, he departed
...nce, & great multitudes followed him, &
...healed them al.

6 And charged them in threatning wise
...they should not make him known,

7 That it might be fulfilled, which was
...by Esaias the Prophet saying,

8 Behold my seruant whom I haue cho-
...my beloued in whom my soule deligh-
...: I wil put my Spirit on him, & he shall
...w iudgement: to the Gentiles.

9 He shall not strue, nor crie, neither shall
...man heare his voice in the streetes:

10 A bruised reed shall he not breake, and
...king flax shall he not quench, til he bring
...h iudgement vnto victory.

11 And in his Name shall the Gentiles

12 Then was brought to him, one pos-
...ed with a deuill, both blinde and dumbe, &
...healed him, so that he ~~which was~~ blinde
...dumbe, both spake and saw.

13 And al the people were amased, and
...is not this that Sonne of Dauid?

14 But whē y Pharises heard it, they sayd,
...man casteth y devils no other wise out,
...through Beelze bub the prince of devils,

15 But Iesus knew their thoughts, & sayd
...them. Every kingdome deuided against it
...brought to nought: and every city or
...deuided against it selfe, shall not stand.

against himselfe? how shal then his kin-
redure?

27 Also if I through Beelzebub cast
out devils by whom do your children cast
out? Therefore they shalbe your iudges.

28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit
of God, then is the kingdome of God come
to you.

29 Els how can a man enter into a
mans house, and spoile his goods, except
first binde the strong man, and then spoile
his house?

30 He that is not with me, is against
me, and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

31 Wherfore I say vnto you, Every
blasphemie shalbe forgien vnto men,
the blasphemie against the holy Ghost
shall not be forgien vnto men.

32 And whosoever shall speake a word
against the Sonne of man, it shalbe forgien
him, but whosoever shall speake against
the holy Ghost, it shal not be forgien him,
neither in this worlde, nor in the worlde
to come.

33 Either make the tree good, & his
fruit good; or else make the tree euil, and his
fruit euil: for the tree is knowen by the fruit.

34 O generations of vipers, how can
ye speake good things when ye are euil? For
the abundance of the heart the mouth
spaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treasure
of his heart bringeth forth good things:
an euil man out of an euil treasure, bringeth
forth euil things.

36 But I say vnto you, that of every
word that men shal speake, they shall
account therof at the day of iudgement.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be
iudged.

CHAP. XVI.

...ed, & by thy words thou shalt be con-
demned.

¶ Then answered certain of the Scribes
of the Pharisees, saying, Master, we would
see a signe of thee.

¶ But he answered and said to them, An
ill and adulterous generation seeketh,
one, but no signe shall be ginen vnto it, save
the signe of the Prophet Ionas.

¶ For as Ionas was three dayes & three
nights in the whales belly: so shall the Sonne
of man be three dayes and three nights in
the heart of the earth.

¶ The men of Nineue shall rise in iudge-
ment with this generation, & condemne it:
because they repented at the preaching of Ionas:
behold a greater then Ionas is here.

¶ The Queene of the South shall ryse in
iudgement with this generation and shall
condemne it: for shee came from the vtmost
part of the earth to heare the wisdom of
Solomon: & beholde, a greater then Solomon
is here.

¶ Nowe when the vncleane spirite is
in the capt of a man, hee walketh through
houses, seeking rest, and findeth none.

¶ Then he saith, I wil retorne into mine
house from whence I came: and when he is
there, he findeth it empty, sweepe and garni-
shed.

¶ Then he goeth, and taketh vnto him
other spirites worse then himselfe, and
enter in and dwell there, and the ende
of that man is worse then the beginning.
So shall it be with this wicked gene-
ration.

¶ While hee yet spake to the multi-
tude, beholde his mother, and his bretheren
were without desiring to speake with him.

¶ Then one saide vnto him, Beholde,

C

thy

S. MATTHEW.

thy mother & thy brethren stand
desiring to speake with thee.

48 But he answered, & said to him
told him, Who is my mother? and
my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand
ward his disciples, and said, Behold
my mother and my brethren.

50 For whosoever shall doe my
will which is in heauen, the same is
my mother and sister and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

*The parable of the sower. 11 and 34
Christ spake in parables.*

THe same daye went Iesus out
of his house, and sate by the sea side.

2 And great mulititudes resorted
him so y he went into a ship, & sate
& the whole multitude stood on the
beache.

3 Then hee spake many things
in parables, saying, Beholde a sower
went forth to sow,

4 And as he sowed, some fell by the
side, and the fowles came and deuoured
vp.

5 And some fell vppon stonie
ground, where they had not much earth,
and they sprung vp, because they had no
earth.

6 And when the sunne was vp, they
were parched, and for lacke of rooting,
they withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes,
and the thornes sprung vp, and choked them.

8 Some againe fell in good ground,
and brought forth fruit, one thirtie fold,
some sixty fold, & an other hundred fold.

9 Hee that hath eares to hear,
let him heare.

10 ¶ Then the disciples came,

CHAP. XIII.

Why speakest thou to them in para-

And he answered & said vnto them,
because it is given vnto you to know the se-
crets of the kingdome of heauen, but to them
it is not given.

For whosoever hath, to him shall be gi-
uen, and he shall haue abundance: but who-
euer hath not, from him shall be taken a-
way, even that he hath.

Therefore spake I to them in parables,
because they seeing, do not see: & hearing,
they heare not, neither vnderstand.

So in them is fulfilled the prophesie
of Isaiah, which prophesie saith, By hearing
ye shall heare, and shall not vnderstande, &
by seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceiue.

For this peoples heart is waxed fatte,
their eares are dull of hearing, and with
their eyes they haue winked, least they
should see with their eyes, and heare with
their eares, & should vnderstand with their
hearts, & should returne, that I might heale

But blessed are your eyes, for they
see, and your eares, for they heare. —

For verely I saye vnto you that many
honest and righteous men haue desired to
see those things which ye see, and haue not
seen them, and to heare those things that
ye heare, and haue not heard them.

Heare yee therefore the parable of
the sower.

Whensoever any man heareth the
word of that kingdome, and vnderstandeth
it not, that euill one cometh, and catcheth
that which was sown in his heart: &
that which hath receiued the seede by
the way side.

And he that receiued seed in the stony
ground

ground, is hee which heareth the word
incontinently with ioy receiveth it.

21 Yet hath he no roote in him
dwelleth but a season: for as soone as
trouble or persecution cometh because
of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 And he that receiveth the seed
among thornes, is he that heareth the word
care of this world, and the deceitful
riches choke the worde, and he is made
fruitfull.

23 But he that receiveth the seed
in good ground, is he that heareth the word
understandeth it, which also beareth
fruit, some an hundred fold, some
thirty fold.

24 Another parable put he forth
unto them, saying, The kingdome of hea-
ven is like vnto a man which sowed good
seed in his field.

25 But while men slept, there came
an enemy, and sowed tares among the
wheat, and went his way.

26 And when the blade was sprung
forth, and brought forth fruit, then appeared
the tares also.

27 Then came the servants of the
holder, and saide vnto him, Master,
seest thou good seed in thy field? from
whence hath it tares?

28 And hee saide to them, Some
enemy hath done this. Then the ser-
vants saide vnto him, wilt thou then
that we go and gather them vp?

29 But he saide. Nay, least while
ye are about to gather the tares, ye
plow up with them the wheate.

30 Let both grow together until
the harvest, & in time of harvest I will
send the reapers, Gather ye first the tares,

in the house: but gather y
the wheat into my barn.

Another parable he put forth vnto
him, saying, The kingdome of heauen is like
a graine of mustard seede, which a man
becauseth and soweth in his field:

Which in deed is the least of al seedes:
when it is growen it is the greatest a-
mong herbes, and it is a tree, so that the
deceitfull of heauen come and build in the bran-
che thereof.

Another parable spake hee to them,
The kingdome of heauen is like vnto leuen,
wherewith a woman taketh and hideth in three
beareth of meale, till all be leavened.

All these things spake Iesus vnto y
the multitude in parables, and without parables
he saith vnto them,

That it might be fulfilled which was
said by the Prophet, saying, I will open
my mouth in parables, and will utter the
things which haue bene kept secret fro the
beginning of the world.

Then Iesus sent the multitude away,
and he went into the house, and his disciples
came vnto him, saying, Declare vnto vs the
parable of the tares of that field.

Then answered he, and said to them,
The sower that soweth the good seede, is the Sonne
of man.

The field is the world, & the good
seed are the children of the kingdome, and
the tares are the children of that wicked
one.

And the enemy that soweth them
is the euill, and the haruest is the ende
of the worlde, and the reapers be the An-
gels.

As then the tares are gathered and
bound in the fire, so shal it be in the end of
the world.

the world.

42 The Sunne of man shall send forth
Angels: & they shal gather out of his
kingdome all things that offend, & them
will he cast into the fire,
where they shall be
tormented.

43 And shall cast them into a furnace
of fire. There shall be wailing and
gnaſhing of teeth.

44 Then shall the iust men shine
as the sunne in the kingdome of their Father,
that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

45 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of hea-
ven is like vnto a treasure hid in the field,
wherein a man hath found, he hideth it,
and goeth away, and buyeth other things,
and cometh home, and findeth that treasure,
and hideth it.

46 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of hea-
ven is like to a marchant man, that seeketh
pearles,

47 Who hauing founde a pearle of
great price, went and sold all that he had,
and bought it.

48 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of hea-
ven is like vnto a draw net cast into the sea,
which gathereth of all kinds of fishes.

49 Which, when it is full, men draw
it up, and sit and gather the good into
vessels, and cast the bad away.

50 So shall it be at the end of the
world. The Angels shal go forth, and seuer
the wicked from among the iust.

51 And shall cast the wicked into a furnace
of fire, where there shall be wailing & gnaſhing
of teeth.

52 ¶ Iesus said vnto them, Vnder-
stand these things, They said vnto him,

53 Then saide he vnto them, That
every Scribe, which is taught vnto the
kingdome of heauen, is like vnto an house
builder, which bringeth forth out of his
treasure things both new and old.

And ended these parables, he departed thence,
And came into his owne countrey, &
taught the in their Synagogue, so that they
were astonied and saide, Whence cometh
this wisdom and great workes vnto this
man?
Is not this the carpenters sounne? Is not
his mother called Mary, and his brethren
James and Iosos, and Simon, and Iudas?
And are not his sisters all with vs?
Whence then hath he all these things?
And they were offended with him.
Then Iesus said to them, A Prophet is not
without honour saue in his owne countrey &
in his owne house.
And hee did not many great workes
there, for their vnbeliefs sake.

CHAP. XIII.

*Herods iudgement of Christ. 3. Wherefore
John was bound. 10. and beheaded.*

At that time Herod the Tetrarch heard
of the fame of Iesus,
And said vnto his seruants, This is that
John Baptist, he is risen againe from the dead,
therefore great workes are wrought by

For Herod had taken Iohn, and bounde
him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake
his brother Philipps wife.

For Iohn saide vnto him, It is not law-
full for thee to haue her.

And when hee would haue put him to
death, he feared the multitude, because they
called him as a Prophet.

But when Herods birth day was kept,
his daughter of Herodias danced before the
king, and pleased Herod.

Wherefore he promised with an othe,

that hee would giue her whatsoeuer
she would aske.

8 And she being before instructed
saide, Giue mee here Iohn Bap-
tists head in a platter.

9 And the king was sory: neuerthe-
less because of the othe, and them that sate
with him at the table, hee commanded it to be
giuen her,

10 And sente, and beheaded Iohn in
prison.

11 And his head was brought in a platter,
and giuen to the maid, & she brought it
to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and tooke
the body and buried it, and went and
told Iesus.

13 And when Iesus heard it, hee de-
parted thence by ship into a desert place. And
the multitude had heard it, they followed
him on foote out of the cities.

14 And Iesus went forth and saw a
multitude, and was moued with com-
passion toward them, and he healed their
sicknesses.

15 And when euen was come, his
disciples came to him, saying, This is a
desert place, & the time is already past:
let the multitude departe, that they may
goe into the towne, and buy them
meates.

16 But Iesus saide to them, They
need not go away: giue ye them to
eate.

17 Then said they vnto him, We
have here but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 And he said, Bring them hither.

19 And he commanded the multitude
to sit downe on the grasse, and tooke the
five loaves and the two fishes, and looked
heauen, and blessed and brake, and gaue
the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples
to the multitude.

And they did sit and were sufficed,
and they tooke vp of the fragments that re-
mained, twelve baskets full.

And they that had eaten, were about
the thousand men: beside women and little
children.

And straightway Iesus compelled
his disciples to enter into a ship, and to goe
before him, while he sent the multitude
away.

And as soone as he had sent the multitude
away, he went vp into a mountaine to pray:
and when the evening was come, hee was
there alone.

And the ship was now in the mids of
the sea, & was tossed with waues: for it was
contrary winde.

And in the fourth watch of the night,
Iesus went vnto them, walking on the sea.

And when his disciples saw him wal-
king on the sea, they were troubled, saying,
It is a phantasma spirit, and cryed out for feare.

But straightway Iesus spake vnto the,
saying, Be of good comfort, it is I: be not a-
fraid.

Then Peter answered him, and sayd,
Lord, if it be thou, bid me come vnto thee
upon the water.

And he saide, Come. And when Peter
came downe out of the ship, he walked
upon the water to go to Iesus.

But when he saw a mighty winde, he
was fraide, and he began to sinke, he cry-
ed, saying, Master, saue me.

So immediatly Iesus stretched forth
his hand, and caught him, and said to him, O
thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?
And as soone as they were come into
the ship, the winde ceased.

Then they that were in the ship, came
and

and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth
art the Sonne of God.

34 ¶ And when they were come
they came into the land of Gennezaret.

35 And when ſome men of that place
knew him, they ſent out into all that coun-
trie about, and brought vnto him all
that were ſicke.

36 And beſought him, that they might
touch the hemme of his garment onely:
and many as touched it, were made whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 The commandements and traditions of
12. Offences. 13. The plant which is
up. 14. Blinde leading the blinde.

Then came to Ieſus the Scribes & Phari-
ſees, which were of Hieruſalem, ſaying

2 Why doe thy diſciples tranſgreſſe the
tradition of the Elders? for they waſh
their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered, and ſaide vnto them
Why do ye alſo tranſgreſſe the command-
ments of God by your tradition?

4 For God hath commanded, ſaying
Honour thy father and mother: and he
curſeth father or mother, let him die ſay-
ing

5 But ye ſay, Whoſoeuer ſhal ſay to father
or mother, By the gift that is offered by
thee thou mayeſt haue profite.

6 Though hee honour not his father
nor his mother ſhal be free: thus haue ye made
the commandement of God of no authority
by your tradition.

7 O hypocrites, Eſaias prophesied
of you, ſaying.

8 This people draweth neere vnto me
with their mouth, and honoureth me with
lips, but their heart is farre off from me.

9 But in vaine they worſhip me, teaching
for doctrines, mens precepts.

a true
come
ne zaret
place
at count
him all
they mi
onely:
whole.
itions of
hich is
de.
ibes & P
alem, say
ansgrosse
ey wash
l.
e vnto the
command
l, saying
and he
n die y
say to fa
ffered by
his father
e yemade
authorit
hesied w
re vnto m
ne with
from ma
a me, t

10 Then hee called the multitude vnto
him, and said to them, Heare & vnderstand.
11 That which goeth into the mouth, de-
leth not the man, but that which cometh
out of the mouth, that defileth the man.
12 ¶ Then came his disciples, and sayde
unto him, Perceiuest thou not that the Pha-
sces are offended in hearing this saying?
13 But he answered & said, Every plant
which mine heavenly Father hath not plan-
ted, shalbe rooted vp.
14 Let them alone, they bee the blinde
leaders of the blinde: and if the blinde leade
the blinde, both shal fall into the ditch.
15 ¶ Then answered Peter, and sayde to
him, Declare vnto vs this parable.
16 Then sayd Iesus, Are ye yet without
vnderstanding?
17 Perceiue yee not yet, that whatsoever
eneth into the mouth, goeth into the belly,
and is cast out into the draught?
18 But those things which procede out
of the mouth, come from the heart, & they
defile the man.
19 For out of the hart come euil thoughts,
murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false
testimonies, flanders.
20 These are the things which defile the
man: but to eate with vnwashed hands, de-
leth not the man.
21 And Iesus went thence, and departed
unto the coasts of Tyrus and Siden.
22 And beholde, a woman a Canaanite
came out of the same coasts, and cryed, say-
ing vnto him, Haue mercy vpon me, O Lord,
the sonne of David: my daughter is misera-
bly vexed with a deuill,
23 But he answered her not a word. Then
came to him his disciples, & besought him,
saying, stand hir away, for she crieth after vs.

24 But he answered, and said, I am sent, but vnto the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

25 Yet she came, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, helpe me.

26 And hee answered, and said, It is good to take the childrens bread, and to eate it to whelps.

27 But she said, Trueth, Lord: yet indeede the whelps eate of the crummes which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Iesus answered and saide vnto her, O woman, great is thy faith: bee it thee, as thou desirest. And her daughter was made whole at that houre.

29 So Iesus went away from thence, and came neere vnto the sea of Galilee, and went vp into a mountaine, and sate downe there.

30 And great multitudes came vnto him, sitting with them, hault, blind, dumbe, and deafe, and many other, and cast them downe vnto Iesus feete, and he healed them.

31 Insomuch that the multitude wondred to see the dumbe speake, the maimed walke, the hault to go, and the blinde to see: & they glorified the God of Israel.

32 Then Iesus called his disciples vnto him, and said, I haue compassion on this multitude, because they haue continued with me already three dayes, and haue nothing to eate: and I will not let them depart fasting lest they faint in the way.

33 And his disciples saide vnto him, Whence should we get so much bread in this wilderness, as should suffice so great a multitude?

34 And Iesus sayd vnto them, How many loaves haue ye? And they said, Seven, and few litle fishes.

35 Then hee commanded the multitude

CHAP. XVI.

36 And tooke the seven loaves, and the
 fishes, and gaue thanks, and brake *them*, &
 gaue to his disciples, and the disciples to the
 multitude,
 37 And they did all eate, and were suf-
 ficed: and they tooke vp of the fragments
 which remained, seven baskets full.
 38 And they that had eaten, were four
 thousand men beside women, & litle childre.
 39 Then Iesus sent away the multitude,
 and tooke ship, and came into the parts of
 Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

*The signe of Ionas. 6. The leauen of the Pha-
 rises. 12 for their doctrine. 13 The peoples
 opinion of Christ.*

Then came the Pharisees and Sadduces,
 & did tempt him, desiring him to shew
 them a signe from heaven.

2 But he answered, and said vnto them,
 When it is euening, yee say, Faire weather
 for the skie is red.

3 And in the morning yee say, To day shall
 be a tempest: for the skie is red and lowring.
 O hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the
 skie, and can ye not discern the signes of the
 times?

4 The wicked generation and adulterous
 seeketh a signe, but there shall no signe bee
 shewed vnto them, but that signe of the Prophet Iona:
 for as he was three dayes and three nightes
 in the belly of the whale, so shall the sonne of
 man be left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to
 the other side, they had forgotten to take
 bread with them.

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heed
 and beware of the leauen of the Pharisees &
 Sadduces,

7 And they reasoned amōg themselues, say-
 ing, It is because we haue brought no bread.

8 But

2. **THE NEW.**
8 But Iesus knowing it, said vnto
O yee of little faith, why reason yee
among your selues, because yee haue bread
no bread?

9 Do ye not yet perceiue, neither remem-
ber the five loaves, when there were
thousand men, and how manie baskets toke
ye vp?

10 Neither the seven loaves, when there
were foure thousand men, and how manie
baskets toke ye vp?

11 Why perceiue yee not that I saide
vnto you concerning bread, that yee should
beware of the leauen of the Pharisees
and Sadduces?

12 Then vnderstood they that he had
said that they should beware of the leauen
of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees
and Sadduces.

13 ¶ Nowe when Iesus came into the
coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his
disciples, saying, whom doe men say that I
Sonne of man, am?

14 And they saide, Some say, Iohn Baptist:
and some, Elias: and others, Ieremie, or
one of the Prophets.

15 He said vnto them, But whom say
ye that I am?

16 Then Simon Peter answered, & said,
Thou art that Christ, the Sonne of the
God.

17 And Iesus answered, and saide to him,
Blessed art thou Simon, the sonne of Ioseph:
for flesh and blood hath not reueiled this
to thee, but my Father which is in heauen.

18 And I say also vnto thee, that thou
art Peter, and vpon this rocke I will build
my Church: and the gates of hell shall not
ouercome it.

19 And I will giue vnto thee the keyes

kingdome of heauen, and whatsoever thou shalt binde vpon earth, shalbe bound in heauen: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen.

20 Then he charged his disciples, that they should tell no man that hee was Iesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth Iesus began to shew vnto his disciples that he must go vnto Ierusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders and of the Iie Priestes, and Scribes, and be slaine, and be rayled againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him aside, & began to rebuke him, saying, Master, pity thy selfe: this shall not be vnto thee.

23 Then he turned backe, and sayde vnto Peter, Get thee behinde mee Satan: thou art an offence vnto mee, because thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

24 Iesus then saide to his disciples, If any man will follow me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vpon his crosse, and follow me.

25 For, whosoever will saue his life, shall lose it, and whosoever shall loose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For what shall it profite a man though he should win the whole worlde, if hee lose his owne soule? or what shall a man giue for recompense of his soule?

27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his Angels, & shall he giue to euery man according to his needes.

28 Verily I saye vnto you, there be some here that stand here, which shall not taste death, till they haue seene the sonne of man come in his kingdome.

3. MATTHEW.
CHAP. XVII.

1 The transfiguration of Christ. 5. Christ
to be heard. 11. Elias. 13. John Baptist.
The unbelieve of the Apostles.

ANd after sixe dayes, Iesus tooke
and Iames, and Iohn his brother
brought them vp into an hie mountaine

2 And was transfigured before them
his face did shine as the Sunne, & his
clothes were as white
were as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared vnto
Moses and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said to
Master, It is good for vs to be here : if
thou wilt, let vs make here three tabernacles,
one for thee, and one for Moses, and one
for Elias.

5 While hee yet spake, beholde, a
cloude shadowed them: and beholde,
came a voyce out of the cloude, saying
is that my beloued Son, in whom I am
pleased: heare him.

6 And when the disciples heard
they fell on their faces, and were sore
afraid.

7 Then Iesus came and touched them,
sayd, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they lifted vp their
eyes, they saw no man, saue Iesus only.

9 ¶ And as they came downe from
the mountaine, Iesus charged them, saying
the vision to no man vntil the Sonne of
man rise againe from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him,
Why then saye the Scribes that Elias
must first come?

11 And Iesus answered, and said
them, Certainly Elias must first come
to restore all things.

12 But I say vnto you, that Elias
is alreadie, and they knowe him not,

CHAP. XVII.

vnto him whatsoever they would: like-
 shall also the Sonne of man suffer of

Then the disciples perceiued that hee
 vnto them of Iohn Baptist,

And when they were come to the
 made, there came to him a certaine man
 down at his feet,

And sayde, Master, haue pity on my
 for he is a lunatike, and is sore vexed:
 oft times he falleth into the fire: and oft
 into the water.

And I brought him tot hy disciples, &
 could not heale him.

Then Iesus answered, and sayd, O ge-
 ntion faithlesse, and crooked, howe long
 shal I be with you! how lōg now shal
 I suffer you! bring him hicher to me.

And Iesus rebuked the deuill: & he wēt
 of him, and the child was healed at that
 om I am.

Then came the disciples to Iesus a-
 & said, why could not we cast him out?

And Iesus sayd vnto them, Because of
 your beliefe: for verily I say vnto you, if
 ye haue faith, as much as is a graine of mu-
 seed, ye shal say vnto this mountaine,

Remove hence to yonder place, & it shal re-
 move: & nothing shalbe vnpossible vnto you.

Howbeit this kind goeth not out, but
 by prayer and fasting.

And they being in Galile, Iesus sayd
 vnto them, The sonne of man shal be deliue-
 red into the hands of men,

And they shall kill him, but the third
 day he shall rise againe: and they were very

And when they were come to Ca-
 sarea, they that receiued polle money,

to Peter, & sayd, Doth not your master
 pay

S. MATTHEW.

pay polle money?

25 He sayd, Yes. And when he was
into the house. Iesus preuented him,
What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom
Kings of the earth take tribute, or pol-
ley? of their children, or of strangers?

26 Peter said vnto him, Of strangers.
saide Iesus vnto him, Then are the childe-
ren free.

27 Neuertheles, leaſt wee ſhoulde
them, goe to the ſea, and caſt in an a-
net, and take the firſt fiſh that commeth vp, and
thou haſt opened his mouth, thou ſhalt
ſee a piece of twenty pence: that take, and
it vnto them for mee and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 *The greateſt in the kingdome of Hea-
uen ſhall be likeſt vnto a little child. 6 To giue offence*

THE ſame time the diſciples came
to Ieſus ſaying, Who is the greateſt
in the kingdome of heauen?

2 And Ieſus called a little child vnto
him, and ſet him in the mids of them,

3 And ſaide, Verily I ſay vnto you,
ye bee conuerted, and become as little
children, ye ſhall not enter into the kingdome
of heauen.

4 Whoſoever therfore ſhall humble
himſelfe as this little childe, the ſame is the
greateſt in the kingdome of heauen.

5 And whoſoever ſhall receive one
of theſe little children in my Name, receiveth mee.

6 But whoſoever ſhall offend one
of theſe little ones which beleue in me, it were
better for him that a milſtone were hangen
about his necke, and that hee were drowned
in the depth of the ſea.

7 Wo be vnto the worlde becauſe
of offence: for it muſt needs bee y^e offence

CHAPTER XVIII

me, but woe be to that man, by whom the
 he w^{ill} be commeth.

Wherefore, if thine hande or thy foote
 of whom thou seest thee to offend, cut the off, & cast them
 e, or p^{er} the: it is better for thee to enter into
 rangers, halt, or maimed, then hauing two hands
 rangers two feete, to be cast into euerlasting fire.

And if thine eye cause thee to offend,
 take it out, and cast it from thee: it is bet-
 shouldest thou for thee to enter into life with one eye
 in an an^{gell} hauing two eyes to bee cast into hel
 th vp, and so.

See y^e ye despise not one of these litle
 take, for I say vnto you, that in heauen their
 angels alwayes beholde the face of my Fa-
 ther which is in heauen.

For the Sonne of man is come to saue
 that which was lost.

How thinke ye? If a mā haue an hun-
 dred sheepe, & one of them be gone astray,
 will he not leaue ninetie & nine, & go in-
 to the mountaines, and seeke that which is
 astray?

And if so be that he find it, verily I say
 vnto you, he reioyceth more of that sheepe,
 than of the ninety & nine which went not
 astray.

So is it not y^e wil of your Father which
 in heauen that one of these litle ones
 should perish.

Moreover, if thy brother trespass a-
 gainst thee, goe & tel him his fault betwene
 and him alone: if hee heare thee, thou
 haue wonne thy brother.

But if hee heare thee not, take yet w^{it}
 one or two, that by the mouth of two
 or three witnesses euery worde may be con-
 firmed.

And if he refuse to heare them, tell it
 to the Church: and if he refuse to heare the

5. MATTHEW.

Church also, let him be vnto thee
then man, & a Publicane.

18 Verily I say vnto you, Whatso
bind on earth, shalbe bound in heauen:
whatsoeuer ye loose on earth, shalbe
loose in heauen.

19 Againe, verily I say vnto you, If
ye shall agree in earth vpon any
thing, whatsoeuer they shal desire, it shalbe
done them of my Father which is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered
together in my Name, there am I in the
middle of them.

21 Then came Peter to him, and
said, Master, how oft shal my brother sin
against me, & I shal forgive him? vnto seuen
times?

22 Iesus said vnto him, I say not
vnto thee seuen times, but vnto seuentie
times.

23 Therefore is the kingdome of
heauen likened vnto a certaine King which
woulde take an account of his seruants.

24 And when he had begunne to
reckon, one was brought vnto him, which
oweth ten thousand talents.

25 And because hee had nothing
to pay, his Lorde commanded him to be sold,
with his wife, and his children, and all that he
had: & the debt to be paid.

26 The seruât therfore fel down,
and worshipped him, saying, Lord, refraine
thine anger toward me, and I will pay thee
all.

27 Then that seruât Lord had
compassion, and loosed him, and forgave
him the debt.

28 But when the seruât was
gone, he found one of his fellowe seruants,
which owght him an hundred pence, and
he lay hands on him, and throtled him:
saying, Thou owest me that thou owest.

...and besought him, saying, Refraine
anger toward me, and I wil pay thee

Yet he woulde not, but went and cast
him into prison, til hee should pay the debt.

And when his other fellowe seruants
what was done, they were very sory, &
and declared vnto their Lord al y was

Then his Lord called him vnto him, &
to him, O euil seruant, I forgave thee al
debt, because thou prayedst me.

Oughtest not thou also to haue had pi-
thy fellow seruant, euen as I had pitie
her sinners?

So his Lord was wroth, and deliuered
to the tormentors, til he should pay all
that was due vnto him.

So likewise shal mine heauely Father
vnto you, except yee forgiue from your
each one to his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX

*The sicke are healed. 3 and. 7 A bill of di-
uorcement. 11 Eunuches.*

And it came to passe, that whē Iesus had
finisshed these sayings he departed fro
there, and came into the coast of Iudea be-
yond Iordan.

And great multitudes followed him, &
healed them there.

Then came vnto him the Pharisees
tempting him, and saying to him, Is it lawfull
for a man to put away his wife vpon euery
occasion?

And he answered, and said vnto them,
ye not read that hee which made the
beginning, made them male and fe-
male: saying,

5 And said, For this cause, the
father and mother, and cleave
and they which were two shall be

6 Wherefore they are no more
but one flesh. Let no man therefore
seunder that, which God hath coupled
together.

7 They sayd to him, Why did the
hes commaund to giue a bill of diuorces
and to put her away?

8 He said vnto them, Moses, because
of hardnesse of your heart, suffered you
to put away your wives; but from the begin-
ning was not so.

9 I say therfore vnto you, that whoso
shall put away his wife, except it be for
fornication, and marry another, committeth
adulterie: and whosoever marrieth her which
is diuorced, doeth commit adulterie.

10 Then saide his disciples to him, If
this be so betweene man & wife, it is
not good to marry.

11 But hee said vnto them, Al mee-
not receiue this thing, saue they to which
it is giuen.

12 For there are some eunuches
which are so borne of their mothers belly:
there be some eunuches which be ge-
nerated: & there be some eunuches which
hauing made themselves eunuches for the kingdome
of heauen. Hee that is able to receiue this, let
him receiue it.

13 ¶ Then were brought to him
children that he should put his hands
on them: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Iesus said, Suffer the little
children to come to me: for
of such is the kingdome of heauen.

15 And when hee had put his hands

And beholde, one came and said vnto
him, Good master, what good thing shall
I do, that I may haue eternal life?

And he said vnto him, Why callest thou
me good? there is none good but one, euen
God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the
commandments.

8 He said to him, Which? And Iesus said
vnto him, Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not
commit adulterie: Thou shalt not steale: Thou
shalt not beare false witnesse.

9 Honour thy father and mother: and
thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

10 The young man said vnto him, I haue
keept all these things from my youth: what
lacke I yet?

11 Iesus sayde vnto him, If thou wilt be
perfect, go, sel that thou hast, and giue it to
the poore, & thou shalt haue treasure in heauen:
and come and follow me.

12 And when the yong man heard that
sayng, he went away sorowful: for he had
many possessions.

13 Then Iesus said vnto his disciples, Verily
I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly
enter into the kingdome of heauen.

14 And Againe I say vnto you, It is easier
for a camel to go through the eye of a needle,
than for a rich man to enter into the king-
dome of God.

15 And when his disciples heard it, they
were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then
can be saved?

16 And Iesus beheld them, and said vnto
them, With men this is vnpossible, but with
God all things are possible.

17 ¶ Then answered Peter, and saide to
him, Behold, we haue forsaken all, and folle-
wed thee: what therefore shall we haue?

D 4 38 And

28 And Iesus said vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, *¶* whē the Sonne of man sitteth vpon the throne of his maieſty, ye which follow me ſhall ſit alſo vpon twelue thrones: and iudge the twelue tribes of Iſrael.

29 And whoſoever ſhall forſake himſelfe, or brethren, or ſiſters, or father, or mother, or wife, or childrē, or lands, for my Name, hee ſhall receiue an hundred fold more, and ſhall inherite euerlaſting life.

30 But many that are firſt, ſhall be laſt, and the laſt ſhall be firſt.

CHAP. XX.

¶ Labourers hired into the vineyard. 15 *¶* The blind men and a ſoule. 17 *¶* He ſortelleth his paſſion.

FOR the kingdom of heauen is like vnto certaine houſholder, which went out at the dawning of *¶* day, to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And he agreed with the labourers for a pēnie a day, and ſent them into his vineyard.

3 And hee went out about the third houre, and ſaw other ſtanding idle in the market place,

4 And ſaid vnto them, Goe ye alſo into my vineyard, and whatſoever is right, I will giue you: and they went their way.

5 Again hee went out about the ſixth and ninth houre, and did likewiſe.

6 And hee went about *¶* eleventh houre, and found other ſtanding idle, and ſaid vnto them, why ſtand ye here all the day idle?

7 They ſaid vnto him, Becauſe none hath hired vs. He ſaid vnto them, Goe ye into my vineyard, and whatſoever is right, I will giue you: ſhall ye receiue.

8 And when euen was come, the owner of the vineyard ſaide vnto his ſteward,

Yee shall the labourers, and giue them their hire,
beginning at the last, till thou come to the
first.

9 And they which were hired about the
eleventh houre, came and receiued euery mā
a penie.

10 Now when the first came, they suppo-
sed that they should receiue more, but they
likewise receiued euery man a penie.

11 And when they had receiued it, they
murmured against the master of the house,
12 Saying. These last haue wrought but
one houre, & thou hast made them equal vn-
to vs, which haue borne the burden & heate
of the day,

13 And he answered one of them, saying
like vnto my friend, I doe thee no wrong: didst thou not
goe with me for a penie?

14 Take that which is thine own, & go
thy way I wil giue vnto this last, as much as
vnto thee.

15 Is it not lawful for mee to doe as I wil
with mine owne? is thine eye euil because I
am good?

16 So the last shalbe first, & the first last:
for many are called, but few chosen.

17 And Iesus went vp to Hierusalem, &
tooke the twelue disciples apart in the way,
and said vnto them,

18 Beholde, wee goe vp to Hierusalē, &
the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered vnto the
chiefe Priests, and vnto the Scribes, and they
shall condemne him to death.

19 And shal deliuer him to the Gentiles
to mock, and to scourge, & to crucifie him,
and the third day he shal rise againe,

20 Then came to him the mother of Ze-
bedee with her sonnes, worshipping him,
& desiring a certain thing of him,

21 And hee saide vnto her, What wouldest
thou?

21 And she said to him, Graunt that
my two sonnes may sit, the one at thy
hand, and the other at thy left hand in
kingdome.

22 And Iesus answered and said, Ye know
not what ye aske. Are yee able to drinke
the cup that I shal drinke of, and to be bap-
tizied with the bapisme that I shal be bap-
tizied with? They saide vnto him, We are
able.

23 And hee saide vnto them, Ye shall
drinke in deede of my cuppe, & shal be bap-
tizied with the bapisme that I shall be bap-
tizied with, but to sit at my right hand
at my left hand is not mine to giue: but
of my father.

24 And when the other ten heard this,
they murmured at the two brethren.

25 Therefore Iesus called them vnto him
& said, Ye know that the Lords of the Gen-
tiles haue domination ouer them, and that
they exercise authoritie ouer them.

26 But it shall not be so among you,
whosoever wil be great among you, let him
be your seruant.

27 And whosoever wil be chiefe among
you, let him be your seruant,

28 Euen as the Sonne of man came not
to be serued, but to serue, & to giue his life
a ranfome of many.

29 And as they departed from Iericho,
a great multitude followed him,

30 And beholde, two blinde men sitting
by the way side, when they heard that
Iesus passed by, cryed, saying, O Lorde, the sonne
of David, haue mercie on vs.

31 And Iesus rebuked them, because
they should hold their peace: but they cried
more loudly.

at the
at thy
and in
Ye kn
to drink
to be
al be
We are
Ye h
al be
all be
r hand
ue : be
it is pr
rd this
vnto hi
f the G
and
horitis
g your
ou, let
ese am
ame no
his life
Terich
non fit
ard y
the so
m, be
ney cri

Then Iesus stood still, and called them,
and said, What wil ye that I should doe to

33 They said to him, Lord, that our eyes
may be opened.

34 And Iesus moued with compassion, tou-
ched their eyes, and immediatly their eyes
reained sight, and they followed him,

CHAP. XXI.

*Christ rideth on an asse into Hierusalem,
He casteth out the sellers. 13 The house
of prayer.*

And when they drew neere to Hierusa-
lem, & were come to Bethphage, vnto
the mount of the Oliues, then sent Iesus two
disciples,

35 Saying to them: Go into the town y^e is
against you, and anon, yee shall finde an
ass bound, & a colt with her: loose them, &
bring them vnto me.

36 And if any man say ought vnto you, say
that the Lord hath neede of them, and
rightway hee wil let them goe

37 All this was done that it might bee ful-
filled, which was spokē by y^e Prophet, saying

38 Tel ye the daughter of Sion, Behold,
thy king commeth vnto thee, meeke, and sit-
ting vpon an asse, & a colt, the fole of an asse
unto the yoke.

39 So the disciples went and did as Iesus
commanded them.

40 And brought the asse & the colte, and
sat on them their clothes, & set him thereon,

41 And a great multitude spred their gar-
ments in the way: & other cut downe bran-
ches from the trees, and strawed them in the

Moreover, the people that went be-
fore,

and they also that followed, crying,
Hosanna to the Sonne of David, ble-
ssed he that cometh in the Name of
Lord, Hosanna thou which art in the high
heauen.

10 And when he was come into Hieru-
salem, all the citie was moued, saying, What
is this?

11 And the people said, This is Iesus the
Prophet of Nazareth in Galile.

12 ¶ And Iesus went into the Temple of Ge-
rusalem, and cast out all them, that sold and bought
in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of
money changers, and the seats of them that
sold doves.

13 And sayd to them. It is written, My
house shall be called the house of prayer: but
ye haue made it a den of theeues.

14 Then the blinde and the halt came
to him in the Temple, and he healed them.

15 But whē the chiefe Priestes & Scribes
saw the marueiles that he did, and the chil-
dren crying in the Temple, and saying, Ho-
sanna to the Sonne of David, they dismaied.

16 And sayd vnto him, Hearest thou what
these say? And Iesus said vnto them, Ye
read ye neuer, By the mouth of babes & suck-
lings thou hast made perfite the praise?

17 ¶ So he left them, and went out of the
citie vnto Bethania, and lodged there,

18 And in the morning, as hee returned
into the citie, he was hungry,

19 And seeing a fig tree in the way, he
came to it and founde nothing thereon, but
leaves onely, & said to it, Neuer fruite grow
on thee henceforwards. And anon the fig tree
withered.

20 And when his disciples saw it, they
maruailed, saying, How soone is the fig tree

withered?
21 And
Verily I say
doubt not, ye

haue done
vnto this mo-
ment, I say
cast thy selfe

22 And w
if ye beleue

23 ¶ And
Temple, the
people came
& sayd, By
things?

24 The

I also wil
if ye rel m
authoritie

25 The
fro heauen
mong them
heauen, he
then belce

26 And
titude, for

27 The
We canno
ther tel I
things.

28 ¶ B
had two f
said, Sonne
yard.

29 But
yet afier
went.

30 The
the wife.
the we

are withered.

21 And Iesus answered & said vnto them Verily I say vnto you if ye haue faith and doubt not, ye shal not onely do that which I haue done to the figge tree, but also if ye say vnto this mountaine, Take thy selfe away, & cast thy selfe into the sea, it shalbe done.

22 And whatsoever ye shal aske in prayer, if ye beleue, ye shal receive it. —

23 ¶ And when hee was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priests, and the Elders of the people came vnto him, as he was teaching & sayd, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authority?

24 Then Iesus answered & said vnto them, I also wil aske of you a certain thing, which if ye tel me, I likewise wil tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? fro heauen, or of men? Then they reasoned among themselves, saying. If we shal say, Fro heauen, he wil say vnto vs, Why did ye not then beleue him?

26 And if we say, Of men, we feare the multitude, for all hold Iohn as a Prophet.

27 Then they answered Iesus, and said, We cannot tel. And he sayd vnto them, Neither tel I you by what authority I do these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke ye? A certaine man had two sonnes, and came to the elder, and said, Sonne, go & worke to day in my vineyard.

29 But he answered and sayd, I wil not: yet afterward he repented himselfe, and went.

30 Then came he to the second, and said likewise. And he answered, & said I wil, sir, but he went not.

31 Who

S^TMATTHEWE :

31 Whether of them twaine did the
of ^h Father? They said vnto him. The
Iesus said vnto the, Verily I say vnto you
the Publicanes and harlots go before
into the kingdom of God.

32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way
righteousnes, and ye beleueed him not: but
Publicanes and the harlots beleueed him,
ye though ye saw it, & were not moued
repentance afterward, that ye might beleue
him.

33 ¶ Heare another parable, There was
certaine housholder, which planted a vine
yard and hedged it round about, and made
winepresse therein, and built a towre, &
let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far
countrey.

34 And when the time of the fruit draw
neere, he sent his seruant to the husbandmen
to receiue the fruits thereof,

35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruant
and beat one, and killed another, and stoned
another,

36 Againe he sent other seruants, more
then the first: and they did the like vnto
them.

37 But last of al he sent vnto them
own Sonne, saying, They wil reuerence
Sonne.

38 But when the husbandmen saw ^h Sonne
they said among themselves, This is ^h heire
come, let vs kil him, and let vs take his inhe
ritance.

39 So they tooke him & cast him out of
vineyard, and slew him.

40 When therfore the Lord of the vine
yard shal come, what wil he doe to the
husbandmen?

41 They said vnto him, he wil cruelly
stroy those wickedmen, and let out his vine
yard to other husbandmen.

CHAP. XXII.

and vnto other husbandmen, which shal de-
liver him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Iesus said vnto them, Read ye neuer in
the Scriptures. The stone which the builders
refused, the same is made the head of y^e cor-
ner? This was the Lords doing, and it is
marvellous in our eyes.

43 Therefore say I vnto you, the kingdom
of God shalbe taken from you, and shalbe
given to a nation, which shal bring forth the
fruits thereof.

44 And whosoever shal fall on this stone,
he shalbe broken: but on whomsoever it shal
fall it wil dash him in pieces.

45 And when the chiefe Priests and Pha-
rises had heard his parables, thy perceined y^e
he spake of them.

46 And they seeking to lay hands on him,
feared the people, because they tooke him as
a Prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

*The parable of the marriage. 9 The calling of
Gentiles. 11 The wedding garments, faith.*

THEN Iesus answered, and spake vnto the
people againe in parables saying.

1 The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a
 certaine King which married his sonne.

2 And sent forth his seruants, to cal the
 people, which were bid to the wedding, but they would
 not come.

3 And he sent forth other seruants say-
 ing, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I
 have prepared my dinner, mine oxen & my
 fiddings are killed, and al things are ready:
 come vnto the marriage

4 But they made light of it, & went their
 way, one to his farme, & another about his
 merchandise.

5 And the remnant tooke his seruants, &
 killed them sharply, and flew them.

S. MATTHEW.

7 But whē ſ̄ king heard it, he was
and ſent forth his warriors, and ſlaine
thoſe murderers, and burnt vpon their co-

8 Then ſayd he to his ſeruants, The
wedding is prepared : but they which
bidden, were not worthy.

9 Goe yee therefore out into the
waies, and as many as yee find, bid to
the marriage,

10 So thoſe ſeruants went out into
waies, and gathered together al ſ̄ euery
found, both good & bad: ſo ſ̄ wedding
furnished with gheſtes.

11 Then ſ̄ king came in, to ſee ſ̄
and ſaw there a man which had not a
wedding garment.

12 And hee ſaide vnto him, Friend, be-
cameſt thou in hither, and haſt not on a
ding garment? And he was ſpeechleſſe.

13 The ſaid the king to the ſeniā, Take
him hand & foot: take him away & caſt
into viter darknes: there ſhal be weeping
gnawing of teeth.

14 For many are called, but few choſen.

15 ¶ Then went the Pharifeſes and
counſell howe they might tangle him
talke.

16 And they ſent vnto him their diſci-
ples with the Herodiās, ſaying, Maſter, we
ſ̄ thou art true & teacheſt the way of
truly, neither careſt for any man : for
confidereſt not the perſon of men.

17 Tel vs therefore, how thinkeſt thou
it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Ceſar,
or not?

18 But Ieſus perceiued their wickedneſſe
and ſayd, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me ſ̄ tribute money. And
brought him a penny.

And he said vnto them, Whose is this
superscription?

They sayd vnto him, Cefars. The said
vnto the, Giue therefore to Cesar ʒ things
which are Cefars, and giue vnto God, those
which are Gods.

And whē they heard it, they marvel-
led and left him, and went their way.

¶ The same day the Saducees came to
him (which say that there is no resurrectiō)
and asked him,

Saying, Master, Moses said, If a mā die
without children, his brother shall marry
his wife by the right of alliance, and raise
an heir vnto his brother.

Now there were with vs seven bre-
thers, & the first married a wife, and deca-
sed, and hauing none issue, left his wife vnto
his brother.

Likewise also the second, & ʒ third,
vnto the seventh,

And last of al the woman died also.

Therefore in the resurrectiō, whose
shall she be of the seven? for al had her.

Then Iesus answered, and sayde vnto
them, Ye are deceived not knowing ʒ Scrip-
ture, nor the power of God.

For in the resurrectiō they neither
marry, nor are they married in mar-
riage, but are as the Angels of God in hea-
uē.

And concerning the resurrectiō of ʒ
the dead, haue yce not read what is spoken vnto
you of God, saying,

I am the God of Abraham, & ʒ God
of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? God is not ʒ
of the dead, but of the liuing,

And when the multitude heard it,
they were astonied at his doctrine.

¶ And when the Pharisees had heard,
they said,

E
thāt

that he had put the Sadducees to
assembled together,

35 And one of them, which was
pounder of the Lawe, asked him a
tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great com-
ment in the Lawe?

37 Iesus sayd to him, Thou shalt
Lord thy God with al thine heart, w
thy soule, and with al thy minde,

38 This is the first and the great
mandement.

39 And the second is like vnto this
shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

40 On these two commandement
geth the whole Law, and the Prophets.

41 ¶ While the Pharisees were ga-
together, Iesus asked them,

42 Saying, What thinke yee of C
whose son is he? They said vnto him,

43 He said vnto them, Howe thou
Dauid in spirit cal him Lord, saying,

44 The Lord saide to my Lord, Sit
right hand, til I make thine enemies thy
foole?

45 If then Dauid cal him Lorde, how
he his Sonner?

46 And none could answer him
neither durst any from that day forth
him any moe questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

¶ How the Scribes teaching the people
of Moses, behaue themselves.

Then spake Iesus to the multitude
to his disciples,

2 Saying. The Scribes and the Pharisees
in Moses seate.

3 Al therefore whatsoever they be-
obserue, that obserue and do: but al
workes do not: for they say, and doe

For they binde heavy burdens, & grievous to bee borne, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselves wil not moue with one of their fingers.

All their workes they do for to be seene of men: for they make their Phylacteries, and make long the fringes of their garments,

And loue the chiefe place at feasts, and haue the chiefe seates in the assemblies.

And greetings in the markets, & to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

But bee not ye called Rabbi: for one is your doctour, to wit, Christ, and all yee are brethren.

And call no man your father vpon the earth: for there is but one, your Father which is in heauen.

Be not called doctours: for one is your doctour, euen Christ.

But he that is greatest among you, let him be your seruant,

For whosoever will exalt himselfe, shall be brought low: and whosoever wil humble himselfe shall be exalted.

Woe therfore be vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites, because yee shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for yee say foorth, that we shall goe not in, neither suffer ye thē that would enter, to come in.

Woe be vnto you Scribes and Pharises hypocrites: for yee deuoure widdowes houses vnder a colour of long prayers: wherefore yee shall receiue the greater damnation.

Woe be vnto you Scribes & Pharises, hypocrites: for ye compasse sea and lande to encrease your profession: and when hee shall be made: ye make him two fold more y child, then you your selues.

E 2 16 We

16 Whosoever sweareth by the Temple, sweareth by the Temple, he offendeth.

17 Ye fooles and blind, whether is greater, the gold, or the Temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoever sweareth by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the offering that is upon it, offendeth.

19 Ye fooles & blind, whether is greater, the offering, or the altar which sanctifieth the offerings?

20 Whosoever therefore sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things upon it.

21 And whosoever sweareth by the Temple, sweareth by it, & by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And hee that sweareth by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 ¶ Woe be to you Scribes and Pharisees: for yee tithe mint, and annise, cummin, and leaue the weightier matters of the Law, & iudgement, and mercy, & these ought yee to haue done, and ye haue left the other.

24 Ye blinde guides, which straine at a gnatte, and swallow a camel,

25 ¶ Woe be to you, Scribes and Pharisees: for ye make cleane the vnder side of the cup, and of the platter: but within ye are ful of briberie and exesse.

26 Thou blind Pharise, cleanse first the side of the cup and platter, that the out side of them may be cleane also.

27 Woe be to you Scribes & Pharisees: for ye are like vnto whited sepulchres, which appeare beautifull out warde,

le T
areth
a.
ther
t sand
n by p
fwea
deth.
er is p
sancti
eareth
hings
by the
at dw
heane,
by him
and Ph
and an
er mat
cy, & b
e, and
ftaine
and Ph
the vi
with
e first
the. d
Phari
hited
arde,

Seare ye also. For outward ye appeare
righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of
hypocrisie and iniquitie.

¶ Wo be vnto you, Scribes & Pharisees,
for yee builde the tombes of the
prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the
righteous,

¶ And say. If wee had been in the daies
of our fathers, we would not haue bene part-
akers with them in the blood of the Pro-

¶ So then yee bee witnesses vnto your
selves, that yee are the children of the
which hated the Prophets,

¶ Fulfill ye also the measure of your fa-

¶ O serpents, the generation of vipers,
how shoulde yee escape the damnation of
hell?

¶ Wherefore beholde, I send vnto you
scribes, and wise men, and Scribes, and of
thee shall kill and crucifie: and of them
shall ye scourge in your Synagogues, and per-
secute from citie to citie,

¶ That ypon you may come al the righte-
ous blood that was shed vpon the earth, fro
the blood of Abell the righteous, vnto the
blood of Zacharias the sonne of Barachias,
whom ye slew between the Temple and the
altar.

¶ Verely I say vnto you, al these things
shall come vpon this generation.

¶ Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest
the Prophets, and stonest the which are sent
thee, how often woulde I haue gathered
thy children together, as y^e henne gathereth
her chickens vnder her wings, and ye would
not.

3. MATTHEWE.

38 Behold, your habitation shall
vnto you desolate,

39 For I say vnto you, ye shall not
henceforth till that ye say, Blessed is
commeth in the Name of the Lord,

CHAP. XXIII.

3 The destruction of the Temple. 4 The
of Christs coming. 12 Iniquitie.

And Iesus went out, & departed from
Temple, and his disciples came to
to shew him the building of the Temple

2 And Iesus saide vnto them, See ye
all these things? Verely I say vnto you,
shall not be here left a stone vpon a stone
shall not be cast down.

3 And as he sate vpon the mounte of
olives, his disciples came vnto him a pray
ing. Tell vs when these things shall be
what signe shall be of thy coming, & of
end of the world.

4 And Iesus answered, and said vnto
Take heede that no man deceiue you.

5 For many shall come in my Name,
ing, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many.

6 And ye shall heare of warres, &
of warres: see that ye bee not troubled:
all these things must come to passe, but
end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation,
realme against realme, and there shall be
mine and pestilence, and earthquakes in
uers places.

8 All these are but the beginning of
troules,

9 Then shall they deliuer you vnto
afflicted, and shall kil you, and ye shall be
ted of all nations for my Names sake.

10 And then shall many be offended,
shall betray one another, and shall hate
another.

And many false prophets shall rise, and
shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquitie shall be increased,
the love of many shall be colde.

13 But he that endureth to the end, he
shall be saved.

14 And this Gospel of the kingdome shall
be preached through the whole world for
witness vnto all nations, and then shall the
son of man come.

15 ¶ When ye therefore shall see the abo-
mination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the
prophet, set in the holy place, (let him that
readeth consider it)

16 Then let them which be in Iuda, flee
to the mountaines.

17 Let him which is on the house toppe,
come down to fetch any thing out of his
house.

18 And he that is in the field, let not him
come backe to fetch his clothes.

19 And woe shall be to them that are with
childe, and to them that giue sucke in those
dayes.

20 But pray that your flight be not in the
winter, neither on the Sabbath day.

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such
was not from the beginning of the world
until this time, nor shall be.

22 And except those dayes should be short-
ned, there should no flesh be saved: but for
the elects sake those dayes shall be shortened.

23 Then if any shall say vnto you, Lo,
he is Christ, or there, belecue it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christes, &
false prophets, and shall shew great signes &
tokens, so that if it were possible, they should
deceiue the very elect.

25 Behold, I haue told you before.

26 Wherefore if they shall say vnto you,
Behold,

Behold, he is in the desert, goe not for-
hold, he is in the secret places, below
not.

27 For as the lightning cometh
the East and is seene into the West, so
also the coming of the Sonne of man

28 For wheresoeuer a dead carke
whither will the Eagles be gathered to-
ether,

29 And immediatly after the tribula-
of those dayes, shal the Sunne be darkened,
the Moone shall not giue her light, and
starres shal fal from heauen, and the pow-
of heauen shalbe shaken.

30 And then shal appeare the signe of
Sonne of man in heauen: and then shal al-
kinreds of the earth mourne, & they shal
the Sonne of mā come in the cloudes of
uen with power and great glory,

31 And he shall send his Angels
great sound of a trumpet, and they shal
ther together his elect frō the foure win-
d from the one end of the heauens vnto
other.

32 Now learne the parable of the fig-
tree: when her bough is yet tender, & it
beth forth leaues, ye know that Summer
nere.

33 So likewise ye, when ye see all
things, know *ŷ* the kingdome of God is
nere at the doores.

34 Verely I say vnto you, this gen-
eration shall not passe, till all these things
done.

35 Heauen and earth shal passe away,
my words shal not passe away.

36 But of that day and houre knoweth
man, no not the Angels of heauen but
Father onely.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were,

For as the coming of the Sonne of man

beleeue

For as in the dayes before the flood,
they did eate and drinke, marry, and giue in
marriage, vnto the day that Noe entred into
Arke,

And knew nothing, til the flood came
and tooke them al away: so shal also the co-
ming of the Sonne of man be.

Then two shalbe in the fields, the one
shall bee receiued, and the other shalbe re-
fused.

Two women shalbe grinding at the
mylestone: the one shalbe receiued, and the other
shall be refused.

Watch therefore: for yee knowe not
the daye nor the houre your master wil come.

Of this bee sure, that if the good man
of the house knew at what watch the thiefe
would come, he would surely watch, & not
let his house to be digged thorow.

Therefore be ye also ready: for in the
night that ye thinke not, will the Sonne of
man come.

Who then is a faithful seruāt & wise,
whom his master hath made ruler ouer his
household, to giue them meate in season?

Blessed is that seruāt, whom his ma-
ster when he cometh, shal find so doing.

Verely I say vnto you, hee shal make
him ruler ouer al his goods.

But if that euil seruāt shal say in his
heart, My master doeth deferre his com-
ing,

And beginne to finite his fellowes, &
to eat, and to drinke with the drunken:

That seruants master will come in a
sudden, when hee looketh not for him, and in
that he is not ware of.

51 And

92 And will cut him off, and portion with hypocrites: there is weeping and gnashing of teeth.

CHAP. XXV.

1 The virgins looking for the bridegroom must watch 14. The talents delivered to the servants.

Then the kingdome of heaven is likened vnto ten virgins, which tooke their lampes, and went forth to meet the bridegrome.

2 And five of them were wise, and five foolish.

3 The foolish tooke their lampes, but none oyle with them.

4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lampes.

5 Now while the bridegrome taried, all slumbred and slept,

6 And at midnight there was a cry. Behold, the bridegrome cometh: go ye out to meete him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lampes.

8 And the foolish said to the wise, Give vs of your oyle, for our lampes are out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, No lest there wil not be ynough for vs & you: but ge ye rather to them that sel, & buye your selues.

10 And while they wēt to buy, the bridegrome came; and they that were ready, went in with him to the wedding, and the gate shut.

11 Afterwards came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs.

12 But he answered, and said, Verily I say vnto you, I know you not.

13 Watch therefore for ye know not the day, nor the houre, when the

For the kingdom of heaven is as a man
going into a strange country, called his
mans, and delivered to them his goods.

And vnto one he gaue five talents, &
to another two, and to another one to euery
after his owne ability, and straightway
he departed from home,

Then hee that had received the five
pounds, went and occupied with them, and
gained other five talents.

7 Likewise also, he that receiveth two, he
gained other two.

But he that receiued that one, went & hid it in the earth, & hid his masters mo-

But after a long season, the master of
servants came, and reckoned with
him.

Then came he that had receiued five talents, and brought other five talents, saying, Master, thou deliueredst vnto me five talents: behold, I haue gained with them other five talents.

Then his master said vnto him , It is
done good seruant and faithfull . Thou
hast bene faithfull in litle , I will make thee
ouer much ; enter into thy masters

13. Also he that had receiued twot talents,
he and said. Master, thou deliueredst vnto
me twot talents: behold, I haue gained two
talents more.

His master said vnto him, It is
ther vnto thee done good seruant, and faithfull. Thou
hast bene faithfull in litle, I will make
thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy Masters

Then he which had received the one
came and saide, Master, I knowe

where thou sowedst not, & gathered
thou strawedst not.

35 I was therefore afraid, and was
hid thy talent in the earth: hehold, thou
saieſt mine owne.

36 And his master answered, and said
to him, Thou evil ſeruant, & ſlothful,
kneweſt that I reap where I ſowed
gather where I ſtrawed not,

37 Thou oughteſt therefore to haue
my money to the exchangers, & then
comming ſhould I haue receiued mine
with vantage,

38 Take therefore the talent from him
and giue it vnto him which hath ten
talents,

39 For vnto euery man that hath it ſhall
be giuen, and he ſhall haue abundance, and from
him that hath not, euen that he hath, ſhall
be taken away,

40 Caſt therefore that vnprofitable
ſeruant into ytter darkenes: there ſhall be
weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.

41 ¶ And when the Sonne of man
cometh in his glory, and al the holy Angells
with him, then ſhall he ſit vpon the throne of
glory.

42 And before him ſhall be gathered al
nations, and he ſhall ſeparate them one from
another, as a ſhepheard ſeparateth the ſheepe
from the goats,

43 And he ſhall ſet the ſheepe on his
right hand, and the goates on the left.

44 Then ſhall the King ſay to them on
his right hand. Come ye bleſſed of my Father,
take the inheritance of the kingdome prepared
for you from the foundation of the world.

45 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me
meat: I thirſted, and ye gaue me drink.

...a stranger, and ye rooke me not vnto you:

I was naked, and ye clothed me: I was in prison, and ye visited me:

Then shal the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungry, and fed thee: or a thirft, and gaue thee drink?

And vwhen saw we thee a stranger, & took thee in vnto vs? or naked, and clothed thee?

Or vwhen saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came vnto thee?

And the King shall answer, and say vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as ye haue done it vnto one of the least of my brethren, ye haue done it to me.

Then shal he say vnto them on the left, Depart from me ye cursed, into euerglasting fire vy which is prepared for the deuill & his angels.

For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meat: I thirfted, and ye gaue me no drink:

I was a stranger, and ye rooke me not vnto you: I was naked, and ye clothed me not, sicke, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

Then shal they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or a thirft, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee?

Then shal he answer them, and say, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as yee did not do it vnto one of the least of these, ye did it not vnto me.

And these shall goe into euerglasting paine, and the righteous into life euerlasting.

CHAP

CHAP. XXVI.

*4 The consultation of the Priests against
6 His feet are anoynted.*

ANd it came to passe, when Iesus finished al these sayings, he said vnto his disciples,

2 Ye know y after two dayes is y ouer, and the Sonne of man shall bee red to bee crucified.

3 Then assembled together the Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders, and brought the people into the hall of the hie Priest, Caiaphas.

4 And consulted together, that they take Iesus by subtilie, and kil him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest any vprore be among the people,

6 ¶ And when Iesus was in Bethanias the house of Simon the leper,

7 There came vnto him a woman, which had a box of very costly ointment, & poued it on his head, as he sat at the table.

8 And when his disciples saw it, they had indignatiō, saying, What needeth this?

9 For this ointment might haue been sold for much, and bene giuen to the poore.

10 And Iesus knowing it, said vnto her, Why trouble yee the woman? for she hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

11 For ye haue the poore alwayes with you, but me shal ye not haue alwayes.

12 For in that she poued this ointment on my body, she did it to bury me.

13 Verely I say vnto you, wheresoever this Gospel shalbe preached throughout the world, there shall also this that she hath done, be spoken of for a memoriall vnto her.

4 Then one of the twelve called Ju-
scariot, went vnto the chiefe Priests,

5 And said, What wil ye giue me, and I
deliuer him ynto you? and they appoin-
vnto him thirtie *pieces* of siluer.

6 And from that time, he sought oppor-
tie to betray him.

7 ¶ Nowe on the first day of the feast of
euened bread, the disciples came to Ie-
saying vnto him. Where wilt thou that
prepare for thee to eate the Passeeouer?

8 And he said, Goe ye into the citie to
a map, and say to him, The master saith,
time is at hand: I wil keep the Passeeouer
in mine house with my disciples.

9 And the disciples did as Iesus had gi-
uen them charge, and made ready the Passee-
ouer.

10 So when the euen was come, hee sat
down with the twelve.

11 And as they did eate, hee said, Verely
I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray

12 And they were exceeding sorowfull,
began euery one of the to say vnto him,
I, Master?

13 And hee answered and said, Hee that
beth his hand vnto me in the dish, hee shall
betray me.

14 Surely the Sonne of man goeth his
way, as it is written of him: but wo be to
that by whom the Sonne of man is betray-
ed, for had he bin good for that mā, if he had ne-
uer bin borne.

15 Then Iudas which betrayed him, an-
swered, and said, Is it I, Master? He said vnto
him, Thou hast said it.

16 ¶ And as they did eat, Iesus tooke the
bread, and when he had blessed, he brake it,
and

and gaue it to the disciples, & said,
this is my body.

27 Also he tooke the cup, & when
giuen thanks, he gaue it them, saying
ye al of it.

28 For this is my blood of the New
testamēt, that is shed for many, for the
redemption of sinnes.

29 I say vnto you, that I wil not
henceforth of this fruit of the vine, vntill
that day, when I shal drinke it new with
you in my Fathers kingdom.

30 And when they had sung a Psalm,
they went out into the mount of Olives.

31 ¶ Then said Iesus vnto the, Al-
though ye be offended by me this night: for it is
written, I wil smite the shepheard, & the
sheepes flock shal be scattered.

32 But after I am risen againe, I wil
go before you into Galile.

33 But Peter answered, & said vnto
him, Though that all men should be offended
by thee, yet wil I neuer be offended.

34 Iesus said vnto him, Verily I say
vnto thee, that this night, before the cocke
shall crowe, thou shalt denie me thrise,

35 Peter said vnto him, Though I
should die with thee, I will in no case denie
thee. Likewise also said al the disciples.

36 ¶ Then went Iesus with them
into a place, which is called Gethsemane, &
he said vnto his disciples, Sit ye here, while
I go pray yonder.

37 And he tooke vnto him Peter, and
two sonnes of Zebedee, and began to
be sorrowful, and grievously troubled.

38 Then said Iesus vnto them, My
soules is very heauy, euen vnto the death: tary
ye here, and watch with me.

39 So he went a litle further, and

And he prayed, saying, O my father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from mee: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

After, he came vnto the disciples, and found them a sleepe, & said to Peter, What? couldest thou not watch with me one houre?

Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is ready, but the flesh is weake.

Againe hee went away the seconde time, and prayed, saying, O my father, if this chalice cannot passe away from mee, but that I may drinke it, thy will be done.

And he came and found them a sleepe againe, for their eyes were heavy.

So he left them and went away againe, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

Then came he to his disciples, & said vnto them, Sleepe hence forth, and take your rest: beholde, the houre is at hande, and the Son of man is giuen into the hands of sinners.

Rise, let vs go: beholde, he is at hande that betrayeth me.

And while he yet spake, lo Iudas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the High Priests and Elders of the people.

Now he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, he is he, lay hold on him.

And forthwith hee came to Iesus, and said, God saue thee, Master, and kissed him.

Then Iesus sayde vnto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they and lay hands on Iesus, and tooke him.

And behold, one of them which were with him, stretched out his hand, & drew his sword, & strooke a seruant of the high Priest, & cut off his eare.

F and

and smote off his eare.

52 Then said Iesus vnto him, Put vp thy sworde into his place: for all that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.

53 Either thinkest thou, that I came now pray to my Father, and he wil giue me more then twelue legions of Angels?

54 Howe then should the Scriptures be fulfilled, *which say*, that it must be so?

55 The same houre said Iesus to the multitude, Yee be come out as *it were* against a thiefe, with swords and staues to take me: I sate daily teaching in the Temple among you, and ye tooke me not.

56 But all this was done that the Scriptures of the Prophets might bee fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsooke him and fled.

57 ¶ And they tooke Iesus, and led him to Caiaphas the high Priest, where the Scribes and the Elders were assembled.

58 And Peter followed him a farr off vnto the hie Priestes hall, and went in, and sate with the seruants to see the end.

59 Nowe the chiefe Priests and the Elders, and all the whole councell sought for witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death.

60 But they found none, & though many false witnesses came, yet founde they none: but at the last came two false witnesses.

61 And said, This man said, I can destroy the Temple of God, and builde it in thre dayes.

62 Then the chiefe Priest arose, and said to him, Answerest thou nothing? What answer matter that these men witnesse against thee?

63 But Iesus helde his peace. Then the chiefe Priest answered and saide to him, I charge thee sweare vnto vs by the Lord God, to tell vs, if thou bee that Christ

CHAP. XXVII.

of God, or no.

Jesus said to him, Thou hast saide it: nevertheless I say vnto you, heereafter shall ye see the Sonne of man, sitting at the right hand of the power of God, and come in the cloudes of the heauen.

Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath blasphemed, what haue we more neede of witnesses? Beholde, now we haue heard his blasphemy.

What thinke ye? They answered, & said, He is guiltie of death.

Then spit they in his face, and buffeted him, and other smote him with rods.

Saying, Prophecie to vs, O Christ, whose fulfillement that smote thee?

¶ Peter sate without in the hall: & a maid came to him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galile:

But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

And when he went out into the porch, another maid saw him, and saide vnto them that were there, This mā was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

And againe he denied with an othe, saying, I know not the man.

So after a while, came vnto him they that stood by, and saide vnto Peter, Surely thou art also one of the: for euen thy speech betrayeth thee.

Then began he to curse himselfe, and to sweare, saying I know not the man. And after a while the cocke crew.

Then Peter remembered the words of Iesus which had said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie mee thrise. So he went out, and wept bitterlie.

CHAP. XXVII.

delivered bound to Pilate. 5. Iudas han-

CHAP. XXVI.

*The consultation of the Priests against Iesus
6 His feet are anoynted.*

ANd it came to passe, when Iesus had finished al these sayings, he said vnto his disciples.

2 Ye know $\frac{1}{2}$ after two dayes is $\frac{1}{2}$ Pasche, and the Sonne of man shall bee delivered to bee crucified.

3 Then assembled together the chief Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders of the people into the hall of the high Priest, called Caiaphas.

4 And consulted together, that they might slay Iesus by subtilie, and kil him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest any vprore be among the people,

6 ¶ And when Iesus was in Bethaniam, at the house of Simon the leper.

7 There came vnto him a woman, which had a box of very costly ointment, & powred it on his head, as he sat at the table:

8 And when his disciples saw it, they had indignatiō, saying, What needeth this waste?

9 For this ointment might haue been sold for much, and bene given to the poore.

10 And Iesus knowing it, said vnto them, Why trouble yee the woman? for she hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

11 For ye haue the poore alwayes with you, but me shal ye not haue alwayes.

12 For in that she powred this ointment on my body, she did it to bury me.

13 Verely I say vnto you, wheresoeuer this Gospel shalbe preached throughout the world, there shall also this that she hath done, be spoken of for a memoriall to her.

14 ¶ Then one of the twelve called Ju-
scariot, went vnto the chiefe Priests,
15 And said, What wil ye giue me, and I
will deliuer him ynto you? and they appoin-
ted vnto him thirtie pieces of siluer.

16 And from that time, he sought oppor-
tunitie to betray him.

17 ¶ Nowe on the first day of the feast of
the leuened bread, the disciples came to Ie-
sus, saying vnto him. Where wilt thou that
we prepare for thee to eate the Pascheouer?

18 And he said, Goe ye into the citie to
buy a man, and say to him, The master saith,
My time is at hand: I wil keep the Pascheouer
with mine house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Iesus had gi-
uen them charge, and made ready the Pasche-
ouer that day.

20 So when the euen was come, hee sat
down with the twelve.

21 And as they did eate, hee said, Verely
I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray

me. And they were exceeding sorowfull,
and began euery one of the to say vnto him,
I, Master?

22 And hee answered and said, Hee that
hath his hand wth me in the dish, hee shall
betray me.

23 Surely the Sonne of man goeth his
way, as it is written of him: but wo be to
that man by whom the Sonne of man is betray-
ed. Had he bin good for that man, if he had ne-
uer bin borne.

24 ¶ Then Iudas which betrayed him, an-
swered, and said, Is it I, Master? He said vnto
him, Thou hast said it.

25 ¶ And as they did eat, Iesus tooke the
bread, and when hee had blessed, he brake it,
and

and gaue it to the disciples, & said, This is my body.

27 Also he tooke the cup, & when he had giuen thanks, he gaue it them, saying, Drink ye al of it.

28 For this is my blood of the New Testament, that is shed for many, for the remission of sinnes.

29 I say vnto you, that I wil not drinke henceforth of this fruit of the vine, vntill the day, when I shal drinke it new with you in my Fathers kingdom.

30 And when they had sung a Psalm, they went out into the mount of Oliues.

31 ¶ Then said Iesus vnto the, Al ye shall be offended by me this night: for it is written, I wil smite the shepherd, & the sheep of the flock shalbe scattered.

32 But after I am risen againe, I wil go before you into Galile.

33 But Peter answered, & said vnto him, Though that all men should be offended by thee, yet wil I neuer be offended.

34 Iesus said vnto him, Verily I say vnto thee, that this night, before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denie me thrise,

35 Peter said vnto him, Though I should die with thee, I will in no case denie thee. Likewise also said al the disciples.

36 ¶ Then went Iesus with them into a place, which is called Gethsemane, & say vnto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

37 And he tooke vnto him Peter, and the two sonnes of Zebedeus, and began to wax sorrowful, and grievously troubled.

38 Then said Iesus vnto them, My soule is very heauy, euē vnto the death: tary ye here and watch vvith me.

39 So he went a litle further, and fell

CHAP. XXVI.

In face, and prayed, saying, O my father,
 if it be possible, let this cup passe from mee:
 nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt,
 40 After, he came vnto the disciples, and
 found them a sleepe, & said to Peter, What?
 could ye not watch with me one houre?
 41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not in-
 tentation: the spirit indeed is ready, but
 the flesh is weake.
 42 Again he went away the seconde
 time, and prayed, saying, O my father, if this
 cannot passe away from mee, but that I
 may drinke it, thy will be done.
 43 And he came and found them a sleepe
 againe, for their eyes were heauy.
 44 So he left them and went away againe,
 and prayed the third time, saying the same
 words.
 45 Then came he to his disciples, & said
 vnto them, Sleepe hence forth, and take your
 rest: beholde, the houre is at hande, and the
 sonne of man is giuen into the hands of sin-
 ners.
 46 Rise, let vs go: beholde, he is at hande
 that betrayeth me.
 47 And while he yet spake, lo Iudas, one
 of the twelue, came, and with him a greate
 multitude with swords and staves, from the
 chief Priests and Elders of the people.
 48 Now he that betrayed him, had giuen
 them a token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shall
 kiss, that is he, lay hold on him.
 49 And forthwith he came to Iesus, and
 said, God saue thee, Master, and kissed him.
 50 Then Iesus sayde vnto him, Friende,
 wherefore art thou come? Then came they
 and layd hands on Iesus, and tooke him,
 51 And behold, one of them which were
 with Iesus, stretched out his hand, & drew his
 sword, and strooke a seruant of the high Priest,
 and

MATTHEW.
and smote off his eare.

52 Then said Iesus vnto him, Put thy sword into his place: for all that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.

53 Either thinkest thou, that I now pray to my Father, and he will send me more then twelue legions of Angels?

54 Howe then should the Scriptures be fulfilled, which say, that it must be so?

55 The same houre said Iesus to them, I am the Son of man, and I will be come out as it were againe, with swords and staues to take you: for I have sate daily teaching in the Temple, and ye tooke me not.

56 But all this was done that the Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsooke him and fled.

57 ¶ And they tooke Iesus, and led him to Caiaphas the high Priest, where the Scribes and the Elders were assembled.

58 And Peter followed him a farr off vnto the hie Priestes hall, and went in, and sate with the seruants to see the end.

59 Nowe the chiefe Priests and the Elders, and all the whole councell sought for witnesse against Iesus, to put him to death.

60 But they found none, & though many false witnesses came, yet founde they none: but at the last came two false witnesses.

61 And said, This man said, I can destroy the Temple of God, and builde it in thre dayes.

62 Then the chiefe Priest arose, and said to him, Answerest thou nothing? What answer makest thou to these men? Witnesseth against thee?

63 But Iesus helde his peace. Then the chiefe Priest answered and saide to him, I charge thee sweare vnto vs by the Lord God, to tell vs, if thou bee that Christ

CHAP. XXVII.

of God, or no.

Jesus said to him, Thou hast saide it: nevertheless I say vnto you, heereafter shall see the Sonne of man, sitting at the right hand of the power of God, and come in the cloudes of the heauen.

Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath blasphemed, what haue we more neede of witnesses? Beholde, nowe we haue heard his blasphemy.

What thinke ye? They answered, & said, He is guilie of death.

Then spit they in his face, and buffed him, and other smote him with rods.

Saying, Prophecie to vs, O Christ, who is that smote thee?

¶ Peter sate without in the hall: & a maide came to him, saying, Thou also wast with Iesus of Galile:

But he denied before them all, saying, I knowe not what thou sayest.

And when he went out into y porch another maide saw him, and saide vnto them that were there, This mā was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

And againe he denied with an othe, saying, I knowe not the man.

So after a while, came vnto him they that stood by, and saide vnto Peter, Surely thou art also one of thē: for euen thy speech betrayeth thee.

Then began he to curse himselfe, and to sweare, saying I knowe not the man. And after a while the cocke crew.

Then Peter remembered the words of Iesus which had said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie mee thrise. So he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

delivered bound to Pilate. 5. Iudas hangeth

5. MATTHEW.

geth himselfe. 19. Pilats wife. 20. Barabbas asked.

WHen the morning was come, all the Priests, and the Elders of the people tooke counsell against Iesus to put him to death,

2 And led him away bound, & delivered him vnto Pontious Pilate the gouernour.

3 ¶ Then when Iudas which betrayed him, saw that hee was condemned, he repented himselfe, and brought againe the pieces of siluer to the chiefe Priest & Elders,

4 Saying, I haue sinned, betraying the innocent blood. But they said, What is that to vs, see thou to it.

5 And when hee had cast downe the siluer pieces in the Temple, hee departed, and went and hanged himselfe,

6 And the chiefe Priests tooke the pieces, and said, It is not lawfull for vs to put them into the treasure, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them a potters fildc for the buriall of strangers.

8 Wherefore that field is called, The field of blood vntill this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Ieremias the Prophet, saying, And they tooke thirtie siluer pieces, the price of him that was valued, whome the children of Israel valued,

10 And they gaue them for the potters field, as the Lorde appoynted me.)

11 ¶ And Iesus stood before the gouernour, and the gouernour asked him, saying, Art thou that King of the Iewes? Iesus answered vnto him, Thou sayest it.

12 And when he was accused of the chiefe Priests and Elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saide Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how many things they lay against

14 But he answered him not one worde, so much that the gouernour maruiled greatly.

15 Nowe at the feast, the gouernour was wont to deliuer vnto the people a prisoner, whom they would,

16 And they had a notable prisoner called Barrabbas.

17 When they were then gathered together, Pilate sayd vnto them, Whether will ye that I let loose vnto you Barabbas, or Iesus which is called Christ?

18 (For he knew wel that for enuie they had deliuered him.)

19 Also when hee was set downe vpon the iudgemēt seate, his wife sent to him, saying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man: for I haue suffered many things this day in a dreame by reason of him.)

20 But the chiefe Priestes and the Elders and bookekeepers perswaded the people that they should kill Barrabbas, and should destroy Iesus.

21 Then the gouernour answered, and said vnto them, Whether of the twaine will ye that I let loose vnto you? And they said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate saide to them, What shal I doe with Iesus, which is called Christ? They said to him, Let him be crucified.

23 Then said the gouernour, But what hath he done? Then they cryed yet more, Crucify him, Let him be crucified.

24 When Pilate saw that he auailed nothing, but that more tumult was made, hee tooke water and washed his hands, before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this man.

SIMATTHEW.

blood of this iust man: looke you to

25 Then answered al the people, & said
His blood be on vs, and on our children.

26 Then let hee Barabbas loose vnto
and scourged Iesus, and deliuered him
crucified.

27 Then the souldiers of the gouernour
tooke Iesus into the commune hall, and
gathered about him the whole band.

28 And they stripped him, and put
him a skarlet robe.

29 And platted a crowne of thornes,
put it vpon his head, and a reed in his
hand, & bowed their knees before him,
mocked him, saying, God saue thee, King
of the Iewes.

30 And spat vpon him, & tooke a reed
and smote him on the head.

31 Thus whā they had mocked him,
tooke the robe from him, and put his
raiment on him, and led him away to
crosse him.

32 And as they came out, they found
a man of Cyrene, named Simon: him
compelled to beare his crosse.

33 And when they came vnto the place
called Golgotha, (that is to say, the place
of dead mens skulls)

34 They gaue him vinegar to drinke,
mingled with gal: and when he had tasted
of, he would not drinke.

35 And when they had crucified him,
they parted his garments, and did cast
lots, that it might bee fulfilled, which
spoke by the Prophets, They deuised my
raiments among them, and vpon my vestment
lots.

36 And they sate, & watched him

37 And they set vp also ouer his head
a scrolle written, THIS IS IESVS

CHAP. XXVII.

THE DEATH OF IESUS CHRIST.

And there were two theues crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,

And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three dayes, save thy selfe: if thou be the Sonne of God, come down from the crosse.

Likewise also his high Priests mocking him, with the Scribes, and Elders, and Pharisees sayd,

He saved others, but he cannot save himselfe: if he be the king of Israel, let him now come down from the crosse, and we will believe in him.

He trusted in God, let him deliver him now, if he wil haue him: for he sayd, I am the Sonne of God.

The selfe same thing also the theues which were crucified with him, cast in his teeth, they said,

Now from the sixth houre was there thick darkness over all the land vnto the ninth houre.

And about the ninth houre Iesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli lama sabachani, that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

And some of them that stood there, when they heard it, saide, This man calleth for Elias.

And straightway one of them ran, & took a sponge, & filled it with vinegar, & put it on a reed, and gaue him to drinke.

Other sayde, Let be: let vs see if Elias come and save him.

Then Iesus cried againe with a loud voice, and said, I am thirsty.

S. MATTHEW.

voice, and yeelded vp the ghost.

51 And behold, the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottom, and the earth did quake, & the stones were clonen.

52 And the graues did open themselves, and many bodies of the Saints, which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graues after Iesus resurrection, and went into the holy cite, appeared vnto manie.

54 When the Centurion, and they that were wth him watching Iesus, saw the earthquake, and the things that were done, they feared greatlie, saying, Truely this was Sonne of God.

55 ¶ And manie women were there holding him a farre off, which had followed Iesus from Galile, ministring vnto him.

56 Among whom was Marie Magdalen, and Mary the mother of Iames, and Ioseph the mother of Zebedeus sonnes.

57 ¶ And when the euen was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Ioseph, who had also himselfe bene Iesus disciple.

58 He went to Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus, Then Pilate commanded the body to be deliuered.

59 So Ioseph tooke the body, and wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth,

60 And put it in his new tombe, which he had hewen out in a rocke, and rolled a stone to the doore of the sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie sitting ouer against the sepulchre.

62 ¶ Nowe the next daye that followeth Preparation of the Sabbath, the high Priests and Pharises assembled to Pilate.

CHAP. XXVIII.

63 And said, Sir, we remember that that
the Tempter said while he was yet a liue, With
to the heauens in three daies I will rise.

64 Command therefore that the sepul-
& the stone be made sure vntill the third daie, leaſt
theſe diſciples come by night, and ſteale him
awaye, and ſaie vnto the people. Hee is riſen
from the dead: ſo ſhall the laſt error bee
wroſe then the firſt.

65 Then Pilate ſaid vnto them, Ye haue
a watch: go, and make it ſure as ye know.

66 And they went, and made the ſepul-
chre ſure with the watch, and ſealed the
ſtone.

And this was done.

CHAP. XXVIII

ere there had followed vnto him the Magdalene, and Iofeph, and as come, the named Iofephus diſciple, asked the commanded

*The women goe to the ſepulchre. 2 The An-
gel. 9. The women ſee Chriſt. 18. He ſendeth
his Apoſtles to preach.*
Now in the ende of the Sabbath, when
the firſt day of the weeke began to
dawn, Mary Magdalene and the other Ma-
gdales came to ſee the ſepulchre.

1 And beholde, there was a great earth-
quake: for the Angel of the Lord deſcended
from heauen, and came and rolled backe the
ſtone from the doore, and ſate vpon it.

2 And his countenance was like lighte-
ning, and his raiment white as ſnow.

3 And for feare of him the keepers were
dismayed, and became as dead men.

4 But the Angel answered, and ſayde to
the women, Feare yee not: for I know that
ye ſeeke Ieſus which was crucified:

5 He is not here, for he is riſen, as he ſaid:
ſee the place where the Lorde was
lied.

6 And go quickly & tell his diſciples that
he is riſen from the dead: and behold, he go-
eth before you into Galile: there yee ſhall
ſee

5. MATTHEW.

see him: loe, I haue tolde you.

8 So they departed quickly from the pulchre, with feare & great ioy, & did runne to bring his disciples worde.

9 And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Iesus also met them, saying, God saue you. And they came, & took him by the feet and worshipped him.

10 Then said Iesus vnto them, Be not afraid. Goe, and tel my brethren that they go into Galile, and there shal they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were gone, behold, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed vnto the hie Priest al the things that were done.

12 And they gathered them together wth the Elders, and took counsell, and gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say, His disciples came by night, & stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this matter come before y^e Governor to be heard, we wil perswade him, & so vse the matter, that you shal not neede to care.

15 So they tooke the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is noy seed among the Iewes vnto this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen disciples went into Galile, into a mountaine, where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they sawe him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Iesus came and spake vnto them, saying, Al power is giuen vnto me in heauen, and in earth,

19 Go therfore, and teach al nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, & the Sonne and the holy Ghost,

20 Teaching them to obserue all things whatsoeuer I haue commaunded you: and loe,

CHAP. I.

See, I am with you alway, vntill the ende of the world, Amen.



THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS
Christ according to Marke.

CHAP. I.

John baptizeth .6. His apparrel & meate. 9. Iesus is baptized. 12. He is tempted. 14. He preacheth the Gospel.

THE beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God:

2 As it is written in the Prophets, Behold I send my messenger before thy face, which shal prepare the way before thee.

3 The voyce of him that cryeth in the wilderness is, Prepare the way of the Lord, make his paths streight.

4 Iohn did baptize in the wilderness, & preach the baptism of amendment of life for remission of sinnes.

5 And all the countrey of Iudea, & they, of Hierusalem, went out vnto him, & were all baptized of him in the riuer Iordan, confessing their sinnes.

6 Nowe Iohn was clothed with camels haire, and with a girdle of skinne about his loynes: and he did eate locusts & wild hony.

7 And preached, saying, A stronger then I cometh after me, whose shoes I latchet I am not worthy to stoupe downe, and vnloose.

8 Trueth it is, I haue baptized you with water: but hee will baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

9 ¶ And it came to passe in those dayes
that Iesus came from Nazareth, a citie of
Galilie, and was baptized of Iohn in Iordan.

10 And alsoone as hee was come out of
the water, Iohn saw the heavens clouen in
twaine, & the holie Ghost descending vpon
him like a doue.

11 Then there was a voyce from heauen,
saying, Thou art my beloued Son, in whom I
am wel pleased,

12 And immediatlie the Spirite driueth
him into the wildernesse.

13 And he was therein the wildernesse
fourtie daies, and was tempted of Satan: hee
was also with the wilde beastes, & the An-
gels ministred vnto him.

14 ¶ Nowe after that Iohn was commit-
ted to prison, Iesus came into Galile preach-
ing the Gospel of the kingdome of God,

15 And saying, the time is fulfilled, and
the kingdome of God is at hand: repent and
beleeue the Gospel.

16 ¶ And as hee walked by the sea of
Galile, he saw Simon and Andrew his bro-
ther, casting a net into the Sea (for they were
fishers)

17 Then Iesus said vnto them, Followe
me, and I will make you to be fishers of me.

18 And straightway they forsooke their
nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further
thence, he saw Iames the sonne of Zebede-
us, and Iohn his brother, as they were in the
ship mending their nets.

20 And anon he called them: and they
left their father Zebedeus in the ship wth his
hired seruants, and went their way after him

21 ¶ So they entred into Capernaum, &
straightwaie on the Sabbath daie he entred
into the Synagogue, and taught.

22 And

CHAP. I.

22 And they were astonied at his doctrine for he taught them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

23 ¶ And there was in the Synagogue a man, in whom was an vncleane spirit, and he cryed out,

24 Saying, Ah, what haue we to do with thee, O Iesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I know thee, what thou art, ~~euen~~ that holie one of God.

25 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Holde thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And the vncleane spirit tare him, and cryed with a loud voice, and came out of him.

27 And they were all amased, so y^e they demaded one of another, saying What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for he comandeth euen the foule spirits with authoritie, and they obey him.

28 And immediatly his fame spread abroad throughout all the region bordering on Galile.

29 ¶ And assoone as they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon and Andrew, with Iames & Iohn.

30 And Simons wifes mother lay sicke of a feuer, and anone they told him of her,

31 And hee came and tooke her by the hand, and lifted her vp, & the feuer forsooke her by and by, and she ministred vnto them.

32 And when euen was come, at what time the sun sette, they brought to him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with deuils.

33 And the whole citie was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed manie that were sicke of diuers diseases: and he cast out many deuils, and suffered not the deuils to saye that they knew him.

35 And

35 And

35 And in the morning very early
fore day, Iesus arose and went out into a soli-
tarie place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with
him, followed carefully after him.

37 And when they had found him, they
said vnto him. All men seeke for thee.

38 Then he said vnto them, let vs go into
the next townes, that I may preach there al-
so: for I came out for that purpose.

39 And he preached in their Synagogues,
thorowout al Galile, and cast the devils out,

40 ¶ And there came a leper to him, be-
seeching him, and kneeled down vnto him, &
said to him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me
cleane.

41 And Iesus had cōpassion, and put forth
his hand, and touched him, and said to him,
I wil: be thou cleane.

42 And as soone as he had spoken imme-
diatly the leprosie departed from him, & he
was made cleane.

43 And after he had given him a straine
commandement, he sent him away forth-
with.

44 And saide vnto him, See thou say no-
thing to any man, but gette thee hence, and
shewe thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for
thy cleansing those things, which Moses cō-
manded, for a testimonial vnto them,

45 But when hee was departed, he began
to tel many things, and to publish the mat-
ter: so that Iesus could no more openly en-
ter into the citie, but was without in desert
places: & they came to him from euery quar-
ter.

CHAP. II.

3 and 4 One sicke of the palfie, hauing his sin
forgiuen him, is healed, & 4 Matthew is cal-
led.

CHAP. II.

After a fewe dayes, hee entred into Capernaum againe, & it was noised, [¶] he was in the house.

2 And anon, many gathered together, in-
somuch that the places about [¶] y^e doore, could
not receiue any more: & he preached [¶] y^e word
vnto them.

3 And there came vnto him, [¶] y^e broughe
one sicke of the palsie, borne of foure men,

4 And because they could not come neere
vnto him for the multitude: they vncouered
the roofe of the house where he was: & whe
they had broken it open, they let downe
the bedde, wherein the sicke of the palsie
lay.

5 Now when Iesus saw their faith, he said
to the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sins are
forgiuen thee.

6 And there were certaine of the Scribes
sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doeth this man speake such blas-
phemies? who can forgiue sinnes, but God
only.

8 And immediatly when Iesus perceiued
his Spirite, that thus they reasoned with
hemselues, hee saide vnto them, Why reaso
n these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to [¶] y^e sicke of
the palsie, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee? or
to say, Arise and take vp thy bed, & walke?

10 But that ye may know, that the Sonne
of man hath authoritie in earth to forgiue sins
he said to the sicke of the palsie,

11 I say vnto thee, Arise, & take vp thy
bed, & get thee hence into thine own house

12 And by and by hee arose, and tooke
his bed, & went forth before them al, in-
somuch [¶] y^e they were al amased, & glorified
him, saying, We neuer saw such a thing.

13 ¶ Then he went forth again toward [¶] y^e
sea,

S. MARKE.

sea, and all the people resorted vnto him, he taught them.

14 And as Iesus passed by, hee sawe the sonne of Alphæus sit at the receit of the toll, and said vnto him, Follow mee, and he arose, and followed him.

15 And it came to passe as Iesus was at table in his house, manie Publicanes and sinners sate at table also with Iesus, and his disciples: for there were manie that followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees sawe him eate with the Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his disciples, How can he eateth & drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 Now when Iesus heard it, he said vnto them. The whole haue no neede of Physicion, but the sicke, I came not to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance.

18 And the disciples of Iohn, & the Pharisees did fast, and came and saide vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees fast, and thy disciples fast not?

19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the marriage chamber fast, while the bridegrome is with them? as long as they haue the bridegrome with them, they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the bridegrome shalbe taken from them; & then shal they fast in those daies.

21 Also no man soweth a piece of new cloth in an olde garment: for els the piece that filled it vp, taketh a waie from the old, and the breach is worse.

22 Likewise, no man putteth new wine into old vessels: for els the new wine breake the vessels, & the wine runeth out, & the vessels are ruined.

CHAP. III.

new wine must bee put into
new vessels,

And it came to passe, as hee went
through the corne on the Sabbath day, that
his disciples, as they went on their way, be-
gan to pluck the eares of corne.

And the Pharises saide vnto him, Be-
cause what do they on the Sabbath day, that
is not lawfull?

And hee saide to them, Haue ye neuer
read what Dauid did, when hee had need, &
was hungred, both he, & they that were
with him?

Howe he went into the house of God
in the dayes of Abiathar the hie Priest, and
ate the shewe bread which were not
lawfull to eat, but for the Priest, & gaue al-
so of it to them which were with him?

And hee saide to them, The Sabbath
was made for man, & not man for the Sab-
bath.

Wherfore the Sonne of man is Lorde,
of the Sabbath.

CHAP. III.

*The withered hand is healed. 6 The Pha-
risees consult with the Herodians.*

And hee entred againe into the Syna-
gogue, & there was a man which had
a withered hand.

And they watched him, whether hee
would heale him on y^e Sabbath day, y^e they
might accuse him.

Then he saide vnto the man which had
the withered hand Arise: stand forth in the
middle.

And he saide to them, Is it lawfull to doe
goodde on the Sabbath day, or to doe
ill? to save the life, or to kill? But they held
their peace.

Then he looked rounde about on the

S. MARKE.

angerly, mourning also for the hardness of their hearts, & said to the man, Strengthen thine hand. And hee stretched it out, and his hand was restored, as whole as the other.

6 ¶ And the Pharisees departed, & the way gathered a council with the Herodians against him, that they might destroy him.

7 But Iesus avoided with his disciples the sea, and a great multitude followed him from Galilee, and from Iudea,

8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, and beyond Iordan: & they thronged about Tyrus and Sidon, when they heard what great things he did, came out to him in great number.

9 And he commanded his disciples that a little ship should waite for him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For hee had healed many, in such that they pressed vpon him, to touch his garment, as had plagues.

11 And when the vncleane spirit saw him, they fell downe before him, and saying, Thou art the Sonne of God.

12 And he sharply rebuked them, saying, And they should not viter him.

13 Then he went vp into a mountain, and called vnto him whom hee would, and they came vnto him.

14 And hee appointed twelue that should be with him, and that he might send them to preach.

15 And that they might haue power to heale sicknesses, and to cast out demones.

16 And the first was Simon, and hee called him Peter.

17 Then Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn, Iames brother (& surnamed them Thunders: which is, the sonnes of thunder).

18 And Andrew and Philip and

CHAP. III.

and Matthew, and Thomas, & Ioseph of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Cananite,

And Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him, and they came home.

And the multitude assembled againe, that they could not so much as eate bread.

And when his kinsfolke heard of it, they went out to lay holde on him: for they said that he was beside himselfe.

¶ And the Scribes which came down from Hierusalem said, Hee hath Beelzebub, through the prince of the devils hee casteth out devils.

But he called them vnto him, & saide vnto them in parables, How can Satan driue out Satan?

For if a kingdome be deuided against itselfe, that kingdome cannot stand.

Or if a house be deuided against it selfe, that house cannot continue.

So if Satan make insurrection against himselfe, and bee deuided, hee cannot endure, but is at an end.

No man can enter into a strong mans house, and take away his goods, except hee first binde that strong man, and then spoile the house.

¶ Verily I say vnto you, all finnes shal be forgiven vnto the children of men, and blasphemies, wherewith they blaspheme:

But hee that blasphemeth against the Ghost, shal neuer haue forgiveness, but is able of eternal damnation.

Because they said, He had an vncleane

¶ Then came his brethren & mother, and stood without, & sent vnto him, & called him out of the multitude.

¶ And he answered them, saying, I have not a brother, neither haue I a mother, nor a sister, but they which doe the will of my Father which is in heauen, the same are my brethren, and my mother, and my sisters.

S. MARKE.

32 And the people sate about him
sayd vnto him Beholde, thy mother,
brethrē seeke for thee without.

33 But hee answered them, saying
Is my mother and my brethren?

34 And hee looked round about, on
which sate in compasse about him, and
Beholde my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoener doeth the vvil of
he is my brother and my sister, and

CHAP. IIII.

4 *The parable of the sower, 14 and the
meaning therof. 18 Thornes. 21 The can-*

AND he begā again to teach by ſ
And there gathered vnto him a
multitude, so that he entered into a
sate in the sea, and al the people (vvas by
sea side on the land.

2 And hee taught them many
parables, & said vnto them in his doctrine

3 Hearke: Behold, there vvent out a
to sowe.

4 And it came to passe as he sowed
some fel by the vway side, & the fowles
heauen came, and deuoured it vp.

5 And some fell on stony ground, w
it had not much earth, and by and by
vp, because it had not depth of earth.

6 But assoone as the sun vvas vp,
burnt vp, & because it had not roots, it
chered away.

7 And some fel among ſ
thornes grevv vp & choked it, so that
no fruite.

8 Some againe fel in good ground,
yeelde fruit that sprung vp, and grevv,
brought forth, some thirtie folde, some
fold, and some an hundreth fold.

9 Then he sayd vnto them, He that
eares to heare, let him heare.

And whē he was alone, they that were
him with the twelue, asked him of *ſ*
her, *ſ*

And he ſaid vnto them, To you it is gi-
to know the myſtery of *ſ* kingdome of
but vnto thē that are without, al things
done in parables,

That they ſeeing, may ſee, & not diſ-
and they hearing, may heare, and not
ſtande, leſt at any time they ſhoulde
and their ſinnes ſhoulde bee forgiven
m.

Againe he ſaid vnto them, Perceiue ye
this parable? how then ſhould ye vnder-
al other parables?

The ſower ſoweth the word.

And theſe are they that receiue the
by the waye ſide in whom the worde
ſowen: but whē they haue heard it, Satan
meth immediately, and taketh away the
that was ſowen in their heart:.

And likewise they that receiue *ſ* ſeed
ſtony ground, are they, which when they
heard the word, ſtraight waies receiue
with gladneſſe.

Yet haue they no root in themſelues,
endure but a time: for when trouble and
perſecution ariſeth for the word, immediatly
they be offended.

Alſo they that receiue the ſeede among
thornes, are ſuch as heare the word:

But the cares of this world, and *ſ* de-
ſires of riches, and the luſts of other
things enter in, and choke the worde, and it
fruitful.

But they that haue receiued ſeede in
good ground, are they that heare the word,
receiue it & bring forth fruit: one corne
another ſixtie, and ſome an hundreth,

He that
G 3 21 ¶ Alſo

21 ¶ Also he said vnto them, Come oute
Candle in, to be put vnder a bushel,
the bed, and not to be put on a candle.

22 For there is nothing hid, y^e shall
opened: neither, is there a secret, but
shall come to light.

23 If any mā haue eares to heare, let
heare.

24 And he said vnto the, Take heed
ye heare, with what measure ye mete
be measured vnto you: & vnto you y^e
shall more be given.

25 For vnto him that hath, shall be
men, and from him that hath not, shall be
away, euen that he hath.

26 ¶ Also hee said, So is the kingdome
God, as if a mā should cast seed in the

27 And should sleepe and rise vp night
day, and the seede shoulde spring and
vp, he not knowing how:

28 For the earth bringeth forth
it selfe, first the blade, then the eares,
that full corne in the eares.

29 And as soone as the fruit sheweth
selfe, anon he putteth in the sickle, because
haruest is come.

30 ¶ He sayd moreouer, Wherevnto
we liken the kingdome of God? or where
comparison shall we compare it?

31 It is like a graine of mustard
which when it is sown in the earth,
least of all seedes that be in the earth:

32 But after y^e it is sown, it groweth
and is greatest of al herbes, & beareth
branches, so that the foules of heauen
build vnder the shadow of it.

33 And with many such parables he
taught the word vnto them, as they were
able to heare it.

34 And without parables spake he

CHAP.III.

Conferre with them; but he expounded all things
hel, & principles apart.

And the same day when euen was
y shal. he said vnto them, let vs passe ouer vn-
t, but to the other side.

And they left the multitude, & took a
eate, because he was in the ship, and there were al-
with him other little ships.

And there arose a great storm of wind
mete in waues dashed into the ship, so that it
you y know ful.

And he was in the sterne a sleepe on a
shal. & they awoke him, and said to him,
t, shal be carest thou not that we perish?

And he arose vp, & rebuked & wind,
kingdom vnto the sea, Peace, and be stil. So the
in the ceased, and it was a great calme.

Then he said vnto them, Why are yee
ing and fearful? how is it that ye haue no faith?

And they feared exceedingly, & said
north from another, Who is this, y both y wind
e cares, & obey him?

CHAP.V.

in shewe. *CHAP.V.*
le, because possessed is healed. 7 The deuill acknow-
eth Christ 9 A legion of deuils 13 en-
nercunte vnto swine.

And they came ouer to the other side of
the sea into the countrey of y Gadarees
mustard. And when he was come out of y ship,
e earth, met him incontinently out of y graues,
e earth: which had an vncleane spirit:

who had his abiding among y graues, &
beareth could bind him, no not with chaines
of heauen, because that when he was often bound
feters & chaines, he plucked y chaines
ables he, and brake the feters in pieces, nei-
s they would any man tame him.

And alwaies both night & day he cri-
spake to the mountaines, and in the graues, and

MARK,
Brooke himselfe with stones.

6 And when he saw Iesus a farre
ran, and worshipped him.

7 And cried with a loude voice, & said,
What haue I to do with thee, Iesus the
of γ most high God? I vvil that thou
come by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said ynto him, Come out of
man, thou vncleane spirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name?
he answered, saying, My name is legion:
vve are many.

10 And he praied him instantly, that
vvould not send them avway out of them
trety.

11 Nowv there vvvas there in the mountaine
gains a great heard of svvine feeding:

12 And al the devils besought him, saying,
Send vs into the swine, that vve may
into them.

13 And incontinently Iesus gave them
leauē. Then the vncleane spirites vvent out
and entred into the svvine, & the heard
headlong from the high banke into the sea:
(and there vvvere aboutt vvvo thousand svvines)
and they vvvere choked vp in the sea.

14 And the svvineheards fled, & told
the citie, and in the countrey, and they
out to see vvhat it vvvas that vvvas done.

15 And they came to Iesus, and savv
that had bene possessed vvith γ denil,
the Legion, sit both clothed, & in his
mind: and they vvvere afrayd,

16 And they that savv it told them
vvvas done to him that vvvas possessed vvith
devil and concerning the svvine.

17 Then they began to pray him, that
vvould depart from their coastes.

18 And vvhen he vvvas come into the
he that had bene possessed vvith the

him that he might be with him,
Howbeit, Iesus would not suffer him,
he sayde vnto him, goe thy way home to
thy friends, & shew them what great things
the Lord hath done vnto thee, and how he
hath had compassion on thee,
So he departed, and began to publish
in Decapolis, what great things Iesus had
done vnto him: and all men did marueile.
¶ And when Iesus was come ouer a-
gain by ship vnto the other side, a great mul-
titude gathered together to him, and he was
not able to entre vnto the sea.

¶ And behold, there came one of the rulers
of the Synagogue, whose name was Iairus:
when he saw him, he fell downe at his
feet.

¶ And besought him instantly, saying,
My little daughter lieth at point of death:
if thou wilt, touch my daughter, that she may
live.

¶ Then he went with him, and a great
multitude followed him, and thronged
him.

¶ (And there was a certaine womā, which
was diseased with an issue of blood twelue
yeres.)

¶ And had suffered many things of many
physitions, and had spent all that she had, &
was made worse.

¶ When she had heard of Iesus, she came
in the preasse behinde, and touched his gar-
ment.

¶ For she said, If I may but touch his
garment, I shall be whole.

¶ And straight way the course of her blood
was dried vp, and she felt in her body, that
she was healed of that plague.

30 And immediately when Iesus did
in himselfe the vertue that went out
he turned him round about in the press
said, Who hath touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said vnto him,
seest thou the multitude throng thee, and
thou, Who did touch me?

32 And he looked round about, to see
that had done that.

33 And the woman feared and trembled
for she knew what was done in her, and
came and fel downe before him, & told
the whole truerh,

34 And he said to her, Daughter, thy
faith hath made thee whole: go in peace, and
whole of thy plague.)

35 While he yet spake, there came
the ruler of the Synagogues house
which sayd, Thy daughter is dead: why
seest thou & makest any further.

36 As soone as Iesus heard that word
ken, he said vnto the ruler of the Synagogue
Be not afraid, only belecue.

37 And he suffered no man to follow
saue Peter and Iames, & Iohn the brother
Iames.

38 So he came vnto the house of the
of the Sanagogue, and saw the tumult, &
that wept and wailed greatly?

39 And he went in and said vnto them,
Why make ye this trouble, and weepe?
child is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laught him to scorne: but
put them al out, & toke the father, and
mother of the childe, and them that were
him, and entred in where the child lay.

41 And tooke the child by the hand, and
said vnto her, Talitha cumy, which is by
interpretation, Mayden, I say vnto thee,

42 And straightway the mayden arose,
will

CHAP. V.
s did, for shee was of the age of twelue
out of the temple, & they were astonied out of measure.
e preachers. And he charged the straightly y no man
hes? should know of it, and commanded to giue
o him, & meate.
and he

CHAP. VI.

out, to see *Christ preaching in his countrey, his owne co-*
untry, & him. 6 *The vnbelleefe of y Nazarites,*
d trembled. And he departed thence, and came into
her, and in his own countrey, and his disciples fol-
& told him.

And when y Sabbath was come, he be-
er, thy father to teach in the Synagogue, & many that
ce, and heard him were astonied, & said, Fro whence
this man these things? & what wisdom
came from this that is giuen vnto him, that even such
use *great* workes are done by his hands.!

ad: why is not this y carpenter, Maries sonne, y
er. brother of Iames and Ioses, and of Iuda and
t word from you? and are not his sisters here w vs? And
e Synagogue were offended in him.

Then Iesus sayd vnto them, A Prophet
follow him without honour, but in his own coun-
e brother, and among his owne kinred, and in his
house.

of the multitude. And he could there do no great workes,
mult, & that he laid his hands vpon a few sicke
people, & healed them.

vnto them. And he marueiled at their vnbelleefe, &
weeper, about by the townes on euery side, tea-
ching.

orne: but he called vnto him the twelue,
her, and began to send them fourth two and two,
that were, & gave them power over vncleane spirits,
ild lay. And commanded them y they should
e hand, & nothing for *their* iourney, saue a staffe
ich is by the way, neither scrip, neither bread, neither
thee, neither in their girdles.

denar, & that they should be shod with san-
dals,

saies, and that they should not put
coates.

10 And he said vnto them, Where
ye shal enter into an house, there abide
ye depart thence.

11 And whosoever shal not receiue
nor heare you, when ye depart thence,
of the dust that is vnder your feete, for
nes vnto them. Verely I say vnto you
shalbe easier for Sodome or Gomorra
day of iudgement, then for that citie.

12 ¶ And they went out and preached
men should amend their liues.

13 And they cast out many deuils: &
anointed many that were sick, with oyle
healed them.

14 ¶ Then King Herod heard of him
his name was made manifest) and sayd,
Baptist is risen againe from the dead, &
fore great works are wrought by him,

15 Other said, It is Elias: and some
It is a Prophet, or as one of those Prophets

16 So when Herod heard it, he said,
Iohn, whom I beheaded: he is risen from
the dead.

17 For Herod himselfe had sent forth
had taken Iohn, and bound him in prison
Herodias sake, which was his brother Ph
wife, because he had married her.

18 For Iohn said to Herod, It is not
ful for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias layd wayte ag
him, and would haue killed him: but
could not:

20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing
he was a iust man, & an holy, and reuer
him, and when he heard him, he did
things, & heard him gladly.

21 But the time being couenient wh
rod on his birth day made a bāket to his

CHAP. VI.

put in the chiefe captaines, and chiefe estates of Galile.

And the daughter of the same Herodias came in, & danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate at table together, & the king

receiued vnto the maid. Aske of me what thou wilt, and I wil giue it thee.

And he sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I wil giue it thee, euen the halfe of my kingdome.

So she went forth, & said to her mother, What shal I aske? And she said, Iohn Baptists head.

Then she came in straightway with her oyle, & asked, saying, I would thou shouldst giue vnto me euen now in a charger the head of Iohn Baptist.

Then the King was very sory, yet for oaths sake, and for their sakes which sate with him, he would not refuse her.

And immediately the King sent the chamberlaine & gaue charge that his head should be brought in. So hee went and beheaded Iohn in the prison,

and brought his head in a charger, & sent forth to the maid, and the maid gaue it to her mother.

And when his disciples heard it, they came and tooke vp his body, and put it in a bosome.

And the Apostles gathered themselves together to Iesus, & told him all things which they had done, and what they thought,

And he said vnto them, Come ye apart into the vildernes, & rest a while: for there he did many commers & goers that they had no leisure to eat,

So they went by ship out of the way to his desert place.

But the people sawv them when they departed

3:MARKE.

departed, and many knew him, and
foote thither out of al cities, and came
before them, and assembled vnto him.

34 Then Iesus went out, and saw a
multitude, and had compassion on the
cause they were like sheepe which haue
no shepheard: and he began to teach them
things.

35 And when the day was now far
his disciples came vnto him, saying, This
is a desert place, and now the day is far
fed..

36 Let them depart that they may
goe into the countrey and townes about, and
buy them bread: for they haue nothing to eat.

37 But he answered, and said vnto them,
Giue ye them to eate. And they said
vnto him, Shall wee goe, and buy two hundred
peniworth of bread, and giue them
to eate?

38 Then he said vnto them, How many
loaves haue ye? goe & looke. And when they
knewe it, they said, Fiue, and two fishes.

39 So he commanded them to make
all sit downe by companies vpon the greasse.

40 Then they sate downe by rowes,
hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And he tooke the fiue loaves, and
two fishes, & looked vp to heauen, and
gave thanks, and brake the loaves, & gaue
them to his disciples to set before them, & when
the fishes he deuided among them all.

42 So they did all eate, and were
satisfied.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets
of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they which had eaten, were about
thousand men.

45 ¶ And straightway he caused his

CHAP. VI.

and he went into the ship, and to goe before
the other side vnto Bethsaida, while he
away the people.

46 Then alsoone as he had sent the away,
departed into a mountaine to pray.

47 And when euen was come, *ſ* ship was
in the mids of the sea, and he alone on the

48 And he saw them troubled in rowing
for the winde was contrary vnto them, & a-
bout the fourth watch of the night, he came
to them, walking vpon the sea, and would
have passed by them.

49 And whē they saw him walking vp-
on the sea, they supposed it had bene a spi-
rit, and cryed out,

50 For they al saw him, and were sore a-
fraid: but anon he talked with them, & said
vnto them, Be of good comfort it is I, be not
afraid.

51 Then he went vp vnto them into the
ship, and the winde ceased, and they were
much more amased in themselues, and mar-
velled.

52 For they had not considered *ſ* matter
of the loaues, because their hearts were har-
dened.

53 And they came over, & went into
the land of Genesaret, and arrived.

54 So when they were come out of the
ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran about throughout al *ſ* region
about, and beganne to cary hither &
thither in couches al that were sicke, where
they heard *ſ* he was.

56 And whither soeuer hee entred into
townes, or cities, or villages, they layd their
mats in the streetes and prayed him that they
might touch at the least the edge of his
garment. And as many as touched him,
were

were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

2 The Apostles are founde fault with, for
sing with vnwashed hands. 4 The Pharisees
traditions about washings,

Then gathered vnto him the Pharisees
certaine of the Scribes which came
Hierusalem.

2 And when they sawe some of his
ples ate meate with common hands, (that
to say, vnwashed) they complained.

3 (For the Pharisees & al the Iewes
cept they wash their hands oft, eate not
ding the tradition of the Elders.

4 And when they come from the market
except they wash, they eate not: and many
other things there be, which they haue
vpon the to obserue, as the washing of cups
and pots, and of brasen vessels, and of bread,

5 Then asked him the Pharisees & Scribes
Why walke not thy disciples according
the tradition of the Elders, but eate meate
vnwashed hands?

6 Then he answered and said vnto them
Surely Esay hath prophesied wel of you,
pocrites, as it is written, This people hono
reth mee with lippes, but their heart is far
away from me.

7 But they worship mee in vaine, teach
ing for doctrines the commandments
men.

8 For ye lay the commandment of God
apart, & obserue the traditions of men, as
washing of pots and of cups, and many o
such like things ye do.

9 And hee said vnto them, Wel ye
the commandment of God that ye may
serue your own tradition,

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father

...and, Whosoever shall speake e-
of father or mother, let him die the
death.

But yee say, If a man say to father or
mother, Corban, that is, By the gift that is of-
fered by me, thou mayest haue profite, he shal
be free.

So yee suffer him no more to doe any
thing for his father, or his mother,

Making the word of God of none au-
ail by your tradition which ye haue or-
dained: and ye doe many such like things.

Then hee called the whole multitude
of them, and sayd vnto them, Heare ye ouer
all, and vnderstand.

There is nothing without a man, that
can defile him, whiche it entreth into him: but
the things which proceed out of him, are they
that defile the man.

If any haue eares to heare, let him
heare.

And when hee came into an house, ac-
cording to the people, his disciples asked him
concerning the parable.

And he sayd vnto them, What? are ye
without vnderstanding also? Do ye not know
that whatsoever thing from without entreth
into a man, can not defile him.

Because it entreth not into his heart,
but into his belly, & goeth out into draught
of vaine, thus purging of all meates?

Then he saide, That which commeth
out of a man, that defileth man.

For from within, euen out of the harte
of men, proceede euill thoughts, adulteries,
murders,

steales, couetousnesse, wickednesse, de-
baucheries, a wicked eye, backbiting,
hatred, that ye may see.

These euill things come from with-

in, and defile a man.

24 ¶ And from thence hee came
into the borders of Tyrus & Sidon,
into an house, & woulde that no man
shoulde knowen: but he could not be hid.

25 For a certaine woman, whose
daughter had an vncleane spirit, hard
and came, and fel at his feete,

26 (And the woman was a Greek,
sophenistian by nation) & she besought
that hee woulde cast out the deuill out of
her daughter.

27 But Iesus said vnto her, Let the
children first be fed: for it is not good to take
the childrens bread, and to cast it vnto whols.

28 Then she answered, & said vnto
him, Lord: yet in deede the whelpes
eate of the crumbs vnder the table of the childrens crummes.

29 Then he said vnto her, For this
say I vnto thee, go thy way: the deuill is gone out of
thy daughter.

30 And when she was come home
to her house, she found the deuill departed,
and her daughter lying on the bed.

31 ¶ And hee departed againe from
the coast of Tyrus and Sidon, and came vnto
the sea of Galilee, through the mids of the
Decapolis.

32 And they brought vnto him one
that was deafe and stambred in his speech,
and prayed him to put his hand vpon him.

33 Then hee tooke him aside from
the multitude and put his fingers in his eares,
and did spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking vp to heauen, he
said & saide vnto him, Ephphatha, that is,
be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were
opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed,
& he spake plaine.

And he commaunded them, that they
shew no man: but how much soeuer he
did them, the more a great deale they
glorified it,

And were beyond measure astonied,
because he hath done al things wel: he ma-
de both the deaf to heare, and the dumme
to speake.

CHAP. VIII.

*The miracle of the seuen loaves, 11 The
disciples seeke signes. 15 To beware of the lea-
sons of the Pharisees.*

In those dayes, when there was a very
great multitude, and had nothing to eate,
he called his disciples to him, & sayd vnto

I haue compassion on γ multitude, be-
cause they haue now continued wth me three
dayes, and haue nothing to eate.

And if I send the away fasting to their
houses, they would faint by the way:
for some of them came from farre.

Then his disciples answered him, Whence
can a man satisfie these with bread here in
this wilderness?

And he asked them, How many loaves
haue ye? And they sayd, Seuen.

Then hee commaunded the multitude
to sit down on the ground: and he tooke the
seuen loaves, & gaue thankes, brake them, &
gaue to his disciples to set before them, and
they did set them before the people.

They had also a fewe smal fishes: and
when he had giuen thankes, he commaunded
also to be set before them,

So they did eate, and were sufficed, and
tooke vp of the brokē meate that was
in the baskets full.

And they that had eaten, were about
foure thousand, so he sent them away.

10 ¶ And anon he entred into
his disciples, and came into the par
manutha.

11 And the Pharises came forth,
gan to dispute with him seeking of
signe from heauen, and tempting him.

12 Then hee sighed deeply in his
and said Why doeth this generation
signe? Verely I say vnto you, a signe shall
be giuen vnto this generation.

13 ¶ So hee left them, and went into
ship againe, and departed to the other side.

14 ¶ And they had forgottē to take
neither had they in the ship with them,
one loafe.

15 And hee charged them, saying, Take
heede and beware of the leauen of the Pha
rises, and of the leauen of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themsel
saying, *It is* because we haue no bread,

17 And when Iesus knew it, he said
them, Why reason you *thus*, because yee
no bread? perceiue yee not yet, neither
derstand? haue yee your hearts yet hard
ned?

18 Haue yee eyes, and see not? & haue
eares, and heare not? and doe yee not reme
ber?

19 When I brake the five loaves among
five thousand, how many baskets ful of
ken meate tooke ye vp? They said vnto
Twelue.

20 And when I brake seuen among
thousand, how many baskets of the lea
of broken meate tooke ye vp? And they
Seuen.

21 Then he said vnto them, Howe
ye vnderstand not?

22 And hee came to Bethsaida, and
brought a blinde man vnto him, and de

to him.

Then he tooke the blind by the hand,
and led him out of the town, and spet in his
eyes, and put his hands vpon him, and asked
him, if he saw ought.

34 And he looked vp, & said, I see men:
for I see them walking like trees.

35 After that, he put his hands again vpon
his eyes, & made him looke againe. And
he was restored to his sight, and lawe euery
man as farre off clearely.

36 And hee sent him home to his house,
saying, Neither go into the towne, nor tel it
to any in the town.

37 ¶ And Iesus went out, & his disciples
saying, To the townes of Cesarea Philippi. And by
the way hee asked his disciples, saying vnto
them, Whom doe men say that I am?

38 And they answered, *Some say, Iohn
Baptist, and some, Elias: and some, one of the
prophets.*

39 And he said vnto them, But whō say
that I am? Then Peter answered, & saide
vnto him, Thou art that Christ.

40 And hee sharply charged them, that
telling him they should tel no man.

41 Then hee began to teach them that
the sonne of man must suffer many things, and
be reprocued of the Elders, and of
Priests, & of the Scribes, and be slaine, &
after three dayes rise againe.

42 And he spake that thing boldly. Then
he tooke him aside, and began to rebuke
him among the learners.

43 Then hee returned backe, and looked
vnto his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying,
Howe iudas thee behinde me, Satan: for thou vnder-
standest not the things that are of God, but
the things that are of men.

44 ¶ And hee called the people vnto him

with his disciples, and said vnto them: whosoever wil follow me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me.

35 For whosoever wil saue his life, shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, he shall saue it.

36 For what shall it profite a mā, though hee should winne y^e whole world, if he lose his soule?

37 Or what exchange shall a mā giue for his soule: —

38 For whosoeter shall be ashamed of me, and of my words among this adulterous and sinful generation, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed also, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.

CHAP. IX

2 *Christ's transfiguration*, 7 *Christ's resurrection*, 11 *Of Elias and Iohn Baptist.*

AND he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they haue scene the kingdome of God with power.

2 And sixe dayes after, Iesus taketh with him Peter, & Iames, and Iohn, & carrieth them vp into an hie mountaine out of the which he was alone, and his shape was changed before them.

3 And his raiment did shine, & was white, as snow, so white as no fuller can whiten vpon the earth.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias, and Moses, and they were talking with Iesus.

5 Then Peter answered and said to Iesus, my master, it is good for vs to be here: let us make also three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias,

6 Yet he knew not what he said:

ther were afraide.

And there was a cloude that shadowed
follow him, and a voice came out of the cloude,
is life, saying, This is my beloued Sonne: heare
his life.

And suddenly they looked round about
saw no more any saue Iesus onely with
ld, if he were.

And as they came down from the mou-
ma gioune, he charged them that they should tell
man what they had seene, say: when the
ashamed hope of man were risen from the dead a-
s a duety.

So they kept that matter to themselves
commended demanded one of another, what the ri-
e holy from the dead againe should meane.

Also they asked him, saying Why say
the Scribes, that Elias must first come.

And hee answered, and sayd vnto the
Baptist, Elias verely shal first come, and restore all
things: and as it is written of the Sonne of
of them, he must suffer many things, & be set at
of death.

But I say vnto you, γ Elias is come
and they haue done vnto him whatsoever
taketh you would) as it is written of him.

& caried him. And when he came to his disciples
t of the lawe a great multitude about them, and γ
auged themselves disputing with them.

And straightway al γ people, when
they beheld him, were amased, and ran to
fuller came, and saluted him.

Then he asked the Scribes, what dispute
them Elias among your selues?

And one of the company answered,
d said to Iesus, sayd, Master, I haue brought my sonne
here: leauee, which hath a dumbe spirit,

one for thee. And wherefoerer he taketh him, he
eth him, and he smeth, and gnaseth his
ne said: and pincheth away (and I spake to thy
disciples

disciples, that they should cast him
they could not.

19 The he answered him, & said, O
fleshe generation . how long now shal
with you: how long now shal, I suffer
bring him vnto me.

20 So they brought him vnto him :
as soone as the spirit saw him, he tare him,
he fel downe on the ground, wallowing
foaming.

21 Then he asked his father , How
time it is since he hath bene thus ? And
sayd, O fa childe.

22 And oft times he casteth him into
fire, & into the water to destroy him: but
thou canst do any thing , helpe vs, and
compassion vpon vs.

23 And Iesus said vnto him, if thou
beleue it, al things are possible to him
beleueeth.

24 And straightway the father of \S child
crying wth teares, sayd, Lord, I beleue: but
mine vnbeliefe.

25 When Iesus saw that the people
running together, he rebuked the vncl
spirit, saying vnto him, Thou dumbe & de
spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, &
ter no more into him.

26 Then the spirit cried , and rent
fore, & came out, and he was as one dead,
somuch that many sayd, He is dead.

27 But Iesus tooke his hand, and lift
vp and he rose.

28 And whē he was come into \S house,
his disciples asked him secretly, Why coul
not we cast him out?

29 And he sayd vnto them , This kind
can by no other meanes come foorth, but
prayer & fasting.

30 ¶ And they departed thence, and

him : neither chorow Galile, and he woulde not
that any should haue knowen it.

aid, Of ³¹ For he taught his disciples, & said vn-
w shall ³² them, The Sonne of man shalbe deliuered
suffer ³³ the hands of men, and they shal kil him
but after that he is killed he shal rise againe
him : ³⁴ the third day,

are him, ³⁵ But they vnderstood not that saying,
following ³⁶ were afrayd to aske him.

³⁷ After he came to Capernaum: & whe
, How ³⁸ was in the house, he asked them, What
? And ³⁹ sit that yee disputed among you by the
way?

him into ⁴⁰ And they held their peace: for by the
him: ⁴¹ they reasoned among themselues who
vs, and ⁴² be the chiefest.

⁴³ And he sate downe, & called ⁴⁴ & twelve
if thou ⁴⁵ sayd to them, If any man desire to be first,
to him ⁴⁶ the same shalbe last of all, and seruant vnto

r of ⁴⁷ & childe, And he tooke a litle childe, & set him
eleue: ⁴⁸ he in the mids of them, and tooke him in his
arms, and sayd vnto them.

people ⁴⁹ Whosoever shall receiue one of such
the vncl ⁵⁰ children in my Name, receiueth me,
be & ⁵¹ whosoever receiueth me, receiueth not
him, & ⁵² but him that sent me.

⁵³ & Then Iohn answered him, saying,
d rent ⁵⁴ we saw one casting out deuils by thy
one dead ⁵⁵ which followeth not vs, and we for-
ad. ⁵⁶ him, because he followeth not vs,

and lift ⁵⁷ But Iesus sayd, Forbid him not: for
it is no man that can do a miracle by my
to ⁵⁸ & he, that can lightly speake euil of me.

Why ⁵⁹ For whosoever is not against vs, is on
part.

This kin ⁶⁰ And whosoever shall giue you a cup
orth, but ⁶¹ to drinke for my Names sake, be-
ye belong to Christ, verily I say vnto
e, and ⁶² shal not lose his reward.

42 And whosoever shall offend
these little ones, that beleue in me, it is
better for him rather, that a milstone
be hanged about his neck and that he went
into the sea.

43 Wherefore if thine hand cause thee
to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to come
into life, maimed, then hauing two hands,
to go into hell, into the fire that neuer shall
be quenched.

44 Where their worme dieth not, & the
fire neuer goeth out,

45 Likewise, if thy foote cause thee to
offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to go
into life, the hauing two feete to be cast
into hel, into the fire that neuer shall be
quenched,

46 Where their worme dieth not, and the
fire neuer goeth out.

47 And if thine eye cause thee to offend,
plucke it out, it is better for thee to goe
into the kingdome of God with one eye, then
hauing two eyes to be cast into hel fire,

48 Where their worme dieth not, and the
fire neuer goeth out.

49 For euery man shall be salted with
salt, and euery sacrifice shall be salted with
salt.

50 Salt is good: but if the salt be
refused, wherewith shall it be seasoned? Have
ye salt in your selues, and haue peace one with
another.

CHAP. X

9 The wise onely for fornication to be purged
way. 13 Little children are brought to Christ.

ANd he arose from thence, and went
to the coasts of Iudea by the farre
of Iorden, and the people resorted vnto him
again, and as he was went, he taught them
again.

CHAP. X.

Then y Pharisees came and asked him,
were lawful for a man to put away his
stone, and tempted him.

And he answered and sayd vnto them,
What did Moses command you?

And they sayd, Moses suffered to write
bill of diuorcement, and to put her away.

Then Iesus answered, and said vnto the
for the hardnesse of your heart he wrote
his precept vnto you,

But at the beginning of the creation,
God made them male and female.

For this cause shal man leaue his father
and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife.

And they twaine shalbe one flesh: so y
they are no more twaine, but one flesh.

Therefore, what God hath coupled toge-
ther, let not man separate.

And in the house his disciples asked
him again of that matter.

And he sayd vnto them, Whosoever
shal put away his wife, and marry another,
committeth adultery against her.

And if a woman put away her husband,
and be married to another; she committeth
adultery.

Then they brought litle children to
him, that he should touch them: & his disci-
ple rebuked those that brought them.

But when Iesus saw it, he was dis-
pleased, & sayd to them. Suffer the litle chil-
dren to come vnto me, and forbidde the not:
for of such is the kingdome of God.

Verely I say ynto you, Whosoever shal
receiue the kingdome of God as a litle
childe, he shal not enter therein.

And he tooke them vp in his armes, &
put his hande vpon them, and blessed them.

And when hee was gone out on y
there came one running, and knee-
led

led to him, & asked him, Good Master, what shall I do, that I may possess eternall life.

18 Iesus sayd to him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, even God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments. Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not steale. Thou shalt not beare false witness. Thou shalt hurt none. Honour thy father and mother.

20 Then he answered, & said to him, Master, all these things have I obserued from my youth.

21 And Iesus looked vpon him, and loved him, and sayde vnto him, One thing thou lackest vnto thee, Go, and sel all that thou hast, and giue to the poore, & thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, follow me, & thou shalt take vp the crosse,

22 But he was sad at that saying, for he had great possessions,

23 And Iesus looked round about, & said vnto his disciples, How hardly do they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God.

24 And his disciples were afraide at his wordes. But Iesus answered againe, and said vnto them, Children, how hard it is for them that trust in riches, to enter the kingdome of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to goe through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were much more astonished, saying with themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 But Iesus looked vpon them, & said, With men it is impossible but not with God, for with God all things are possible.

28 Then Peter began to say vnto him, Behold we haue forsaken all, and haue followed thee,

19 Iesus answered, and said, Verily I say
unto you, there is no man that hath forsaken
house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mo-
ther, or wife or childre, or lands for my sake
and the Gospels,

20 But he shal receive an hundreth fold,
and at this present, houses, and brethren,
and sisters, and mothers, and children, and
lands with persecutions, and in the world to
come, eternall life.

31 But many *that are first* shalbe last, and
the last first,

32 And they were in the way going vp
to Ierusalem, and Iesus went before them, &
they were troubled, & as they followed they
were afrayed, and Iesus tooke the twelue a-
gain, & begā to tel them what things should
come vnto him,

33 Saying, behold, we go vp to Hierusalē,
and the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered vnto
the Priests, & to the Scribes, & they shal
condemne him to death, and shal deliuer him
to the Gentiles,

34 And they shal mocke him, & scourge
him, and spit vpon him, and kil him: but the
third day he shal rise againe.

35 Then Iames and Iohn the sonnes of
Zebedee came vnto him, saying, Master, we
desire that thou shouldest do for vs that
we may sit one at thy right hand, and the
other at thy left hand in thy glorie.

And hee sayd vnto them, What would
ye should do for you.

And they sayd to him, Grant vnto
vs that we may sit one at thy right hand,
and the other at thy left hand in thy glo-
rie.

But Iesus sayd vnto thē, Ye know not
what ye aske. Can ye drinke of the cup that I
haue followed to drinke of, and be baptized with
baptisme?

5. **time that I shal be baptized with?**

39 And they said vnto him, We can. Iesus said vnto them, Ye shall drinke in of the cup that I shal drink of, and be baptized with the baptisme wherewith I shal be baptized.

40 But to sit to my right hand, and at my left, is not mine to giue, but it shal be giuen them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard that, they began to disdaine at Iames and Iohn.

42 But Iesus called them vnto him, and sayd to the, Ye knowe that they which are princes amog the Gentiles, haue domination ouer them, & they that be great among the exercise authori. y ouer them.

43 But it shal not bee so among you: he whosoever wil bee great among you, shal be your seruant.

44 And whosoever wil be chiefe of you shal be the seruant of al.

45 For euen the Son of man came not to be serued, but to serue, & to giue his life for the ransom of many.

46 ¶ Then they came to Iericho: & as he went out of Iericho with his disciples, and a great mulcitude, Bartimeus the sonne of Tymeus, a blinde man, sat by the wayes begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Iesus of Nazaret, he began to cry, and to say, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

48 And many rebuked him, because he shoulde holde his peace: but hee cried more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

49 Then Iesus stood stil, and commaunded him to be called: and they called the blinde saying vnto him, Be of good comfort: as he calleth thee.

50 So hee threw away his cloke, & followed him.

And came to Iesus.

51 And Iesus answered, & sayd vnto him, What wilt thou that I do vnto thee? And the blinde sayde vnto him, Lorde, that I may receiue sight.

52 Then Iesus sayde vnto him, Goe thy way: thy faith hath saued thee, And by and by he receiued his sight, and followed Iesus in the way.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ entereth into Hierusalem riding on an ass. 13 The fruitlesse fig tree is cursed.

And when they came neere to Hierusalem, to Bethphage and Bethania, vnto the mount of Oliues, he sent forth two of his disciples,

2 And sayd vnto them, Goe your wayes: that towne that is ouer against you, and as soone as ye shall enter into it ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon neuer man sate: loose him and bring him.

3 And if any man say vnto you, Why do ye this? Say that the Lord hath need of him, & straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found a colt tied by the doore without, in a place, where two wayes met, and they loosed him. Then certeine of them that stood there, sayde vnto them, What do yee loosing the

And they sayd vnto them, as Iesus had commanded them: So they let them go.

5 And they brought the colt to Iesus, & layed their garments on him, and hee sate vpon him.

6 And many spread their garments in the way: other cut downe branches of the trees, & strawed them in the way.

7 And they that went before, and they which followed, cried, saying, Hosanna: blessed be he

he that commeth in the Name of the
10 Blessed be the kingdome that
cometh in the Name of the Lorde of our fa-
ther: Hosanna, O thou which art in the
heavens.

11 So Iesus entered into Hierusalem
into the Temple: and when hee had
looked about on al things, and now it was
euen, he went forth vnto Bethania with
his disciples.

12 And on the morow when they
came out from Bethania, he was hungry.

13 And seeing a fig tree a far off, that
had leaues, hee went to see if he might finde
thing thereon: but when hee came vnto
it, he found nothing but leaues: for the time
of figs was not yet.

14 Then Iesus answered, and sayde to
him, Neuer ma eate fruit of thee heereafter
while the worlde standeth: and his disciples
heard it.

15 ¶ And they came to Hierusalem, &
Iesus went into the Temple, and begunne to
censure them that solde and bought in the Tem-
ple, and ouerthrewe the tables of the mon-
ey changers, and the seats of them that sol-
d doves.

16 Neither would he suffer that any
should cary a vessell thorow the Temple.

17 And he taught, saying vnto them,
As it is written, Mine house shall bee called
house of prayer vnto al natiōs: but you
have made it a den of theeues.

18 And the Scribes & High Priest
heard it, and sought howe to destroy him: for
they feared him, because the whole multitude
was astonished at his doctrine.

19 But when euen was come, Iesus
went out of the cite.

20 ¶ And in the morning as they iour-
neyed

CHAP. XI.

her, they saw the fig tree dried vp
the rootes.

Then Peter remembred and said vnto
Mster, beholde, the fig tree which thou
is withered.

And Iesus answered, and sayde vnto
Haue the faith of God.

For verely I say vnto you, that who-
shal say vnto this mountaine, Be thou
away, & cast into the sea, & shall not
in his heart, but shall belecue y^e those
which he saith, shall come to passe,
euer he saith, shalbe done to him.

Therefore I say vnto you, whatsoever
ye when ye pray, belecue that ye shal
and it shalbe done vnto you.

But when ye shall stand and pray, for-
ye haue any thing against any man
your Father also which is in heauen may
you your trespasses.

For if you will not forgive, your Fa-
which is in heauen, will not pardon you
trespasses.

Then they came againe to Hierusa-
as hee walked in the Temple, there
him the hie Priests, and the Scribes,
Elders,

And sayd vnto him, By what autho-
thou these things? and who gane
authority, that thou shouldest doe
things?

Then Iesus answered and saide vnto
will also aske of you a certain thing,
treye mee, and I will tell you by
authority I do these things.

The baptisme of Iohn, was it from
of men? answered me.

And they thought with themselves,
we shal say, from heauen, how will
then did ye not beleue him?

S. MARKE.

32 But if wee saye of men, wee saye of men
people: for al men counted Iohn that
a Prophet indeed.

33 Then they answered, & said vnto
Iesus, We cannot tell. And Iesus answered
saide vnto them, Neither wil I tell you
what authority I do theſe things.

CHAP. XII.

1 Of the vineyard. 10. Christ the stone
of the Iewes. 13. Of tribute to be giuen to

ANd hee began to speake vnto them
parables, A certaine man plant
vineyard, and compassed it with an hedge,
dugged a pit for the winepresse, and
towre in it, and let it out to husbandmen
went into a strange countrey.

2 And at the time he sent to the
men a seruant, that he might receiue
husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 But they tooke him, and beate him,
sent him away empty.

4 And againe he sent vnto them
seruant, and at him they cast stones, &
his head, & set him away shamefully.

5 And againe hee sent another, and
they slew, and many other, beating some,
killing some.

6 Yet had hee one sonne, his deare
ued: him also he sent the last vnto them,
iag, They will reuerence my sonne.

7 But the husbandmen said among
sclues This is the heire: come, let vs
and the inheritance shalbe ours.

8 So they tooke him, and killed him,
cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shal then the Lorde of the
yard doe? He wil come & destroy the
bandmen, and giue the vineyard to o-

10 Haue ye not read so much as this
ture? The stone which the builders

CHAP. XII.

...inside the head of the corner.
 ... This was done of the Lorde, and it is
 ... in our eyes.

Then they went about to take him,
 ... they feared the people: for they percei-
 ... that he spake that parable against them:
 ... therefore they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ And they sent vnto him certaine of
 ... the Pharises, and of the Herodians that they
 ... might take him in his talke.

14 And when they came, they said vnto
 ... Master, we know that thou art true, &
 ... for no man: for thou considerest not
 ... person of men, but teachest the way of
 ... Is it lawful to giue tribute to
 ... or not?

Should wee giue it, or should we not
 ... it? But hee knew their hypocrisie, and
 ... Why tempt ye me? Bring me
 ... that I may see it.

16 So they brought it, and hee saide vnto
 ... Whose is this image and superscripti-
 ... and they said vnto him, Cesars.

17 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto
 ... Give to Cesar the things that are Ce-
 ... and to God, those that are Gods: and
 ... marueiled at him.

18 ¶ Then came the Sadduces vnto him
 ... say there is no resurrection) & they
 ... him, saying,

Master, Moses wrote vnto vs, If any
 ... brother die & leave his wife, & leave
 ... children, that his brother should take his
 ... and rayse vp seede vnto his brother.

There were seuen brethren, and the
 ... a wife, and when hee died, left no
 ...

Then the seconde tooke her, and hee
 ... neither did hee yet leave issue, and the
 ... likewise:

S. MARKE

22 So those seven had her, and left her: the last of all the wife died also.

23 In the resurrection then, when they shall rise againe, whose wife shall she be among them? for seven had her to wife.

24 Then Iesus answered and saide vnto them, Are ye not therefore deceiued, because ye know not \S Scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall arise againe from the dead, neither men marrie, nor women married, but are as the Angels which are in heaven.

26 And as touching the dead that they shall rise againe, haue ye not read in \S book of Moses, howe in the bush God spake vnto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob?

27 God is not the God of the dead, but \S God of the liuing. Ye are therefore greatly deceiued.

28 ¶ Then came one of the Scribes that had heard them disputing together, & perceiuing that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?

29 Iesus answered him, The first of all commandements is, Heare Israel, the Lord our God is the onely Lord.

30 Thou shalt therefore loue the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.

31 And the second is like, that is, Thou shalt loue thy neighbor as thy self. There is none other commandement greater than these.

32 Then that Scribe said vnto him, Master, thou hast saide the truth, that there is one God, and that there is none but he.

33 And to loue him with all the heart,

CHAP. XII.

with all the vnderstanding, and with all
the soule, and with all the strength, and to
thy neighbour as himselfe, is more then
all the burnt offrings and sacrifices.

Then when Iesus saw that he answered
discreetly, he said vnto him, Thou art not
farre from the kingdome of God. And no
man after that durst aske him any question.

35 ¶ And Iesus answered and saide tea-
gaine in the Temple, How saye the Scribes
or wiues of the Pharisees, that Christ is the Sonne of David?

36 For David himselfe said by the holy
Ghoſt, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou
at my right hand, till I make thine enemies
thy footstoole.

37 Then David himselfe calleth him
Lord: by what meanes is he then his Sonne?
And much people heard him gladly.

38 Moreover hee saide vnto them in his
teaching, Beware of the Scribes which loue
to haue long robes, and loue salutations in
the streets,

And the chief seats in the Synagogues,
and the first roomes at feasts.

Which deuoure widowes houses, euen
as a colour of long prayers. These shall
haue the greater damnation.

And as Iesus sate ouer against the trea-
surie, he beheld how the people cast money
into the tresurie, and many rich men cast in
also.

And there came a certaine poore wi-
dow, and shee threw in two mites, which
make a quadrin.

Then hee called vnto him his disci-
ples, and saide vnto them, Verily I saye vnto
you, this poore widow hath cast more in
then they which haue cast into the tresury.
For they all did cast in of their super-
fluous, but shee of her povertry did cast in all
that she had.

E. MARKE.

what she had, ~~and~~ all her living.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the destruction of Hierusalem. 9 Persecutions for the Gospel.

ANdas he went out of the Temple, of his disciples saide vnto him, Master, for what maner stones, and what maner buildings are here.

2 Then Iesus answered, & said vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone vpon another stone, that shall not be throwen downe.

3 And as he sate on the mount of Olives,ouer against the Temple. Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew asked him secretly.

4 Tell vs when shall these things be? what shall be the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Iesus answered them and began to say, Take heed least any man deceiue you.

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many.

7 Furthermore when yee shall heare warres, and rumours of warres, bee ye not troubled: for such things must needs be, but the end shall not be yet.

8 For nation shall arise against nation, kingdome against kingdome, and there shall be earthquakes in diuers quarters, and there shall be famine and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorowes.

9 But take yee heede to your selues: they shall deliuer you vnto the councill, to the Synagogues: ye shall be beaten, brought before the Rulers and Kings, for my sake, for a testimonie vnto them.

10 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations,

11 But when they leade you, and deliuer you vp, bee not careful before hand,

what ye shal say, but what is giue you
the same time, that speake: for it is not ye
that speake, but the holy Ghost.

12 Yea, and the brother shal deliver the
other to death, and the father the sonne,
and the children shall rise against their pa-
rents, and shal cause them to die.

13 And ye shalbe hated of al men for my
sake: but whosoever shal endure vnto
the end, he shalbe saved.

14 Moreover, when ye shall see the abo-
mation of desolation, (spoken by Daniel &
the prophet) let where it ought not (let him that
heareth consider it) then let them *that be in*
the fieldes flee into the mountaines,

15 And let him that is vpon the house,
come down into the house, neither enter
in, to fetch any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the fiede, not
go backe to take his garment.

17 Then woe shalbe to them that are w^o
le, and to them that giue sucke in those
dayes.

18 Praye therefore that your flight bee
in the Winter.

19 For in those dayes shalbe such tribu-
tion, as was not from the beginning of the
world which God created vnto this time,
neither shalbe.

20 And except that the Lord had shorte-
ned those daies, no flesh should be saved: but
for the elects sake, which he hath chosen, he
hath shortened those dayes.

21 For if any man say vnto you, Loe heere
is Christ, or, Loe he is there, beleue it not.

22 For false Christs shall rise, and false
prophets, & shal shew signes and wonders,
to deceiue if it were possible the very elect.

23 But take yee heede: beholde, I haue
told you all things before.

5. MARKE.

24 Moreover in those dayes shall be tribulation, the sunne shall waxe dark, the moone shall not giue her light,

25 And the starres of heauen shall fall, & powers which are in heauen, shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Sonne of man comming in the cloudes, with power and glory.

27 And he shall then send his Angels, who shall gather together his elect from the four windes, & from the vtmost part of the earth to the vtmost part of heauen.

28 Now learne a parable of the fig tree. When her bough is yet tender, & it bringeth forth leaues, ye know that sommer is neere.

29 So in like manner, when ye see these things come to passe, know that the kingdom of God is neere, *euē* at the doores.

30 Verily I say vnto you, this generation shall not passe, til all these things be done.

31 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away.

32 But of that daye and houre knoweth no man, no not the Angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne himselfe, but the Father.

33 Take heede, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is.

34 For the Sonne of man is as a man going into a strange countrey, and leaueth his house, and giueth authority to his seruants, and to euery man his worke, and commandeth the porter to watch.

35 Watch ye therefore (for ye know not when the master of the house will come, whether it be in the evening, or at midnight, at the cocke crowing, or in the dawning)

36 Least if he come suddenly, he shall finde you sleeping.

37 And those things that I say vnto you, I say vnto all men, Watch.

CHAP. XIII.

the Priests conspiracie against Christ. 3 The
women pouring oyle on Christs head.

And two dayes after followed the feast
of the Pascheouer, and of vntakened
the Sonne of man: and the hie Priests and Scribes sought
with how they might take him by craft, and put
him to death.

But they said, Not in the feast day, least
there be any tumult among the people.

And when hee was in Bethania in the
house of Simon the leper, as he sate at table,
there came a woman hauing a boxe of oynt-
ment of spikenard very colly, & she brake
the boxe and powred it on his head.

Therefore some disdained among them.
The kynge of Iudees, and said, To what end is this waile of
spicement?

For it might haue bin sold for more than
three hundred pence, and bene given vnto
the poore. And they murmured against her.

But Iesus saide, Let her alone: why
trouble ye her? shee hath wrought a good
worke on me.

For ye haue the poore wth you alwaies,
but when yee will, ye may doe them good;
but me ye shal not haue alwaies.

Shee hath done that shee could: shee came
forth with this oyle to anoynt my body to the bury-
ng.

Verily I say vnto you, wheresoener
this Gospel shal be preached throughout the
whole worlde, this also that shee hath done,
shall be spoken of in remembrance of her.

Then Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue
apostles, went away vnto the hie Priests to betraye
him vnto them.

And when they heard it, they were
grieved, & promised that they would giue him
thirty sicles: therefore he sought how hee might

S. MARKE

conveniently betray him.

12 ¶ Nowe the first daye of vnto
bread, whē they sacrificed the Passeeuer,
disciples said vnto him, where wilt thou
we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat
Passeeuer?

13 Then he sent forth two of his disci-
and said vnto them, Go ye into the citie,
there shal a man meet you, bearing a pich-
of water: follow him.

14 And whithersoever he goeth in, saye
ye to the good man of the house, The Ma-
ster sayeth, Where is the lodging, where
shall eat the Passeeuer with my disciples.

15 And he wil shew you an vpper cham-
ber which is large, trimmed and prepared
there make it ready for vs.

16 So his disciples went forth, and came
to the citie, & found as he had said vnto them,
and made readie the Passeeuer.

17 ¶ And as euen he came with ^{his} twelve

18 And as they sat at table, & did eat
Iesus said, Verely I say vnto you, that one
you shal betray me. which eateth with me.

19 Then they began to be sorowfull
to say to him one by one, Is it I? And an-
ther, Is it I?

20 And he answered and said vnto them
It is one of the twelue that dippeth with
in the platter.

21 Truly the sonne of man goeth his way
as it is written of him: but woe to that man
by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed:
had bene good for that man, if he had
bene borne.

22 And as they did eat, Iesus tooke
bread, and when he had given thanks,
brake it, and gaue it to them, and said, Take
eat, this is my body.

23 Also he tooke the cup, and when

CHAP. XIII.

Then thanks, gaue it to them : & they drinke of it.

And hee saide vnto them, This is my blood of the new Testament, which is shed for many.

Verily I say vnto you, I wil drinke no more of the fruit of the vine vntill that day, when I shall drink it new in the kingdome of God. And when they had sung a Psalm, they went out to the mount of Oliues.

Then Iesus saide vnto them. All yee shall be offended by mee this night : for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, & the sheepe shall be scattered.

But after that I am risen, I will go into Galilee before you.

And Peter said vnto him, Although all shall be offended at thee, yet would I not be so.

Then Iesus saide vnto him, Verily I say vnto thee, this day, *even* in the night before the cocke crow twise, thou shalt deny me thrise.

But he said more earnestly, If I should deny thee, I will not deny thee: likewise also saie they all.

After, they came into a place named Gethsemane: then hee said to his disciples, Tarry here till I haue prayed.

And hee tooke with him Peter and Iohn, and he began to be troubled with a great heauie esse,

And said vnto the, My soule is very heauy vnto the death: tarry heere & watch with me.

So hee went forward a litle, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, y^e houre might passe fro him.

And he saide, Abba, Father, all things are possible vnto thee: take away this cup from me: *nevertheless*, not that I will, but that thou

5. MARKE.

thou wilt, be done.

37 Then hee came and founde them sleeping, and sayd to Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one houre?

38 ¶ Watch yee, and pray, that yee come not into tentation: the spirite in deed is ready, but the flesh is weake.

39 And againe he went away, & prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And hee returned, and founde them sleeping again: for their eies were heavy: neither knew they what they shold answer him.

41 And he came the third time, and sayd vnto them, Sleepe henceforth, and take your rest: it is enough: the houre is come. Beholde, the Sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise vp, let vs goe: loe, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 And immediarly while he yet spake, came Iudas that was one of the twelue, with him a great multitude with sword and stanes from the hie Priestes, and Scribes, and Elders.

44 And hee that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoener I shall kisse, he it is: take him and leade him away safely.

45 And as soone as he was come, he went straightway to him, and sayd, Haile Master, and kissed him.

46 Then they layd their handes on him, and tooke him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew out a sword, and smote a seruant of the Priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto them, Ye be come out as against a thiefe with swords and stanes to take me.

49 I was daily with you teaching in the

CHAP. XIII.

ple, & ye tooke me not: but *this is done*
 the Scripture should be fulfilled.

50 Then they all forsooke him and fled.

51 And there followed him a certaine
 yong man, clothed in linnen vpon his bare
 feet, and the yong men caught him.

52 But hee left his linnen cloth, and fled
 & praye for them naked.

53 So they led Iesus away to the hie
 Priest, and to him came together all the hie
 Priests, and the Elders, and the Scribes.

54 And Peter followed him a farre off,
 and came into the hall of the hie Priest, and sate
 with the seruants, & warmed himself at y^e fire.

55 And the hie Priests and al the Coun-
 cill sought for witnesse against Iesus, to put
 him to death, but found none.

56 For many bare false witnesse against
 him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

57 Then there arose certaine, and bare
 false witnesse against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, I wil destroy this
 temple made with hands, and within three
 dayes I wil build another made wthout hands.

59 But their witnesses yet agreed not to-
 gether.

60 Then the high Priest stood vp amongst
 them, and asked Iesus, saying, Answerest
 thou nothing? what is the matter that these
 false witnesses witnesse against thee?

61 But he helde his peace, and answered
 nothing. Againe the hie Priest asked him, &
 saide vnto him, Art thou that Christ the Son
 of Dauid blessed?

62 And Iesus sayde, I am he, and ye shall
 see the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of
 the Father of God, and come in the cloudes
 of heauen.

63 Then the hie Priest rente his clothes
 & saide, What haue wee any more neede of
 witnesses?

S. MARKE.

witnesses?

64 Ye haue heard the blasphemie: what thinke ye? And they all condemned him to be worthy of death.

65 And some began to spit at him, & to couer his face and to beat him with his hands: to say vnto him, Prophesie. And the seruaunts smote him with their rods.

66 And as Peter was beneath in the hall, there came one of the maids of the high priest.

67 And when she sawe Peter warming himselfe, she looked on him, and sayd, Thou wast also with Iesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denyed it, saying, I know him not, neither wot I what thou sayest. Then he went out into the porch, & the cocke crowed.

69 Then a maid saw him againe, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 But he denied it againe: and anon after, they that stood by, sayd againe to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilee, and thy speech is like.

71 And hee began to curse and sweare, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speake.

72 Then the second time the cocke crowed, and Peter remembered the worde that Iesus had sayde vnto him, Before the cocke crowe thrise, thou shalt denie me thrise, & wept that with himselfe, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

1 Of the things that Christ suffered vnder Pilate, 11. Barabbas is preferred before Christ.

And anon in the dawning, Iesus was led a Council with the Elders, & the Scribes and the whole counsell, and bound, and led him away, and deliuered him to Pilate.

2 Then Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Iewes? And he answered, I saye

CHAP. XV.

vnto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the hie Priestes accused him of many things.

4 Wherefore Pilate asked him againe, saying. Answerest thou nothing? beholde, how many things they witnesse against thee

5 But Iesus answered no more at all, so that Pilate marueiled.

6 Nowe at the feast, Pilate did deliuer a prisoner vnto the, whomsoeuer they would desire.

7 Then there was one named Barabbas, which was bound with his fellowes, & had made insurrection, who in the insurrection had committed murther.

8 And the people cryed a loude, and began to desire that he would do as he had currey, This is done vnto them.

9 Then Pilate answered them, and saide, Will ye that I let loose vnto you the king of the Iewes?

10 For he knew that the hie Priests had deliuered him of enuie.

11 But the hie Priestes had mooued the people to desire that he would rather deliuer Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate answered and saide againe to them, What wil ye then that I do with whom ye call the king of the Iewes?

13 And they cryed againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate sayde vnto them, but what euill hath hee done? And they cryed more feruently. Crucifie him.

15 So Pilate willing to content the people, & to loose them Barabbas, and deliuered Iesus, when he had scourged him, that he might be crucified.

16 Then the souldiers, led him away into the hall, which is the common hall, and gathered together the whole band.

17 And

S. MARKE

17 And clad him with purple, and put a crowne of thornes, & put it about his head.

18 And began to salute him, saying, Hail, king of the Iewes.

19 And they smote him on y^e head with a reede, and spaued upon him, and bowed their knees, and did him reverence.

20 And whē they had mocked him, they tooke the purple off him, and put his own clothes on him, & led him out to crucifie him.

21 And they compelled one that passed by, called Simon of Cyrene (which came of the countrey, and was father of Alexander and Rufus) to beare his crosse.

22 And they brought him to a place named Golgotha, which is by interpretation, the place of dead mens skulls.

23 And they gaue him to drinke wine mingled with myrrhe but he receiued it not.

24 And whē they had crucified him, they parted his garments casting lots for them, what euery man should haue.

25 And it was the third houre, when they crucified him.

26 And the title of his cause was written aboue, THAT KING OF THE IEWES.

27 They crucified also with him two theeves, the one on the right hande, and the other on his left.

28 Thus the Scripture was fulfilled which sayeth, And he was counted among the wicked.

29 And they that went by, rayled on him wagging their heads, and saying, Hey, thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three daies,

30 Save thy selfe, and come downe from the crosse.

31 Likewise also euen the high Priest mocking, saide among themselves with the

S. MARKE.

confessour, which also looked for the
dom of God, came, and went in bold
Pilate, and asked the body of Iesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled, if he were
dy dead, and called vnto him the Centurion
and asked of him whether he had bene
while dead.

45 And when he knew the truth of
Centurion, he gaue the body to Ioseph:

46 Who bought a linnen cloth, and
him downe, and wrapped him in the lin
cloth, and laide him in a tombe y^e was
en out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto
doore of the sepulchre:

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary
his mother, beheld where he should be layed.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *Of Christs resurrection. 9 Hee appeared
Mary Magdalene and others.*

ANd when the Sabbath day was
Mary Magdalene, & Mary the
of Iames, & Salome bought sweete oyle
that they might come and anoint him.

2 Therefore early in the morning,
day of the weeke, they came vnto the
chre, when the sunne was now risen.

3 And they sayd one to another, Who
rol vs away the stone from the doore of
sepulchre?

4 And when they looked, they saw
the stone was rolled away (for it was a
great one)

5 So they went into the sepulchre, &
a yōg mā sitting at y^e right side, clothed
lōg white robe: & they were sore
frighted.

6 But he said vnto thē, Be not
yeer seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which
crucified: he is risen, he is not here: beholde
place where they put him.

7 But go your way, and tel his
disciples.

CHAP. XVI.

And Peter, that he will goe before you into Galilee; there shal ye see him, as hee said vnto you.

8 And they went out quickly, & fled from the sepulchre: for they trembled, and were amazed: neither sayde they any thing to any man: for they were afraid.

9 ¶ And when Iesus was risen again, early the first day of the weeke, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom hee had cast seven devils.

10 And she went and told them that had bin with him, which mourned & wept.

11 And when they heard that he was alive, and had appeared to her, they beleued not.

12 ¶ After that, he appeared vnto two of them in another forme, as they walked and went into the countrie.

13 And they went, and told it to the rest: neither beleued they them.

14 ¶ Finally, hee appeared vnto the eleue as they sate together, and reproched them for their vnbeliefe and hardnesse of heart, because they beleued not them which had seene him, being risen vp againe.

15 And he sayd vnto the, Goe ye into all the world, & preach the Gospel to euery nation.

16 He that shal beleeue & bee baptized, shall be saued: but hee that will not beleeue, shall be damnd.

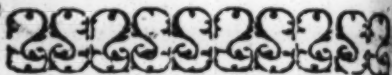
17 And these tokens shall followe them that beleeue, in my Name they shal cast out devils, and shal speake with new tongues,

18 And shal take away serpents, and if they shal drinke any deadly thing it shall hurt them: they shal lay their hands on the sick, & they shal recover.

19 So after the Lorde hath spoken vnto them

them, he was receined into heauen,
at the right hand of God.

20 And they went forth, & preached
every where, And the Lord wrought with
them, and confirmed the word with signes
and wonders. AMEN.



THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS
Christ according to Luke.

CHAP. I.

1 *Lukes Preface. 5 Zacharias and Elisabet*
15 *What an one Iohn should be.*

FOrasmuch as many haue takē in hand
to set forth the story of those things
wherof we are fully perswaded,

2 As they haue deliuered them
to vs. which from the beginning sawe them
their selues, & were ministers of the word.

3 It seemed good also to me (most
Theophilus) as soone as I had searched out
perfectly all things from the beginning, to write
unto thee thereof from point to point,

4 That thou mightest acknowledge the
certaintie of those things, wherof thou hast
bin instructed.

5 **I**N the time of Herod King of Iudea
there was a certaine Priest named
Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his
wife was the daughter of Aarō, & her name
Elisabet.

6 Both were iust before God, & walked
in all the commandements and ordinances
of the Lord, without reproofe.

7 And they had no child, because that
Elisabet was barren: and both were well

his lodge.

8 And it came to passe as he executed the Priests office before God, as his course came in order,

9 According to the custome of the Priests office, his lot was to burne incense, when he went into the Temple of the Lord.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were without in prayer, while y incense was burning.

11 Then appeared vnto him an Angell of the Lord standing at the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and feare fel vpon him.

13 But the Angell saide vnto him. Feare not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard, & thy wife Elisabeth shal beare thee a son, and thou shalt call his name Iohn.

14 And thou shalt haue ioy & gladnesse, and many shal reioyce at his birth.

15 For he shal be great in the sight of y Lord, and shal neither drinke wine, nor strong drinke: and he shal be filled with the holy Ghost, euen from his mothers wombe.

16 And many of the children of Israell shal he turne to their Lord God,

17 For he shal goe before him in y spirit and power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the iust me, to make ready people prepared for the Lord.

18 Then Zacharias said vnto the Angel, whereby shal I know this? for I am an olde man, and my wife is of a great age.

19 And the Angel answered, & said vnto him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God, and am sent to speake vnto thee, and shew thee these good tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumbe, and not

not be able to speake more than 3 dayes
things bee done, because thou believest
my words, which shall bee fulfilled in
season.

21 Now the people waited for Zacharias,
and marvelled that hee taried so long
the Temple.

22 And when hee came out, he could
speake vnto them: then they perceined
he had seene a vision in the Temple: for he
made signes vnto the and remained dumb.

23 And it came to passe, when the dayes
of his office were fulfilled, that hee departed
to his own house.

24 And after those dayes, his wife Elisabeth
conceiued, and hid her selfe five moneths
saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with mee,
in 3 dayes wherein he looked on me, to take
from me my rebuke among men.

26 ¶ And in the sixth moneth the Angel
Gabriell was sent from God vnto a citie
Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgine affianced to a man whose
name was Ioseph, of the house of David,
the virgins name was Marie:

28 And the Angel went in vnto her, and
saide, Hail thou that art freely beloved:
The Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among
women.

29 And when shee saw him, she was
bled at his saying, & thought what manner
of salutation that should be.

30 Then the Angel saide vnto her, Fear
not, Mary: for thou hast founde fauour
with God.

31 For loe, thou shalt conceiue in
wombe, and beare a sonne, and shalt call
his Name IESVS.

32 He shall bee great and shall be called

... of the most High, & the Lord God
... vnto him the throne of his father.

33 And he shal reigne ouer the house of
Jacob for euer, and of his kingdome shal bee
end.

34 Then said Mary vnto the Angel, How
shal this be, seeing I know not man?

35 And the Angel answered, & said vn-
to her, The holy Ghost shal come vpon thee
the power of the most High shal ouer-
flow thee: therefore also that holy thing
which shal be borne of thee, shal be called
the name of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elisabet, shee
shalso conceiued a son in her olde age: &
this is her sixt moneth, which was called
men.

37 For wth God shal nothing be vnpossible.

38 Then Mary saide, Beholde the seruant
of the Lord: bee it vnto me according to thy
word. So the Angel departed from her.

39 & And Mary arose in these dayes, and
went into y^e hill countrey, with haste to a ci-
ty of Iudah,

40 And entred into the house of Zache-
arias and saluted Elisabet.

41 And it came to passe, as Elisabet heard
the salutation of Mary, the babe sprang in
her belly, and Elisabet was filled with the
holy Ghost.

42 And she cryed with a loude voice, &
blessed art thou among women, because
the fruite of thy wombe is blessed.

43 And whence cometh this to mee, y^e
father of my Lord should come to me?

44 For see, as soone as the voyce of thy
salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe
leaped in my belly for ioy.

45 And blessed is shee that beleued: for

these things shalbe perfourmed, which
rescued her from the Lord.

46 Then Mary said, My soule magnified
the Lord,

47 And my spirit reioyceth in God my
Saviour.

48 For he hath looked on y^e poore degree
of his seruant: for behold, from hence forth
shall all ages call me blessed.

49 Because he that is mighty hath done
for me great things: and holy is his Name.

50 And his mercy is from generation to
generation on them that feare him.

51 He hath shewed strength with his
arme: he hath scattered the proud in the ima-
gination of their hearts.

52 He hath put downe the mightie from
their seates, and exalted them of low degree.

53 He hath filled the hungry with good
things, and sent away the rich emptye.

54 Hee hath vpholden Israel his seru-
ant, to be mindfull of his mercie.

55 (As he hath spoken to our fathers,
saying, to Abraham and his seede) for ever.

56 ¶ And Mary abode with her about
three moneths after, she returned to her owne
house.

57 ¶ Now Elisabets time was fulfilled,
that she should be deliuered, and she brought
forth a sonne.

58 And her neighbours and cousins heard
telle, how the Lorde had shewed his great
mercy vpon her, and they reioyced with
her.

59 And it was so, that on the eighth day
they came to circumcise the babe, and called
him Zacharias, after the name of his
father.

60 But his mother answered, & said,
No, but he shall be called Iohn.

And they said vnto her, There is none
thy kindred that is named with this name.

Then they made signes to his father,
how he would haue him called.

So he asked for writing tables, and
wrote, saying, His name is Iohn, and they
mimed al,

And his mounth was opened immedi-
ately, and his tongue, and he spake and prayfed
God.

Then feare came on al them that dwelt
vnto them and al these words were
boyfed abroad throughout al the hil countrey
with Iudea,

And all they \bar{y} heard them, laid them
in their hearts, saying, What maner child
is this be and the hand of the Lord was
with him.

Then his father Zacharias was filled
with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, say-
ing,

Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, be-
cause he hath visited and redcemed his peo-
ple.

And hath raised vp \bar{y} horne of salua-
tion vnto vs, in the house of his seruant Da-
uid.

As he spake by the mouth of his holy
prophets, which were since the world begā,

That he would send vs deliuerance frō
our enemies, and from the hands of al \bar{y} hate
enjoyced vs.

That he might shew mercy towards
our fathers, and remember his holy coue-
nant, and cō.

And the othe which he sware to our
father Abraham.

Which was, that he would graunt vn-
to vs being deliuered out of \bar{y} hands
of

of our enemies, should serue him with
fear.

75 Al the dayes of our life, in holinesse
righteousnesse before him,

76 And thou, babe, shalt be called ꝑ Pro-
phet of the most High: for thou shalt goe be-
fore the face of ꝑ Lord to prepare his way,

77 And to giue knowledge of saluation
vnto his people, by the remission of their sinnes,

78 Through the tender mercy of our God,
whereby the day spring from an high be-
visited vs,

79 To giue light to them that sit in dark-
nes, and in the shadow of death and to guide
our feete into the way of peace.

80 And the child grew, and waxed strong
in spirite, and was in the wilderness, til the
day came he should shew himselfe to Is-
rael.

CHAP. II.

1 *Augustus Cesar taxeth al the world.* 7 *Christ
is borne* 13 *The Angels song.*

And it came to passe in those dayes, that
there came a decree from Augustus Ce-
sar, that al the world should be taxed.

2 (This first taxing was made when Cy-
renius was gouernour of Syria)

3 Therefore went al to be taxed, every
man to his owne citie.

4 And Ieseph also went vp from Galilee
out of a citie called Nazaret, into Iudea, vnto
a citie of Dauid which is called Bethlehem
(because he was of the house and linage
of Dauid.)

5 To be taxed with Mary that was giuen
him to wife which was with child.

6 And so it was that while they were
there, the dayes were accomplished that she
should be deliuered.

7 And shee brought forth her first be-
gonne

and wrapped him in swaddling
clothes, and laide him in a cratch, because
there was no roome for them in the Inne.

8 ¶ And there was in the same countrey
shepherds, abiding in the field, and keeping
their flocke by night ouer their flocke,

9 And loe, the Angel of the Lorde came
vnto them, and the glory of the Lorde shone
about them, and they were sore afraid,

10 Then the Angel said vnto the, Be not
afraid: for behold I bring you glad tidings of
great ioy, that shalbe to al the people:

11 That is, that vnto you is borne this day
in the citie of Dauid a Sauour, which is Christ
the Lord.

12 And this shalbe a signe to you, Ye shall
see the babe swaddled, and laide in a cratch.

13 And straightway there was with the
Angel a multitude of beautely soldiers prai-
sing God, & saying,

14 Glory be to God in the hie *heavens*, &
peace in earth, and towards men good wil.

15 And it came to passe when the Angels
were gone away from them into heauē, that
the shepherds saide one to another. Let vs
goe shew vnto Beth-lehem, & see this thing
which is come to passe, which the Lorde hath
told vnto vs.

16 So they came wth haste, & found both
Joseph and Ioseph, and the babe laide in the
cratch.

17 And when they had seene it, they pu-
blished abroad the things, which was tolde
of that child.

18 And all that heard it, wondred at
the things which were told them of the shep-
herds.

19 But Mary kept al those sayings, and
reuered them in her heart.

20 And the shepherds returned glorify-
ing and praising God.

ing and praysing God, for al that they
heard and scene, as it was spoken vnto them.

21 ¶ And when the eight dayes were
complished, that they should circuncise the
child, his name was the called IESVS, which
was named of the Angel, before he was con-
ceined in the wombe.

22 And when the dayes of her purifi-
cation after the Law of Moses were accom-
plished, they brought him to Hierusalem, to
present him to the Lord.

23 (As it is written in the law of y^e Lord,
Euery man child y^e first openeth y^e wombe,
shalbe called holy to the Lord)

24 And to give an oblation, as it is com-
manded in the lawe of the Lorde, a payre of
turtle doves, or two yong pigeons,

25 And behold, there was a man in Hieru-
salem, whose name was Simeon: this man
was iust, and feared God, and waited for the
consolation of Israel, & the holy Ghost was
vpon him.

26 And it was declared to him from God
by the holy Ghost, that he should not see
death, before he had scene that Anointed of
the Lord.

27 And he came by the motion of the Spi-
rit into the Temple, and when the parents
brought in the babe Iesus, to doe for him af-
ter the custome of the Law,

28 Then he tooke him in his armes, and
prayed God, and sayd

29 Lord, now lettest thou thy seruant de-
part in peace, according to thy word.

30 For mine eyes haue scene thy salu-
tion,

31 Which thou hast prepared before the
face of al people,

32 A light to be reueiled to y^e Gentiles,
the glory of thy people Israel,

CHAP. II.

33 And Ioseph and his mother marcie.
for a those things, which were spoken tou-
ching him.

34 And Simon blessed them, and said vn-
to Mary his moth- r, Behold, this child is ap-
pointed for the fal and rising againe of many
in Israel, & for a signe which shal be spokē
against,

35 (Yea and a sword shal pearce through
thy soule) y^e the thoughts of many hearts
may be opened,

36 And there was a Prophetisse, one An-
na the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of
Asser, which was of a great age, after she had
been with an husband seven yeeres from her
virginitie.

37 And she was widow about foure score
four yeeres, and went not out of y^e Tem-
ple, but serued God with fastings & prayers
night and day.

38 She then comming at the same instant
vpon them, confessed likewise the Lord, and
told of him to al that looked for redem^{ti}on
in Hierusalem.

39 And when they had perfourmed all
things according to the Lawe of the Lord,
they returned into Galile to their own ci-
ty Nazareth.

40 And the child grew, and waxed strong
in Spirit, and was filled with wisdom, and
the grace of God was with him,

41 Now his parents went to Hierusalem
every yeere at the feast of the Pascheouer.

42 And when he was twelue yeere olde
they were come vp to Hierusalem, after
custome of the feast,

43 And had finished the dayes thereof, as
they returned, the child Iesus remained in
Hierusalem, and Ioseph knew not, nor his mo-
ther.

S. LVKE.

44 But they supposing that he had sold
in the company, went a dayes iourney, and
sought him among *their* kinfolkes, and
quaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they
turned backe to Hierusalem, and sought him.

46 And it came to passe three dayes
after, that they found him in the Temple, sit-
ting in the mids of the doctors, both hear-
ing them, and asking them questions,

47 And all that heard him, were aston-
ished at his vnderstanding and answers.

48 So when they saw him, they were
amazed, and his mother said vnto him, Son,
why hast thou thus dealt with vs? behold
thy father and I haue sought thee with ver-
beanie hearts.

49 Then saide he vnto them, How it is
ye sought mee know ye not that I must
about my fathers businesse?

50 But they vnderstood not the worde
he spake to them.

51 Then he went downe with them,
came to Nazareth, and was subiect to them,
and his mother kept al these sayings in
heart.

52 And Iesus increased in wisdom, and
 stature, and in fauour with God and men.

CHAP. III.

3 *Iohn exhorteth to repentance. 15 His-
tory of Christ. 20 Herode putteth him in
son,*

NOW in the fifteenth yeere of
of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate be-
gouvernour of Iudea, and Herod being
trarch of Galile, and his brother Philip
trarch of Iturea, and of the countrey of
thionitis & Lyfania & Tetrarch of Abila

2 (When Annas and Caiaphas were
his Priests) the word of God came vnto

CHAP. III.

had sent John the baptist of Zacharias in the wilderness.
 And he came into all the coasts about
 Jordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance
 for the remission of sinnes.

As it is written in the booke of the say-
 ing of Esaias the Prophet, which saith,
 the voice of him that cryeth in the wildet-
 nesse is, Prepare ye the way of the Lorde:
 make his paths streight.

Every valley shal be filled, and every
 mountaine and hill shal bee brought lowe, &
 crooked things shalbe made streight, & the
 high wayes shalbe made smooth.

And all flesh shal see the saluation of
 God.

Then saide he to the people that were
 come out to be baptized of him, O generati-
 on of vipers, who hath forewarned you to
 escape from the wrath to come?

I Bring forth therefore fruits worthy
 amendment of life, & begin not to say with
 our selues, We haue Abraham to our father
 for I say vnto you, that God is able of these
 stones to rayse vp children vnto Abraham.

Now also is the axe layd vnto y^e roote
 of the trees: therefore euery tree which bring-
 eth not forth good fruite, shalbe hewen
 downe, and cast into the fire.

Then the people asked him, saying,
 What shal we doe then?

And he answered; and saide vnto the,
 that hath two coates, let him part with
 his first: and he that hath meate,
 let him doe likewise.

Then came there Publicanes also to be
 baptized, and sayd vnto him, Master, What
 doe we doe?

And he said vnto them, Require
 of them that which is appointed vnto
 you.

14 The souldiers likewise demanded him, saying, And what shal we doe? And he said vnto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely and be content with your wages.

15 As the people wayted, & al menured in their hearts of Iohn, if he were the Christ,

16 Iohn answered, and saide to them, In deede I baptize you with water, but stronger then I, cometh, whose shoelatchet I am not worthy to vnloose: he will baptize you with the holy Ghost & with fire.

17 Whose fanne is in his hand, & he will make cleane his floore, and will gather wheate into his garner, but the chaffe he will burne vp with fire that neuer shal bee quenched.

18 Thus then exhorting with many other things, he preached vnto the people.

19 But whē Herod the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, for Herodias his brother in lawes wife, and for all the euils which he had done,

20 Hee added yet this aboue all, that he shut vp Iohn in prison.

21 Now it came to passe, as al the people were baptized, & that Iesus was baptized, he did pray, that the heauen was opened:

22 And the holy Ghost came downe bodily shapely like a doue vpon him, and there was a voyce from heauen, saying, Thou art my beloued Sonne: in thee I am wel pleased.

23 ¶ And Iesus himselfe began to be about thirty yeere of age, being as was supposed, the sonne of Ioseph, which was the sonne of Eli,

24 The sonne of Matthat, the sonne of Levi, the sonne of Melchi, the sonne of Iapheth, the sonne of Ioseph.

The sonne of Mattathias, the sonne of
the sonne of Naam, the sonne of Elli,
the sonne of Nagge.

The sonne of Maath, the sonne of Mat-
thias, the sonne of Semei, the son of Ioseph,
the sonne of Iuda,

The sonne of Ioanna, the sonne of Rhesa,
the sonne of Zorobabel, the son of Salathiel,
the sonne of Neri,

The sonne of Melchi, the sonne of Ad-
ram, the sonne of Cosam, the sonne of Elmodā,
the sonne of Er.

The sonne of Iose, the sonne of Elie-
zer, the sonne of Iorim, the sonne of Matthe-
as, the sonne of Leui,

The sonne of Simeō, the sonne of Iuda,
the sonne of Ioseph, the sonne of Ionā, the son
of Iosim,

The sonne of Melea, the sonne of Mai-
as, the sonne of Mattatha, the sonne of Na-
than, the sonne of Dauid,

The sonne of Iesie, the sonne of Obed,
the sonne of Booz, the sonne of Salomon, the
sonne of Naasson.

The sonne of Aminadab, the sonne of
the sonne of Esrom, the sonne of Pha-
lath, the sonne of Iuda,

The sonne of Iacob, the sonne of Isaac,
the sonne of Abraham, the sonne of Thara, the
sonne of Nachor,

The sonne of Saruch, the sonne of Ra-
mah, the sonne of Phalec, the sonne of Eber,
the sonne of Sala,

The sonne of Cainan, the sonne of Ar-
phaxad, the sonne of Sem, the sonne of Noe, the
sonne of Lamech,

The sonne of Mathusala, the sonne of
the sonne of Jared, the sonne of Male-
chizedek, the sonne of Cainan,

The sonne of Enos, the sonne of Set.
L 2

the sonne of Adam, the sonne of God.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Christs temptation and fasting, 16 He cometh in Nazareth to the great admiration of all,*

AND Iesus full of the holy Ghost, came out of Iordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness,

2 And was there fortie dayes tempted of the devil, and in those dayes he did eat nothing: but when they were ended, hee afterward was hungry.

3 Then the devil sayde vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, commaunde this stone that it be made bread.

4 But Iesus answered him, saying, It is writtē, That man shal not live by bread only, but by every word of God.

5 Then the devil tooke him vp into a high mountaine, & shewed him all the kingdoms of this world, in the twinkling of an eye.

6 And the devil sayde vnto him, All this power wil I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is deliuered to me, whomsoever I wil, I give it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, I will be al thine.

8 But Iesus answered him, & said, Hee saith from me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lorde thy God, and him only thou shalt serue.

9 Then he brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the Temple, & sayde vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe down hence.

10 For it is written, That he wil charge his Angels charge ouer thee to keepe thee.

11 And with their handes they shall beare thee vp, least at any time thou shouldest strike thy foote against a stone.

CHAP. III.

12 And Iesus answered, and saide vnto
16 Him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord
thy God.

13 And when the deuill had ended al the
temptation, hee departed from him for a litle
led by the Spirit.

14 ¶ And Iesus returned by the power of
the Spirit into Galile: and there went a fame
of him thorowout al the region round about.

15 For he taught in their Synagogues, &
was honoured of al men.

16 And he came to Nazareth where hee
had bene brought vp, & (as his custome was)
went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day,
saying, and stood vp to reade.

17 And there was deliuered vnto him the
booke of the Prophet Esaias: and when hee
had opened the booke, hee founde the place,
where it was written,

18 The Spirit of the Lord is vpon me, be-
cause hee hath anointed mee that I shoulde
preach the Gospel to the poore: he hath sent
me, that I should heale the broken hearted,
that I should preach deliuerance to the cap-
tives, and recouering of sight to the blind, &
that I should set at libertie the which are bruised:

19 And that I should preach the accep-
tation of the yere of the Lord.

20 And hee closed the booke, and gaue it
to the minister, and sate downe: and
all eyes of all that were in the Synagogue,
were fastened on him.

21 Then hee beganne to say vnto them,
This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your
hearing.

22 And all bare him witnesse, and won-
dered at the gracious wordes, which proce-
ded out of his mouth, & said, Is not this Io-
hannis sonne?

23 Then he said vnto them, Ye wil surely
L 2 say

say vnto me this prouerb, Physicion heale thy selfe: whatsoeuer wee haue heard in Capernanm, doe it here likewise in thine owne country.

24 And he said, Verily I say vnto you, No Prophet is accepted in his owne country.

25 But I tel you of a trueth, many widows were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when heauen was shut three yeres and sixe moneths, when great famine was throughout the land,

26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue into Sarepta, a citie of Sidon, vnto a certaine widow.

27 Also many lepers were in Israel, in the time of Eliseus the Prophet: yet none of them was made cleane sauing Naama the Syrian.

28 Then all ~~that were~~ in the Synagogue when they heard it, were filled with wrath.

29 And rose vp, and thrust him out of the citie, and led him vnto the edge of the hill whereon their citie was built, to cast him downe headlong:

30 But he passed through the middes of them, and went his way.

31 ¶ And came downe into Capernanm, a citie of Galile, and there taught them on the Sabbath daies,

32 And they were astonied at his doctrine, for his word was with authoritie.

33 And in the Synagogue there was one which had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, which cryed with a loude voyce.

34 Saying, Oh, what haue wee to doe thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth; art thou come to destroy vs? I know who thou art, even the holy one of God.

35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. Then the deuill throwing him in the middes of them, came

CHAP. V.

fiction he heard him and hurt him nothing at all. So feare came on them all, & they spake among themselves, saying, What thing is this? with authoritie and power he commaundeth the foule spirits, and they come out. And the fame of him spread abroad throughout all the places of y^e countrey round about.

37 And he rose v^e, and came out of the Synagogue, and entred into Simons house. And Simons vviues mother yvas taken vwith great feuer, and they required him for

39 Then he stood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer, and it left her, & immediately she rose, and ministred vnto them.

40 Now at the sunne setting, all they that had sick folkes of diuers diseases, brought the^m to him, and he laid his hands on euery one of them, and healed them.

41 And deuils also came out of many, crying and saying, Thou art that Christ y^e Son of God: but he rebuked them, and suffered them not to say they knew him to be that Christ.

42 And vwhen it vvas day, he departed, and went forth into a desert place, and the people sought him, and came to him, and desired him that he shoulde not depart from them.

43 But he said vnto them, Surely I must preach the kingdome of God to other cities: for therefore am I sent.

44 And he preached in the Synagogues of Galilee.

CHAP. V.

Christ teacheth out of the ship. 6 Of y^e draughte of fish. 12 The leper.

He it came to passe, as the people pressed vpon him to heare y^e vword of, God,

L 3 that

that hee stood by the lake of Genezareth.

2 And saw two ships stand by the lakeside, but the fishermen were gone out of the ships, and were washing their nets.

3 And he entred into one of the ships, which was Simons, and required him that he would thrust off a litle from the land: he sat downe, and taught the people out of the ship.

4 ¶ Now when he had left speaking, he said vnto Simon, Launch out in the deepe, & let downe your nets to make a draught.

5 Then Simon answered, & said vnto his Master, we haue trauailed sore all night, & haue taken nothing: neuertheles at thy word I wil let downe the net.

6 And when they had so done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes, so that their net brake.

7 And they beckened to their partners which were in the other ship, & they shoulde come and helpe them, who came then, & filled both the ships, that they did sinke.

8 Now when Simon Peter saw it, he fell downe at Iesus knees, saying, Lord, goe from me: for I am a sinfull man.

9 For he was vtterly astonied, and al that were wth him, for y^e draught of fishes which they tooke.

10 And so was also James and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions with Simon. Then Iesus said vnto Simon, Feare not: from hence forth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsooke all, and followed him.

12 ¶ Now it came to passe, as hee was in a certaine citie, behold, there was a man

12 And when he saw Iesus, he fel on
his face, and besought him, saying, I ord, if
thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

13 So he stretched forth his hand, and
touched him, saying I wil, be thou cleane.
And immediately the leprosie departed from
him.

14 And he commanded him $\frac{1}{2}$ he should
show himself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing,
as Moses hath commanded for a witnesse vnto
them.

15 But so much more went there a faine
crowd of him, & great multitudes came to-
gether to heare, and to be healed of him of
their infirmities.

16 But he kept himselfe apart in $\frac{1}{2}$ wil-
loness, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe, on a certain day,
that he was teaching, that the Pharises and
scribes of the Law sat by, which were
come out of euery towne of Galilee, & Iudea,
Hierusalem, and the poyer of the Lord
was in him to heale them.

18 Then behold, men brought a man ly-
ing in a bed, which was taken with a palsey
they sought meanes to bring him in, and
lay him before him.

19 And when they could not finde by
what way they might bring him in, because
of the presse, they wet vpon the house, & let
him downe through the tiling, bed and al,
into the mids before Iesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, he said
vnto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiven thee.

21 Then the scribes and the Pharises be-
gan to reason, saying, Who is this that spea-
keth blasphemies? who can forgie sins, but
God onely?

22 But when Iesus perceined their rea-
soning,

soning, he answered, and said vnto the,
season yee in your hearts?

23 Whether is it easier to say, Thy
are forgiven thee, or to say, Rise & walke

24 But y^e ye may know that the Son
man hath authoritie to forgive sins on earth
(he said vnto the sicke of the palsey) I say
thee, Arise, take vp thy bed, & goe to thine
house.

25 And immediately he rose vp before
and tooke vp *his bed* whereon he lay, and
departed to his owne house, praying God.

26 And they were al amased, & praying
God, & were filled wth feare, saying, Doubt-
lesse, we haue seene strange things to day.

27 ¶ And after that he went forth, and
sawe a Publicane named Levi, sitting at the
receite of custome, & said vnto him, Follow
me.

28 And he left al, rose vp, and followed
him.

29 Then Levi made him a great feast in his
owne house, where there was a great com-
pany of Publicanes, and of other that sat
at table with them.

30 But they that were Scribes & Pharisees
among them, murmured against his disciples,
saying, Why eate ye and drinke ye with Pu-
blicanes and sinners?

31 Then Iesus answered, & said vnto the,
They that are whole neede not the Physici-
on, but they that are sicke.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but sin-
ners to repentance.

33 ¶ Thē they said vnto him, Why doe
thy disciples of Iohn fast often and pray, and the
disciples of y^e Pharisees also, but thine eate &
drinke:

34 And he said vnto them, Can ye make
the children of the wedding chamber to fast

CHAP.V.

15 But the daies will come, even when
the bridegrome shalbe taken away from the
& walke then shal they fast in those dayes.
16 Againe hee spake also vnto them a pa-
No man putteth a piece of a new garnet
into an old vesture: for then the new renteth
the piece taken out of the new, agreeth
not with the olde.

17 Also no man powreth new wine into
olde vessels: for the new wine wil breake
the vessels, and it wil run out, and the vessels
shall perish,

18 But new wine must be powred into
new vessels so both are preserved.

19 Also no man y^e drinkech old wine
straightway desireth new: for he saith, the
olde is more profitable.

CHAP.VI.

The disciples pull the eares of corne on the
Sabbath. 6 Of him that had a withered hand.

And it came to passe on a second solene
Sabbath, that he went through y^e corne
fields, and his disciples plucked the eares of
corne, and did ear, and rub them in their
hands.

2 And certaine of the Pharises said vnto
him, Why doe ye that which is not lawfull
to doe on the Sabbath dayes?

3 The Iesus answered them, & said, Have
ye not read this, that Dauid did when he
was an hungred, and they which
were with him,

4 How he went into the house of God, &
ate the shew bread, and gaue also
to them which were with him which was
lawfull to eat, but for the Priests
only?

5 And hee saide vnto them, The Sonne of
man Lord also of the Sabbath day.

6 It came, to passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue, and taught, and there was a man, whose right hand was dried vp.

7 And the Scribes and Pharises watched him, whether hee woulde heale on the Sabbath day, that they might finde an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to ~~the~~ man which had the withered hand, Arise, & stand vp in the mids, And he arose, & stood vp.

9 Then sayd Iesus vnto them, I wil aske you a question, Whether is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good, or to doe euill to saue life, or to destroy.

10 And he beheld them all in compasse, and said vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he did so and his hand was restored againe as whole as the other.

11 Then they were filled full of madnes, & communed one with another, what they might do to Iesus.

12 ¶ And it came to passe in those dayes that hee went into a mountaine to pray, & spent the night in prayer to God.

13 And when it was day, hee called his disciples, & of them hee chuse twelue, which also be called Apostles.

14 (Simon whom he named also Peter, & Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip, and Bartlemewe

15 Matthew and Thomas; James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon called Zealous.

16 Judas James brother, & Judas Iscariot which also was the traitour.

17 Then hee came downe with them, & stood in a plaine place, with the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of al Iudea, and Ierusalem, and from

CHAP. VI

Sea coast of Tyrus and Sidon, which came to hear him, & to bee healed of their diseases.

18 And they that were vexed with foule spirits, and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, & healed them all,

20 ¶ And he lifted vp his eyes: vpon his disciples, & said blessed be ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God.

21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be satisfied, Blessed are ye that weepe now: for yee shall laugh.

22 Blessed are ye when men hate you, and when they separate you, and reuile you, and your name as euill, for the Sonne of mans sake.

23 Reioyce ye in that day and be glad: for hold, your reward is great in heauen: for so did their fathers do to y^e Prophets.

24 But woe be to you that are rich: for yee haue receiued your consolation.

25 Woe be to you that are full: for ye shall hunger, Woe be to you that now laugh: for ye shall waile and weepe.

26 Wo be to you when al men speake well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

27 ¶ But I say vnto you which heare, Doe well to thē which hate you.

28 Bleise them that curse you, and pray for them which hurt you,

29 And vnto him that smiteth thee on y^e cheek, offer also the other: and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not to take the same also.

30 Give to euery man that asketh of thee and

and of him that taketh away the thing
see thine, aske them not againe,

31 And as ye would that men should
do to you, so doe ye to them likewise.

32 For if yee loue them which loue you,
what thanke shal ye haue? for euen the sin-
ners loue those that loue them.

33 And if yee doe good for them which
doe good for you, what thank shal ye haue
for euen the sinners doe the same.

34 And if ye lend to *them* of whom ye
hope to receiue, what thanke shal yee haue
for euen the sinners lend to sinners, to receiue
the like.

35 Wherefore loue ye your enemies, & do
good, & lend, looking for nothing againe, and
your reward shal be great, & yee shal be the
children of the most High: for he is kind
to the vnkinde, and to the euil.

36 Be ye therefore merciful, as your Fa-
ther also is merciful.

37 ¶ Iudge not, and ye shall not be iud-
ged: condemne not, and ye shall not be con-
demned, forgine, and ye shalbe forgiven.

38 Giue, and it shalbe giuen vnto you
good measure, pressed down, shaken toge-
ther & running ouer shal me giue into your
bosome: for with what measure ye mete,
the same shal men mete to you againe.

39 And hee spake a parable vnto them,
Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not
both fall into the ditch?

40 The disciple is not above his master:
but whosoener will be a perfect disciple,
shalbe as his master.

41 ¶ And why seest thou a mote in thy
brothers eye, and considerest not the beame
that is in thine owne eye?

42 Either howe canst thou say to thy
brother, Brother, let me pul out the mote that

CHAP. VII.

43. *Thou sayest, whē thou seest not the beame
that is in thine owne eye? Hypocrite,
shouldst thou first take out the beame out of thine owne eye first
and then shalt thou see perfectly to pul out
the mote that is in thy brothers eye,
44. For if it is not a good tree y bringeth
forth euil fruit neither an euill tree, y brin-
geth forth good fruit,*

44. *For every tree is knowen by his own
fruite: for neither of thornes gather mē figs,
nor of bushes gather they grapes.*

45. *A good man out of the good treasure
his heart bringeth forth good, and an euil
man out of the euil treasure of his hart brin-
geth forth euil: for of the abundance of the
heart his mouth speaketh.*

46. *But why cal ye me Lord, Lord, and
do not the things that I speake?*

47. *Whoso euer cometh to me, & heareth
my wordes, and doeth the same, I wil shew
vnto whom he is like:*

48. *He is like a mā which built an house,
and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a
rock: and when the waters arose, the flood
driue vpon that house, & coulde not shake it:
for it was grounded vpon a rocke.*

49. *But hee that heareth and doeth not, is
like a man that built an house vpon the earth
without foundation, against which the flood
driue, and it fel by and by: and the fall of
that house was great.*

CHAP. VII.

*Of the Centurions seruant. 9 The Centurion
saith. 11 The widowes son rayed from death
at Nain.*

When hee had ended all his sayings in the
audience of y people, he entred into Ca-
naum.

And a certaine Centurions seruāt was sick
and ready to die, which was deare vnto him.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he came
to him the Elders of the Iewes, beseeching
him that hee would come, and heale his
son,

4 So they came to Iesus, & besought him
instantly saying that he was worthy that
he should do this for him:

5 For he loueth, *said they*, our nation,
he hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Iesus went with them: but when
he was nowe not farre from the house,
the Centurion sent friends to him, saying
unto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am
worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my
roofe:

7 Wherefore I thought not my selfe
worthy to come vnto thee: but say the word,
and my seruant shalbe whole:

8 For I likewise am a man set vnder
authoritie, & haue vnder me souldiers, & I
say vnto one, Goe, and he goeth, and to another
Come, and he cometh, and to my seruant,
Doe this, and he doeth it.

9 When Iesus heard these things, he mar-
uelled at him, and turned him, and saide to
the people that followed him, I say vnto you,
I haue not founde so great faith, no not in
Israel.

10 And when they that were sent, turned
backe to the house, they found the seruant
was sick, whole.

11 And it came to passe the day after,
he went into a citie called Nain, and many
of his disciples went with him, and a great
multitude.

12 Now when he came neere to the gate
of the city, behold, there was a dead ma
ried out, who was the onely begotten son
of his mother, which was a widow, & many
people of the cite was with her.

And when the Lord saw her, hee had compassion on her, and said vnto her, Weepe no more.

14 And hee went and touched the coffin (and they that bare him, stood still) and hee said, Young man, I say vnto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead, satte vp, and be-
gan to speake, and he deliuered him to his
mother.

16 The there came a feare on them al &
they glorified God, saying, A great Prophet
is risen among vs, and God hath visited his
people.

17 And this rumour of him went forth
throughout al Iudea, & throughout al the re-
gion round about.

18 And the disciples of Iohn shewed him
all these things.

19 So Iohn called vnto him two certaine
men of his disciples, and sent them to Iesus,
saying, Art thou he that should come, or shal
we wait for another?

20 And when the men were come vnto
him, they said, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vn-
to thee, saying, Art thou he y should come,
or shal we wait for another?

21 And at that time hee cured many of
their sicknesses, & plagues, and of euil spirits,
and vnto many blind me he gaue sight freely.

22 And Iesus answered, & sayd vnto the.
See your wayes & shew Iohn, what things
ye haue scene and heard: that the blind see,
that ye halt go, the lepers are cleansed, the deafe
are, the dead are raised, and the poore re-
ceiue the Gospel.

23 And blessed is he, that shall not be of-
fended in me.

24 And when the messengers of Iohn
were departed, he began to speake vnto the
people of Iohn, What wet ye out into y wil-
dernes

comes to see? A reed shaken with the

25 But what went yee out to see? A
clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they who
are gorgeously apparellled, and live delicat-
ly, are in kings courts.

26 But what went ye forth to see? A
phet? yea I say to you, and greater than
Prophet,

27 This is he of whom it is written. I
holde, I send my messenger before thy face,
which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say vnto you, there is no greater
Prophet then Iohn, among them that are be-
gotten of women, neuertheless, hee that is
the least in the kingdom of God, is greater
then hee.

29 Then all the people that heard, and the
Publicanes iustified God, being baptized with
the baptisme of Iohn.

30 But the Pharises & the expounders of
the Law despised y^e counsel of God against
themselves, and were not baptized of him.

31 And the Lord said, Wherunto shall
I liken the men of this generation: and what
thing are they like vnto?

32 They are like vnto litle children sit-
ting in the market place, and crying one to
another, & saying. Wee haue piped vnto you,
and ye haue not daunced, wee haue mourned
to you, and ye haue not wept.

33 For Iohn Baptist came, neither eating
bread, nor drinking wine: & ye say, He hath
the deuil.

34 The Sonne of man is come, & eateth
& drinketh: & ye say, Behold, a man who
is a glutton, & a drinker of wine, a friend of
Publicanes and sinners:

35 But wisdom is iustified of all her chil-
dren.

36 And one of y^e Pharises desired that

And hee went into the Pharisees house, and sat downe at table.

17 And behold, a woman in that city which is a sinner, when she knew that Iesus sat at table in the Pharisees house, she brought a pound of ointment.

18 And she stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with teares, and did wipe them with the haire of her head, and kissed his feet, and anoynted them with the ointment.

19 Nowe when the Pharise which had bid him, sawe it he spake within himselfe, saying, If this man were a Prophet, hee would haue knowne who, and what maner of woman this is, which toucheth him: for he is a sinner.

20 And Iesus answered, & said vnto him, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee. And he said, Master, say on.

21 There was a certain lender which had two debtors: the one ought five hundred pounds, and the other fifty.

22 When they had nothing to pay, he forgave them both: Which of them therefore, will loue him most?

23 Simon answered, and saide, I suppose she, to whom hee forgave most. And hee said vnto him, Thou hast truely iudged.

24 Then he turned to the woman, & said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, and thou gauest me no water to my feet: but shee hath washed my feet with teares, and wiped them with the haire of her head.

25 Thou gauest me no kisse: but shee, since the time I came in hath not ceased to kisse my feet.

26 Mine head with oyle thou didst not anoynt.

anoynt: but shee hath anoynted my
oyntment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, many
are forgien her: for shee loved much. For
a litle is forgiven, he doeth loue a litle.

48 And he said vnto her, Thy sins are
giuen thee.

49 And they that sate at table with
he began to say within themselves: Who
that euen forgiveth sins?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy
hath saued thee: goe in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

2 *Women that minister vnto Christ of
substance.* 4 *The Parable of the sower.*

AND it came to passe afterwarde,
himselfe went through euery citie
towne, preaching and publishing the
dom of God and the twelve were with him.

2 And certain womē which were
of euil spirits & infirmities, as Mary
was called Magdalene, out of whom
seuen devils,

3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza
Steward, and Susanna, and many other
ministred vnto him of their substance.

4 Now when much people were gathered
together, and were come vnto him out
cities, he spake by a parable.

5 A sower went out to sow his seed,
as hee sowed, some fel by the way side,
was troden vnder feet, & the foules of
uen deuoured it vp.

6 And some fel on the stones, and when
was sprung vp, it withered away because
licked moistnes.

7 And some fell among thornes, and
thornes sprung vp with it, and choked it.

8 And some fell on good grounde,

CHAP.VIII.

...up and bare fruite, an hundreth folde.
...as he saide theser things he cried, He that
...to beare, let him heare.

9 Then his disciples asked him, deman-
... what parable that was.

10 And he sayde, Vnto you it is giuen to
... the secrets of the kingdome of God,
... to other in parables, that when they see,
... they should not see, & whē they heare, they
... they should not vnderstand.

11 The parable is this, The seede is the
... of God.

12 And they that are beside the way, are
... that heare: afterward cometh the deuill,
... away the word out of their harts,
... they should beleue, and be saued.

13 But they y are on the stoness, are they
... when they haue heard, receiue the
... with ioy: but they haue no rootes: which
... while beleue, but in the time of tenta-
... away.

14 And that which fell amongst thornes, are
... which haue heard, and after their de-
... are choked with cares and with ri-
... other things, and voluptuous liuing, & bring forth no
... ffructe.

15 But that which fell in good ground, are
... which with an honest and good heart
... the word, and keepe it, and bring forth
... his seed, with patience.

16 ¶ Now whē he hath lighted a candle
... it vnder a vessel, neither putteth it
... the bed, but setteth it on a candlestick,
... they that enter in, may see the light.

17 For nothing is secret, that shal not be
... neither any thing hid that shal not
... and come to light.

18 Take heede therefore how ye heare:
... whofoeuer hath, to him shal be giuen: &
... hath not, from him shal bee ta-

S. LVRE.

ken enen that which it seemeth that
hath.

19 ¶ Then came to him his mother &
brethren & could not come neere to him
the prease.

20 And it was told him by certain, who
sayd, Thy mother & thy brethren stand
out, and would see thee,

21 But he answered, and sayd vnto them
My mother and my brethren are these who
heare the word of God and doe it,

22 ¶ And it came to passe on a certayn
day, that he went into a ship with his
ples, & he said vnto them. Let vs go
to the other side of the lake. And they
ched forth.

23 And as they sailed, he fell asleepe,
there came downe a storme of wind on
lake, & they were filled with water, & were
in isopardy.

24 Then they went to him and awaked
him, saying, Master, Master we perishe. And
arose, & rebuked the winde, & the water
water, and they ceased, and it was calme.

25 And he said vnto them, Where is your
faith? and they feared and wondred at
themselves, saying, Who is this that cometh
deth both the windes & water & they
him?

26 ¶ So they sailed vnto the region of
Gadarens, which is ouer against Galile.

27 And as hee wet out to land, there met
him a certain man out of the citie, which
devils long time, and he ware no garment
neither abode in an house, but in the graue.

28 And when he saw Iesus, he cried
and fell downe before him, and with a loud
voice sayd, What haue I to do with thee, Iesus
the Sonne of God the most High? what great
seerch thee torment me not.

For he commanded the foule spirits
out of the man: (for oft times he had
him: therefore he was bound with
chains, and kept in fetters, but he brake the
chains, and was caried of the deuil into wil-
dernes)

10 Then Iesus asked him, saying, What is
thy name? and he said. Legion, because many
deuils were entred into him.

11 And they besought him, ^{that} he would not
command them to goe out into the deepe.

12 And there was therby an heard of ma-
ny swine, feeding on an hill: and the deuils
bought him, that he would suffer them to
enter into them. So he suffered them.

13 Then went the deuils out of the man,
and entred into the swine: and the heard was
driven with violence from a steepe downe
into the lake, and was choked.

14 When the herdemen saw vwhat vvas
done, they fled: & vwhen they vvere departed
they told it in the citie and in the countrey.

15 Then they came out to see vwhat vvas
done, & came, to Iesus, and found the mā, our
of whom, the deuils were departed, sitting
at the feet of Iesus, clothed, and in his right
mind and they vvere a frayd.

16. They also vvhich sawv it, told the by
what means he that vvas possessed vwith the
deuils, vvas healed.

17 Then the vvhole multitude of the coun-
try about the Gardarens, besought him, that
he vould depart from them: for they vvere
taken vwith a great feare: and he vvent into
the ship and returned.

18 Then the man, our of vvhom ^{the} deuils
were departed, besought him that he might
goe with him, but Iesus let him away, saying.

19 Returne into thine own house, & shew
what great things God hath done to thee

So he went his way, and preached throughout all the citie, what great things Iesus had done vnto him.

40 ¶ And it came to passe, when Iesus was come again, & the people receiued him: for they all waited for him.

41 ¶ And behold there came a mā named Jairus, and he was the ruler of the Synagogue, who fel down at Iesus feet, & besought him that he would come into his house,

42 For he had but a daughter only, about twelue yeres of age, and she lay a dying. (As he went, the people thronged him,

43 And a womā hauing an issue of blood twelue yeres long, which had spent all her substance vpon Physitions, and could not be healed of any:

44 Whē she came behind him, she touched the hemme of his garment, and immediately her issue of blood stanchēd.

45 Then Iesus said, Who is it that hath touched me? When euery man denied. Peter said & they that were with him, Master, the multitude thrust thee & tread on thee, & sleepest thou. Who hath touched me?

45 And Iesus sayd, Some one hath touched mee: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 When the woman sawe that she was not hid, shee came trembling, and fel downe before him, and told him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And he said vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath saued thee, goe in peace.)

49 While hee yet spake, there came one from the ruler of the Synagogues house, which sayd to him, Thy daughter is dead, discease not the Master.

CHAP. IX.

50 When Iesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not: beleeue only, and she shall be saued,

51 And when he went into the house, he suffered no man to goe in with him, save Peter, & James, and Iohn, & the father & mother of the mayde.

52 And all wept & sorrowed for her: but he said, Weepe not, for she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughd him to scorne, knowing that she was dead,

54 So he thrust them all out, & tooke her by the hand, and cryed, saying, Mayd, arise.

55 And her spirit came againe, and shee rose straightway: and he commanded to giue her to eate.

56 Then her parents were astonied: but he commanded them that they should tel no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

*The Apostles are sent to preach. 6 and 19
the common peoples opinion of Christ.*

Then called hee his twelue disciples together, & gaue them power & authoritie ouer al deuils, and to heale diseases.

1 And hee sent them forth to preach the kingdom of God, and to cure the sicke.

2 And he sayde to them, Take nothing to your journey, neither stauces, nor scrip, neither bread, nor siluer, neither haue tway coates a peece.

3 And whatsoeuer house yee enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

4 And how many soeuer wil not receiue you, when ye goe out of that citie, shake off the very dust from your feete for a testimony against them.

5 And they vvent out, and vvent through euery town preaching the Gospel, and hea-

king euery where.

7 ¶ Now Herod & Terrarch heard of all that was done by him: & he doubted because that it was said of some, y^e Iohn was risen againe from the dead:

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared, & of some, that one of the old Prophets was risen againe.

9 Then Herod sayd, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is this of whom I heare such things? and he desired to see him.

10 ¶ And when the Apostles returned, they tolde him what great things they had done. Then he tooke them to him, and went aside into a solitary place, neere to the citie called Bethsaida.

11 But when the people knewe it, they followed him: & he receiued them, & spake vnto them of the kingdome of God, & healed them that had need to be healed.

12 And when the day began to wear away the twelue came, and sayde vnto him, Send the people away, that they may goe to the townes and villages round about, and lodge, & get meate: for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he sayd vnto them, Giue ye them to eate, And they sayd, We haue no more but fise loaves and two fishes, except we should goe and buy meate for al this people.

4 For they were about fise thousand men. The he sayd to his disciples, Cause the to sit down by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and caused al to sit downe.

16 Then he tooke the fise loaves, and the two fishes, and looked vpto heauen, & blessed them, and brake, & gaue to the disciples, to set before the people.

17 So they did al eate, and were satisfied.

heard of al
because the
risen againe

ad appeared,
prophets was

ue I behe-
d heare such

es returned,
gs they had
n, and went
e to the cins

ewe it, they
em, & spake
God, & hea-
ealed.

to weare a
vnto him,
may goe in-
d about, and
ere in a de-

ue ye them
no moue but
t we should
ple.

ne thousand
Cause the
ny.

sedal to sit

nes, and the
en, & blef-
e disciples,

re satisfied

and there was taken vp of that remained to
them, twelue baskets full of broken meate.

18 ¶ And it came to passe as he was alone
praying, his disciples were with him: and he
asked the, saying, whō say y^e people y^e I am?

19 They answered and sayde, Iohn Bap-
tist: & other say, Elias: and some say that one
of the olde Prophets is risen againe.

20 And he sayd vnto them, But whō say
ye that I am? Peter answered & sayd, That
Christ of God.

21 And he warned and commanded them
that they should tel that to no man,

22 Saying, The Sonne of man must suffer
many things, & be reprovēd of the Elders,
& of the hie Priests, & Scribes, & be flaine,
and the third day rise againe.

23 ¶ And he said to them al, If any man
will come after me, let him denie himselfe, &
take vp his crosse daily, and follow me.

24 For whosoever wil saue his life, shall
lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life for
my sake, the same shal saue it.

25 For what advantage it a man, if hee
win the whole world, & destroy himselfe,
or loose himselfe?

26 For whosoever shall bee ashamed of
me, and of my words, of him shall the Sonne
of man bee ashamed, when he shall come in
his glory, and in the glory of the Father, and
of the holy Angels,

27 And I tel you of a suerty, there be some
standing here, which shal not taste of death,
till they haue seene the kingdom of God.

28 And it came to passe about an eight
dayes after those words, that he tooke Peter
and Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into a
mountaine to pray.

29 And as he praied, the fashion of his
countenance was chāged, & his garment was
white

S. I. V. K. E.

white & glistered.

30 And behold, two men talked with him, which were Moses and Elias,

31 Which appeared in glory, and tolde of his departing, which he should accomplish at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him, were heavy with sleepe, & when they awoke, they saw his glory, and the two men standing with him.

33 And it came to passe as they departed from him, Peter sayd vnto Iesus. Master, it is good for vs to be here: let vs therefore make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, & one for Elias, and wist not what he sayd.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud & overshadowed them, & they feared when they were entring into the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of y^e cloud, saying, This is that my beloued Sonne, hear him.

36 And when the voyce was past, Iesus was found alone, & they kept it close, & told no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seene.

37 ¶ And it came to passe on y^e next day, as they came down from y^e mountain, much people met him.

38 And behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, behold my sonne: for he is all that I haue.

39 And loe, a spirit taketh him, and suddenly he crieth, and he teareth him that he someth, & hardly departeth from him, when he hath bruised him.

40 Now I haue besought thy disciples to cast him out, but they could not.

41 Then Iesus answered and said, O generation faithlesse and crooked, how long

CHAP. IX.

now shal I be with you and suffer you? bring
thy sonne hither,

42 And whiles he was yet comming, the
deuill rent him, & tare him: and Iesus rebu-
ted the vncleane spirit, and healed the child,
and deliuered him to his father.

43 And they were al amazed at \bar{y} might-
y power of God, and while they al won-
dered at al things, which Iesus did, he said vn-
to his disciples.

44 Marke these vvordes diligently: for it
shal come to passe, that the Son of man shal
be deliuered into the hands of men,

45 But they vnderstood not that vword:
for it was hid from them, so that they could
not perceiue it; and they feared to aske him
of that vword.

46 ¶ Then there arose a disputation among
them vvhich of them should be the greatest,

47 When Iesus sawv the thoughts of their
hearts, he tooke a litle child, and set him by
him.

48 And said vnto them: Whosoever re-
ceiveth this litle child in my Name, receiveth
me: and vvhosoever shall receive me, recei-
veth him that sent me: for he that is least a-
mong you shalbe great.

49 ¶ And Iohn answered and sayd, Ma-
ster, vve saw one casting out devils in thy
Name, and we forbade him, because he fol-
lowed thee not vvith vs.

50 Then Iesus sayd vnto him, Forbid ye
him not: for he \bar{y} is not against vs: is vvith vs

51 ¶ And it came to passe, vvhen \bar{y} dayes
were accomplished, \bar{y} he should be receiued
of his father, he settled himselfe fully to goe to Hieru-
salem.

52 And sent messengers before him: & they
went and entred into a tovne of \bar{y} Samari-
ta to prepare him lodging.

53 But

53 But they would not receiue him, because his behaviour was as though he would go to Hierusalem.

54 And when his disciples, Iames & Iohn saw it, they sayd, Lord, wilt thou that we command, that fire come downe from heauen and consume them, euen as Elias did?

55 But Iesus turned about, and rebuked them, and sayd, Ye know not of what spirit ye are.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens liues, but to saue them. Then they went to another towne.

57 ¶ And it came to passe that as they went in ^{the} way, a certain man said vnto him, I wil folow thee, Lord, whither soeuer thou goest.

58 And Iesus said vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birds of the heauen nests, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to lay his head.

59 But he said vnto another, Follow me, And the same said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

60 And Iesus said vnto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but goe thou, & preach the kingdome of God.

61 Then another said, I wil follow thee, Lord: but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at mine house.

62 And Iesus said vnto him, No man that putteth his hand to the plough, and looketh backe, is apt to the kingdome of God.

CHAP. X.

¶ The seuentie disciples. 15 The vnthankful ci- ties charged with impietie.

After these things, ^{the} Lord appointed o- ther seuentie also & sent them, two & two before him into euery citie and place, whither he himself should come.

3 And

CHAP. X.

And he saide vnto them, The harvest is great: but the labourers are few: pray therefore the Lord of the harvest to send forth labourers into his harvest.

3 Goe your waies: behold, I send you forth as lambes among wolues.

4 Beare no bag, neither scrip, nor shoes: & salute no man by the way.

5 And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say Peace be to this house.

6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shall rest vpon him: if not, it shall turne to you again.

7 And in that house tarie still eating and drinking such things as by them shall be set before you: for the labourer is worthy of his wages, Goe not from house to house.

8 But into whatsoever citie ye shall enter, if they receiue you, eate such things as are set before you.

9 And heale the sicke that are there, & say vnto them, The kingdome of God is come neere vnto you.

10 But into whatsoever citie ye shall enter, if they wil not receiue you, goe your wayes out into the streetes of the same, & say,

11 Euen the very dust, which cleaueth vs of your citie, we wipe off against you: notwithstanding know this, that the kingdome of God was come neere vnto you.

12 For I say vnto you, y it shall be easier in that day for the of Sodō, then for y citie.

13 Wo be to thee, Chorazin: wo be to thee Bethsaida, for if the miraeles had bene done in Tyrus & Sidon: which haue bene done in you, they had a great while agoe repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 Therefore it shall be easier for Tyrus, and Sidon, at the iudgement, then for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, & which art exal

S. LVKE,

and to heaven, shall be thrust down to hell.

16 He that heareth you heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the sententie turned again with ioy, saying, Lord, euen the deuils are subdued vnto vs through thy Name.

18 And he said vnto them, I saw Satan, like lightning fall downe from heauen.

19 Beholde, I giue vnto you power to tread on Serpents, and Scorpions, and ouer all power of the enemye, & nothing shall hurt you.

20 Neuertheles, in this reioyce not, y the spirites are subdued vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your names are written in heauen.

21 ¶ That same houre reioyced Iesus in the spirit, & said, I confesse vnto thee, Father, Lord of heauen and earth, y thou hast hid these things from the wise & vnderstanding, & hast reueiled them to babes, euen so, Father, because it so pleased thee.

22 All things are giuen me of my Father, and no man knoweth who the Sonne is but the Father: neither who the Father is save the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reueile him.

23 And he turned to his disciples, and said secretly, blessed are the eyes, which see that ye see.

24 For I tell you, that many Prophets & Kings haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not scene them: & to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard them.

25 ¶ Then behold, a certaine Lawyer stood vp, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I doe to inherite eternal life?

26 And he sayd vnto him, What is written in the Law? how readest thou?

27 And he answered and sayd, Thou shalt love thy Lord God wth al thine heart, & with al thy soule, and with al thy strength, & with al thy thought, and thy neighbour as thy selfe.

28 Then he sayd vnto him, Thou hast answered right: this doe and thou shalt liue.

29 But he willing to iustifie himselfe, sayd vnto Iesus, Who is then my neighbour.

30 And Iesus answered, & sayd, A certain man went downe from Hierusalem to Iericho, & fell among theeues, and they robbed him of his rayment, & wounded him, & departed, leauing him halfe dead.

31 Now so it fel out. y^e there came down certaine Priest that same way, and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side,

32 And likewise also a Leuite when he came nere to the place, went & looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 Then a certain Samaritane, as he iourneyed, came nere vnto him, & when he saw him, he had compassion on him.

34 And went to him and bound vp his woundes, & powred in oyle & wine, & put him on his owne beast, and brought him to an Inne, and made prouision for him.

35 And on y^e morow when he departed, he tooke out two pence? & gaue them to the Inne, & said vnto him, Take care of him, & whatsoeuer thou spendest more, whē I come againe, I wil recompense thee,

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him y^e fel among the theeues?

37 And he sayd, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Iesus vnto him, Goe, and do thou likewise,

38 ¶ Now

38 ¶ Now it came to passe as they
they entred into a certaine town, & a
taine woman named Martha receiued
into her house.

39 And shee had a sister called Mary
which also sat at Iesus feet, and heard
preaching.

40 But Martha was combred about
seruing, & came to him, & said, Master,
thou not care that my sister hath left me
serue alone? bid her therfore, that shee be
me.

41 And Iesus answered and sayde
her, Martha, Martha, thou carest & art
bled about many things.

42 But one thing is needful, Marie hath
chosen y good part, vvhich shal not be
away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 Hee teacheth his Apostles to pray. 14 The
dumme deuil driuen out. 27 A woman
the company listeth vp her voyce.

ANd so it vvas, that as he vvas praying in
a certaine place, vvhich he ceased one
his disciples sayde vnto him Lord, teach vs
pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples.

2 And he sayde vnto them, When ye
say, Our Father, vvhich are in heauen, hal
ued be thy Name: Thy kingdom come: let
thy vvil be done, euē in earth, as it is in he
uen.

3 Our dayly bread giue vs for the day:

4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for euen we
forgiue enery man that is indetted to vs. And
leade vs not into temptation: but deliuer
from euil,

5 ¶ Moreouer he saide vnto them, vvhich
of yon shal haue a friend, and shal go to him
at midnigh, & say vnto him, Friend, le: d
these loues:

For a friend of mine is come out of the
tome, and I haue nothing to set before

7 And he within should answere and say
trouble mee not, the doore is now shut, and
childre are with me iabed: I cannot rise
and give them to thee.

8 I say vnto you, though he would not a-
rise & giue him because hee is his friend, yet
because of his importunitie, hee
shall rise, and giue him as many as he nee-

9 And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shall be
giue you: seeke, and ye shall finde: knock &
it shall be opened vnto you.

10 For euery one that asketh, receiweth:
and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that
knocketh, it shall be opened.

11 If a sonne shall aske bread of any of
that is a father, wil he giue him a stone?
If he aske a fish, wil he for a fish, giue him
a serpent?

12 Or if he aske an egge, wil he giue him
a scorpion?

13 If ye the which are euil can giue good
gifts vnto your children, howe much more
shall your heavenly Father giue the holy
ghost to them that desire him?

14 ¶ Then he cast out a deuill which was
in him, and when the deuill was gone out, the
man spake, and the people wondred.

15 But some of them said, He casteth out
deuils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the
deuils.

16 And others tempted him, seeking of
a signe from heauen.

17 But he knew their thoughts, and saide
vnto them. Euery kingdome diuided against
itselfe, shall be desolate, and an house diuided
against an house, falleth.

18 So if Satan also be deuided against
himselſe, howe ſhal his Kingdome ſtand,
ye ſay that I caſt out deuile through Be-
lzebub?

19 If I through Belzebub caſt out deuile,
by whom doe your children caſt them out?
Therefore ſhal they be your iudges.

20 But if I by the finger of God caſt out
deuils doubtleſſe the kingdome of God is come
vpon you.

21 When a ſtrong man armed, keepeth his
palace, the things that he poſſeſſeth, are in
peace.

22 But when a ſtronger then hee, com-
meth vpon him, & overcometh him: he taketh
from him all his armour wherein he truſted
& deuideth his ſpoyles.

23 He that is not with me, is againſt me: & he
that gathereth not with me, ſcattereth.

24 When the vncleane ſpirite is gone out
of a man, he walketh through drie places,
ſeeking reſt: and when he findeth none, he
ſaith, I wil returne, vnto mine houſe, whither
I came out.

25 And when he commeth, he findeth it
ſwept and garriſhed,

26 Then goeth he, & taketh to him ſeu-
en other ſpirits worſe then himſelfe: and they
enter in, and dwell there: ſo the laſt ſtate
of that man is worſe then the firſt.

27 ¶ And it came to paſſe, as hee ſayd theſe
things a certaine woman of the companie lift
vp her voyce, & ſaid vnto him Bleſſed is the
wombe that bare thee, & the pappes which
thou haſt ſucked.

28 But hee ſaid, Yea, rather bleſſed are they
that heare the word of God and keepe it.

29 ¶ And when the people were gathered
thicke together, he began to ſay. This is
a wicked generation: they ſeek a ſigne: as
the

shall no signe be given them, but the
of Ionas the Prophet.

For as Ionas was a signe to the Nine-
vites: so shall also the Sonne of mā be to this
generation.

31 The Queene of the South shal rise in
judgement with the men of this generation,
that condemne them: for she came from
the most parts of the earth to heare the wis-
dome of Salomon, and beholde, a greater than
Salomon is here.

32 The men of Nineue shal rise in iudge-
ment with this generation, & shal condemne
it: for they repented at the preaching of Io-
nas: and behold, a greater than Ionas is
here.

33 ¶ No man when he hath lighted a can-
dle, putteth it in a priny place, neither vnder
the bushell: but on a candlestick, y^e they which
come in, may see y^e light.

34 The light of the body is y^e eye: there-
fore when thine eye is single, then is thy
whole body light: but if thine eye be euill,
thy whole body is darke.

35 Take heede therefore, that the light
which is in thee, be not darkened,
36 If therefore thy whole body shal be light,
having no part darke, then shal al be light, e-
ven as when a candle doeth light thee with
his brightnesse.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certaine Pharise
brought him to dine with him: & hee went
in and sat downe at table.

38 And when the Pharise sawe it, he
 marvelled y^e he had not first washed before
meate.

39 And the Lorde sayd to him, In deede
Pharises make cleane the outside of the
cup and of the platter: but the inward part
of ravening and wickednesse.

S. LUKE.

40 Ye fooles, did not hee vvhich make
vvhich is vvithout, make y^e vvhich is vvithin
in also.

41 Therefore, giue almes of those things
vvhich you haue, & behold, all things shal be
clean vnto you.

42 But vvoe be to you Pharises, for ye
tithe the mint and the reeve, and al manner
herbes, & passe ouer iudgemēt & the loue of
God: these ought ye to haue done, and not to
haue left the other vndone.

43 Woe be to you, Pharises: for ye loue the
vppermost seates in the Synagogues, and greet-
ings in the markets.

44 Woe be to you, Scribes & Pharises, hy-
pocrites: for ye are as graues, which appeare
not, & the men that vvalke ouer them, per-
ceiue not.

45 ¶ The answered one of the Lavvyers
& saide vnto him, Master, thus saying, thou
puttest vs to rebuke also.

46 And hee said, Woe be to you also, ye
Lavvyers: for ye lade mē vvith burthē's grie-
uous to be born: and ye your selues touch not
be burdens with one of your fingers.

47 Woe be to you: for ye build the sepul-
chres of the Prophets, and your fathers kil-
led them.

48 Truly yee beare vvitnessse, and alow
y^e deeds of your fathers: for they killed the
and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore said the vvisedom of God
vvil send them Prophets and Apostles, &
them they shal slay and persecute away,

50 That the blood of al the Prophe-
shed from the foundation of the vvorld, may
be required of this generation,

51 From the blood of Abel, vnto y^e blood
of Zacharias, vvhich vvas slaine betwix
the altar and the Temple: verily I say v

CHAP. XII.

it shall be required of this generation.
 52 Woe be to you Lavvyers: for ye have taken away the key of knowvledge: yee entered not in your selues, and them that came in, ye forbade.

53 And as he sayd these things vnto the, the Scribes and Pharises began to vrge him sore, and to prouoke him to speake of many things.

54 Laying vvaite for him, and seeking to catch some thing of his mouth, vvhereby they might accuse him.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *The leauen of the Pharises.* 5 *Who is to be feared.* 8 *To confesse himself.*

IN the meane time, there gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, so that they trode one another, & hee began to say to his disciples first, Take heed to your selues of the leauen of the Pharises, which is hypocrisie.

2 For there is nothing covered, that shall not be reueiled, neither hid, that shall not be knownen.

3 Wherefore whatsoeuer ye haue spoken in darknesse, it shall be heard in the light: and y which ye haue spokē in the eare, in secret places, shall be preached on the houses.

4 And I say vnto you, my friends, bee not afrayd of them that kil the body, & after y are not able to doe any more.

5 But I will forewarne you, whome yee shall feare: feare him, which after hee hath killed, hath power to cast into hel: yea, I say vnto you, him feare.

6 Are not fise sparrowes bought for two farthings, & yet not one of the is forgotten before God?

7 Yea, and all the haires of your head are numbred: feare not therefore, ye are of more

S. LVKE.

value then many sparowes

8 Also I say vnto you, Whosoener shall confesse mee before men, him shall the Sonne of man confesse also before the Angels of God.

9 But he that shall denie me before men, shall be denied before the Angels of God.

10 And whosoener shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiven him: but vnto him that shall blaspheme the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.

11 And when they shall bring you vnto Synagogues, and vnto the rulers and princes, take no thought, how, or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall speake.

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in that same houre, what ye ought to say.

13 And one of the company sayde vnto him, Master, bid my brother diuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said vnto him, Mā, who made me a iudge, or a deuider ouer you?

15 Wherefore hee saide vnto them, Take heede, & beware of couetousnesse: for though a man haue abundance, yet his life standeth not in his riches,

16 And he put forth a parable vnto the, saying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought fourth fruits plenteously.

17 Therefore he thought with himselfe, saying, What shall I doe, because I haue no room, where I may lay vp my fruites?

18 And he sayd, This wil I do, I will pul down my barnes & build greater, & therein wil I gather al my fruites and my goods.

19 And I wil say to my soule, Soule, thou hast much goods layde vp for many yeeres: liue at ease, eate, drinke, & take thy pastime,

20 But God sayd vnto him, O foole, this night wil they fetch away thy soule fro thee: then whose shall those things bee which

thou hast p
21 So
22 And
23 Th
24 Co
25 A n
26 If
27 Co
28 If
29 T
30 Fo
31 Br
32 F
33 G
thou hast p
21 So
22 And
23 Th
24 Co
25 A n
26 If
27 Co
28 If
29 T
30 Fo
31 Br
32 F
33 G
thou hast p

CHAP. XII.

thou hast provided?

21 So is he that gathereth riches to himselfe, and is not rich in God.

22 And he spake vnto his disciples, Therefore I say vnto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eate, neither for your body, what ye shall put on.

23 The life is more then meat: and the body more then the raiment.

24 Consider the rauen: for they neither sow nor reape: which neither haue store house nor barn, and yet God feedeth them: how much more are ye better then foules?

25 And which of you wth taking thought, can adde to his stature one cubit?

26 If ye then bee not able to doe ^{the} least thing, why take ye thought for the remnant?

27 Consider the lilies howe they grow: they labour not, neither spin they: yet I say vnto you, that Solomon himselfe in all his royalty was not clothed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe ^{the} grass which is to day in the field, & to morow is cast in the oue, how much more wil he clothe you O ye of little faith?

29 Therefore aske not what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drinke, neither hang you in suspense.

30 For all such things the people of the world seeke for: and your Father knoweth that yee haue need of these things.

31 But rather seeke yee after the kingdō of God, and all these things shall be cast vpon you.

32 Feare not little flocks: for it is your Fathers pleasure to giue you the kingdome.

33 & Sel that ye haue, and giue almes: make you bagges which waxe not olde, a surety that can neuer faile in heauē, where these cōmeth neither moth nor corrupteth.

S. LXXII.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your hearts be also.

35 ¶ Let your loines be girded about, and your lights burning.

36 And ye your selues like vnto men that wait for their master, when he will returne from the wedding, that when hee cometh and knocketh, they may open vnto him immediately.

37 Blessed are those seruants whom the Lord when he cometh shall find waking. Verily I say vnto you, he will gird himselfe about, and make them to sit downe at table, and will come forth, & serue them.

38 And if he come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and shall finde them so, blessed are those seruants.

39 Now vnderstand this, that if y^e good man of y^e house had knowen at what houre the thief would haue come, he should haue watched, & wold not haue suffered his house to be digged thoro^w.

40 Be ye also prepared therefore; for the Sonne of man will come at an houre when ye thinke not.

41 Then Peter said vnto him, Master, tellst thou this parable vnto vs, or cuentoak

42 And y^e Lord sayd, who is a faithful steward, & wife, whom the master shall make ruler ouer his household, to giue them their portion of meat in season?

43 Blessed is y^e seruante, whom his master when he cometh, shall finde so doing.

44 Of a trueth I say vnto you, y^e he will make him ruler ouer al that he hath.

45 But if that seruant say in his heart, My master doth defer his comming, & shall begin to smite the seruants, & maidens, & to eat and drinke, and to be drunken.

46 The master of that seruant will come

the day when hee shall come off, & giue blowes.

47 ¶ And according to many stripes.

48 But hee that smiteth things with few, such is giue to whom he wil they

49 ¶ I 2 and what is led?

50 Now with a baptis he ended

51 Thin on earth? late.

52 For in one houre two again

53 The same, & th ther again pinst the her daugh against he

54 ¶ T see a clou yee say. A

55 An ye say, th to passe.

56 Hy eath, a

CHAP. XII.

day when he thinketh not ; and at an
hour when he is not ware of , and wil cut
him off, & giue him his portion with the vn-
belouers.

47 ¶ And that seruant that knew his ma-
sters wil , and prepared not himselfe, neither
according to his wil, shalbe beaten with
many stripes,

48 But he that knew it not , and yet did
commit things worthy of stripes, shal be bea-
ten with fewe stripes: for vnto whom soeuer
much is giuen, of him shalbe much required,
& to whom men much commit, the more of
their wil they aske.

49 ¶ I am come to put fire on the earth,
and what is my desire, if it be already kind-
led?

50 Notwithstanding I must be baptised
with a baptisme, and how am I grieved, till
it be ended:

51 Thinke ye y I am come to giue peace
on earth? I tell you, nay , but rather de-
bate.

52 For from henceforth there shalbe fire
in one house deuided, three against two, and
two against three.

53 The father shal be deuided against y
sonne, & the son against the father: the mo-
ther against y daughter, & the daughter a-
gainst the mother: the mother in law against
her daughter in law, & the daughter in law
against her mother in law,

54 ¶ Then sayd he to y people, When ye
see a cloud rise out of the West, straight way
ye say, A shewre commeth, and so it is.

55 And when ye see the South wind blow
ye say, that it wil be hote: and it commeth
to passe.

56 Hypocrites, ye can discern the face of
hearth, and of the skie: but why discern ye

5. LVKE.

ye not this time?

57 Yea, and why iudge yee not of your selues what is right?

58 ¶ While thou goest with thine adversary to the ruler, as thou art in the way, give diligence in thy way that thou maist be deliuered from him, least he draw thee to iudge, & the iudge deliuer thee to the iayler, and the iayler cast thee into prison.

59 I tel thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the vtmost mite.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Of the Galatians, 4 & those that were slaying under Siloam. 6 The figtree that bare no fruit.

THere were certaine men present at the same season, that shewd him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Iesus answered, & sayd vnto the, Suppose ye, that these Galileans were greater sinners then al the other Galileans, because they haue suffered such things?

3 I tel you nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shal al likewise perish.

4 Or thinke you that those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fel, & slew them were sinners aboue al men that dwell in Ierusalem?

5 I tel you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shall al likewise perish.

6 ¶ He also spake this parable, A certaine mā had a figtree plated in his vineyard: & he came & sought fruit thereon, & found none.

7 Then sayd he to the dresser of his vineyard, Beholde, this three yeeres haue I come and sought fruit of this figge tree, and find none: cut it downe: why keepeth it also the ground barren?

8 And he answered, and sayd vnto him,

CHAP. XII.

And let it alone & his yeere also, til I dig round about it, and dung it.

9 And if it beare fruit, well: if not, then after thou shalt cut it downe.

10 And he taught in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath day.

11 And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmitie eightene yeres, and was bowed together, and coulde not lift vp her selfe in any wise.

12 When Iesus saw her, hee called her to him, and sayd to her, Woman thou art loosed from thy disease.

13 And he layd his hands on her, & immediately she was made straight againe, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and said vnto the people, There are sixe dayes in which ought to worke: in them therefore come & be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 Then answered him the Lorde, and sayd, Hypocrite, doeth not ech one of you on the Sabbath day loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and lead him away to the water?

16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, loe, eightene yeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And when he sayd these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: but all the people reioyced at all the excellent things that were done by him.

18 Then he sayd, What is the kingdome of God like? or whereto shall I compare it?

19 It is like a graine of mustard seede, which a man took & sowed in his garden, & it grew, & waxed a great tree, & the fowles of the heauen made nestes in the branches.

ther thereof.

20 ¶ And againe he sayd, Wherem
I liken the kingdome of God?

21 It is like leauen, which a woman
& hid in three pecks of flowre, til all
leavened.

22 ¶ And he went thorowe al cities
& townes teaching, & Iourneying toward
Ierusalem.

23 Then sayd one vnto him, Lord, are
fewe that shall be saued? And he sayd
vnto them,

24 Strive to enter in at the straighe
gate: for many I say vnto you, wil seeke to enter
in, and shal not be able.

25 When the good man of the house is
risen vp, and hath shut to the doore, and ye
beginne to stande without, and to knocke
at the doore saying, Lord, Lord open to vs, & he
shal answer and say vnto you, I know you
not whence ye are,

26 Then shal ye begin to say, We haue
eaten & drunke in thy presence, & thou hast
taught in our streets.

27 But he shal say, I tel you, I know you
not whence ye are: depart from me, all ye
workers of iniquitie,

28 There shalbe weeping and gnashing of
teeth when ye shall see Abraham & Isaac,
& Iacob, and al the Prophets in y^e kingdome
of God, and your selues thrust out at doore.

29 Then shal come many from the East
& from y^e West, and from the North, & from
the South & shal sit at table in the kingdome
of God,

30 And behold, there are last which shal
be first, and there are first which shalbe last.

31 The same day there came certain
Pharisees, & sayd vnto him, Depart, and go hence:
for Herod wil kil thee.

CHAP. XIII.

22 Then said he vnto them, Goye & tel
for. Beholde, I cast out devils, and will
heale still to day & to morow, and the third
day I shalbe perfected.

33 Neuerthelesse, I must walke to day, &
to morow, & the day folowing: for it cannot
be that a Prophet should perish out of Hieru-
salem.

34 O Hierusalem, Hierusalē, which kil-
led the Prophets, and stonest them that are
sent to thee, how often would I haue gather-
ed thy children together, as y^e henne gathe-
red her brood vnder her wings, and ye would
not.

35 Beholde, your house is left vnto you
desolate & verely I tell you, ye shal not see
me vntil the time come y^e yee shal say, Bless-
ed is he that commeth in the Name of the
Lord.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The dropfie healed on y^e Sabbath. 8 The chief
places as bankets, 12 The poore must be cal-
led to our feastes.

And it came to passe that when he was
A entred into the house of one of y^e chief
Pharises on the Sabbath day, to eate bread,
they watched him.

2 And beholde, there was a certaine man
before him, which had the dropfie,

3 Then Iesus answering, spake vnto the
Lawyers & Pharises, saying. Is it lawful to
heele on the Sabbath day?

4 And they held their peace, Thē he tooke
him, and healed him, and let him goe.

5 And answered them, saying, Which of
you shal haue an asse or an oxe fallen into a
pit, and wil not straightway pul him out on y^e
Sabbath day?

6 And they could not answer him again
to those things.

7 ¶ He spake also a parable re-
when he marked how they chose out the
chiefe roomes, and said vnto them.

8 When thou shalt bee bidden of any
to a wedding, set not thy selfe downe in the
chiefest place, lest a more honourable man
then thou, bee bidden of him.

9 And hee that bade both him and thee,
come, and say to thee, Giue this man room,
and thou then begin with shame to take the
lowest room.

10 But when thou art bidden, goe & sit
downe in the lowest room, that when he
that bade thee commeth, he may say vnto
thee Friend sit vp hier: then shalt thou haue
worship in the presence of them, that sit at
table with thee.

11 For whosoever exalteth himselfe, shall
be brought low, and he that humbleth him-
selfe, shall be exalted.

12 ¶ Then saide hee also to him that had
bidden him, When thou makest a dinner or a
supper, cal not thy friends nor thy brethren,
neither thy kinsmen, nor thy riche neighbours,
lest they also bid thee againe, and a recom-
pense be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, cal the
poore the maimed, the lame, and the blinde,

14 And thou shalt be blessed, because they
cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be
recompensed at the resurrection of the iust.

15 ¶ Now when one of them that sat at
table, heard these things, he said vnto him,
Blessed is hee that eateth bread in the king-
dom of God;

16 Then sayd he vnto him, A certain man
made a grear supper, and bade many.

17 And sent his seruant at supper time to
them that were bidden, Come: for al things
are now ready.

18 But

But they all with one ~~mind~~ began on
the cause. The first said vnto him, I haue
bought a farme, and I must needs goe out &
seeke: I pray thee haue me excused.

19 And another sayd, I haue bought fixe
yokes of oxen, and I goe out to prooue them:
I pray thee haue me excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife
and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that seruant returned, and shewed
his master these things. Then was the good
man of the house angry, & said to his seruants,
Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of
Iherusalem, and bring in hither the poore, and
the lame, and the halfe, and the blinde.

22 And the seruant sayd, Lord, it is done
as thou hast commaunded, and yet there is
room.

23 Then the Master sayd to the seruant,
Goe out into the high wayes, and hedges, &
compell the to come in, that mine house may
be filled.

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those
men which were bidde, shal taste of my sup-
per.

25 Now there went great multitudes with
him and he turned, and sayd vnto them,

26 If any man come to me, and hate not
his father and mother, and wife, and childre,
and brethren, and sisters? yea, and his owne
life also, he can not be my discipule.

27 And whosoever beareth not his crosse,
and cometh after me, can not be my disci-
ple.

28 For which of you minding to build
a tower, sitteth not downe before, & coun-
teth the cost, whether he haue sufficient to
performe it.

29 Lest that after he hath layd the foun-
dation, and is not able to performe it, al that
beholde,

Behold it, begin to mocke him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to make an end?

31 Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and taketh counsell, whether hee be able to withstand him that commeth against him with twenty thousand?

32 Or els while he is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth peace.

33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath: he cannot be my disciple.

34 Salt is good: but if salt haue lost his saueur, wherewith shal it be salted?

35 It is neither meet for the land, nor yet for the dunghil, but men cast it out. Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

CHAP. XV.

4 *The parable of the lost sheepe, & Of the prodigal sonne.*

Then resorted vnto him all the Pharisees, and sinners, to heare him.

2 Therefore the Pharisees & Scribes murmured saying, He receiueth sinners, & eateth with them.

3 Then spake hee this parable to them, saying,

4 What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if he loose one of the, doth not leave ninety & nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, vntil he finde it?

5 And when he hath found it, hee layeth it on his shoulders with ioy.

6 And when he commeth home, he calleth together his friends & neighbors, saying vnto them, Reioyce with me: for I haue found my sheepe which was lost.

7 I say vnto you, that likewise ioy shall

...for one sinner that euerteth, more
...the money and nine iuste men, which
...none amedement of life,

...Father what woman having ten groates
...the lofe one great, doth not light a candle,
...sweepe the house, and seeke diligently
...she finde it?

...And when she hath found it, she calleth
...friends and neighbours, saying. Reioyce
...me; for I haue found the goat which I
...lost.

...Likewise I say vnto you, there is ioy
...the presence of the Angels of God, for
...a sinner that conuerteth.

...Hee saide moreouer, A certaine man
...had two sonnes,

...And the yonger of them saide to his
...father, Father, giue mee the portion of the
...substance that falleth to me. So he deuided vnto
...him his substance.

...So not many dayes after, when the
...yonger sonne had gathered all together, hee
...began his iourney into a farre countrey, and
...there he wasted his goodes with ryotous li-
...ues.

...Now when he had spent all, there was
...a great dearth thorowout all that land:
...and he began to be in necessity.

...Then he went and clane to a citizen of
...that countrey, and hee sent him to his farme,
...to keepe swine.

...And hee would faine haue filled his
...stomack with the huskes that the swine ate, but
...he was faine to beate them.

...Then he came to himselfe, and sayde,
...How many hired seruants at my fathers
...house haue enough to eate, and I die for hunger?

...I will rise and go to my father, & saye
...vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against hea-
...uē, and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hirelings.

20 So he arose and came to his father, when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran & fell on his necke, and kissed him.

21 And the sonne sayd vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, & before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne.

22 Then the father saide to his seruants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shooes on his feete,

23 And bring the fat calfe, and kill him, and let vs eate and be merry:

24 For this my sonne was dead, and is liue againe: and he was lost: but he is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Nowe the elder brother was in the field, and when hee came and drew neere the house, he heard melody and dancing.

26 And called one of his seruants, & asked what those things meane.

27 And saide vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fat calfe, because he hath receiued him safe & sound.

28 Then he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out and entreated him.

29 But he answered, & said to his father, Loe, these many yeres haue I done thee as a vnicell, neither brake I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gauest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends.

30 But when this thy sonne was come, which hath deuoured thy goodes with harlots, thou hast for his sake killed y^e fat calfe.

CHAP. XVI.

And he said vnto him, Sonne, thou art
with mee, and all that I haue is thine.
It was meete that we should make mery &
glad: for this thy brother was dead, and
is aliue againe: and hee was lost, but hee is
found.

CHAP. XVI.

*The parable of the Steward accused to his
master, 13. To serue two masters. 16. The
Law and the Prophets.*

And hee saide also vnto his disciples,
There was a certaine rich man, which
had a steward, and he was accused vnto him
that he wasted his goods.

And hee called him, and said vnto him,
How is it that I heare this of thee? Giue an
account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest
be no longer steward.

Then the steward said within himself,
What shall I doe? for my master taketh a-
way from me the stewardship. I cannot dig,
to beg I am ashamed.

I know what I will do, that when I am
out of the stewardship, they may receiue
into their houses.

Then called hee vnto him every one of
his masters debtors, and said to the first, How
much owest thou vnto my master?

And he sayde, An hundreth measures of
wheat. And he said to him, Take thy writing,
and sit downe quickly, and write fiftie,

Then sayde hee to another, How much
owest thou? And he said, An hundreth mea-
sures of wheat. Then he said to him, Take
thy writing, and write foure score.

And the Lord commended him, because hee had
done wisely. Where-
of the children of this worlde are in their
generation wiser then the children of light.

And I say vnto you, Make you friends

with

with the riches of iniquitie, that when you shall want, they may receiue you into everlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithfull in the least, he is also faithfull in much: and he that is vnfaithfull in the least, is vnfaithfull also in much.

11 If then ye haue not bin faithfull in the wicked riches, who wil trust you in the true treasures?

12 And if yee haue not bene faithfull in another mans goods, who shall giue you that which is yours?

13 No man can serue two masters: for either hee shall hate the one, and loue the other: or else he shall leane to the one, & despise the other: Ye cannot serue God and riches.

14 All these things heard the Pharisees also which were couetous, and they scoffed at him.

15 Then hee sayd vnto them, Ye are they, which iustifie your selues before men: but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abominable in the sight of God.

16 The Lawe and the Prophets endured vntill Iohn: and since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it.

17 Now it is more easie that heauen and earth should passe away, then that one tittle of the Law should fall.

18 ¶ Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marieth her that is put away from her husbände, committeth adultery.

19 ¶ There was a certaine riche man, which was clothed in purple, & fine linnen, and fared well and delicately every day.

20 Also there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was layde at his gate full of sores,

21 And desired to be refreshed with the crummes that fell from the rich mans table: yes, and the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it was so that the begger died, & was carried by the Angel into Abrahams bosome. The rich man also died, and was buried.

23 And being in hell in torments, he lift up his eyes, and saw Abraham a farre off, & Lazarus in his bosome.

24 Then he cryed and said, Father Abraham haue mercy on mee, and sende Lazarus that hee may dip the tip of his finger in water, and coole my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame,

25 But Abraham said Sonne, remember thou in thy life time receiued thy pleasures, & likewise Lazarus paines: now therefore it is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 Besides all this, betweene you & vs there is a great gulfe set, so that they which would goe from hence to you can not: neither can they come from thence to vs.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest sende him to my fathers house,

28 (For I haue five brethren) that hee may testifie vnto them, least they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham said vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophets: let them heare them.

30 And he saide, Naye, father Abraham: but if one came vnto the frō the dead, they will amend their liues.

31 Then hee saide vnto him. If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they

they bee perswaded though one arise from the dead againe.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Offences, 3 Wee must forgive him that trespasseth against us. 10. We are unprofitable servants. 11. Of the ten lepers.

Then said he to the disciples, It cannot be avoided, but that offences will come, but wo be to him by whom they come.

2 It is better for him that a great milstone were hanged about his necke, and that hee were cast into the sea, then that hee should offend one of these litle ones.

3 ¶ Take heede to your selves: if thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him: & if he repent, forgive him.

4 And though he sinne against thee seven times in a day, & seven times in a day more againe to thee, saying, It repenteth me, thou shalt forgive him.

5 ¶ And the Apostles said vnto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6 And the Lord saide, If yee had faith as much as is a graine of mustard seed, & should say vnto this mulbery tree, Plucke thy selfe vp by the rootes, and plant thy selfe in the sea, it should euen obey you.

7 ¶ Who is it also of you, & hauing a servant plowing or feeding cattell, would say vnto him by and by, when hee were come from the field, Go, and sit downe at table?

8 And would not rather say to him, Dresse wherewith I may suppe, and gird thy selfe, & serue me, till I haue eaten and drunken, and afterwar d thou shalt eat and drinke?

9 Doeth he thanke that servant, because hee did that which was commaunded vnto him? I trow not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye haue done all those things which are commanded you, say,

We

CHAP. XVII.

We are vnprofitable seruants: we haue done that which was our duety todo.

11 ¶ And so it was when he went to Hierusalem, that hee passed thorow the mids of Samaria and Galile.

12 And as he entred into a certaine town, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood a farre off.

13 And they listyp their voyce, & said, Iesus, Master haue mercy on vs.

14 And when he saw them, he said vnto them, Go, shew your selues vnto the priests, And it came to passe, that as they went they were censed.

15 Then one of them, when hee saw that hee was healed, turned backe, and with a loud voyce prayesd God,

16 And fel downe on his face at his feet, and gaue him thanks: and hee was a Samaritan.

17 And Iesus answered, and saide, Are there not tenne censed? but where are the ainer?

18 There are none found that returned to giue God prayse, saue the stranger.

19 And he saide vnto him, Arise, goe thy way, thy faith hath saued thee.

20 ¶ And when he was demanded of the Pharises, when the kingdome of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdome of God cometh not with obseruation.

21 Neither shal men say, Loe here, or loe there: for beholde, the kingdome of God is within you.

22 And he saide vnto the disciples, The dayes will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 Then they shall saye to you, beholde here

there, or behold there: but go not thither,
they follow them.

24 For as the lightning that lighteneth
out of the one part vnder heaven, shineth vnto
the other parts vnder heaven, so shall the
Sonne of man be in his day.

25 But first he must suffer many things, &
be reprobued of this generation.

26 And as it was in the dayes of Noe, so
shall it be in the dayes of the Sonne of man.

27 They ate, they dranke, they married
wines, and gaue in marriage vnto the day
Noe went into the Arke; and the flood came
and destroyed them all.

28 Likewise also, as it was in the dayes
of Lot, they ate, they dranke, they bought,
they solde, they planted, they built.

29 But in the daye that Lot went out of
Sodom, it rained fire & brimstone from hea-
uen, and destroyed them all.

30 After these *ensamples* shall it bee in
the day when the Sonne of man is reueiled,

31 At that day he that is vpon the house,
and his stuffe in the house, let him not come
downe to take it out: and hee that is in the
felde likewise let him not turne backe to
that he left behinde.

32 Remember Lots wife.

33 Whosoever wil seeke to saue his soule,
shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose it, shall
get it life.

34 I tell you, in that night there shall be
two in one bed: the one shall be receiued, &
the other shall be left.

35 Two women shall be grinding toge-
ther: the one shall bee taken, and the other
shall be left.

36 Two shall be in the felde: one shall be
receiued, and another shall be left.

37 And they answered, & said vnto him,
When

Let it be said vnto them, Where
soeuer the body is, thither shall also the eagles
be gathered together.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 The parable of the *unrighteous iudge* and
the *widow*. 10. Of *ſ* Pharise & *ſ* Publicane

ANd he spake also a parable vnto them,
to this end, that they ought alwayes to
pray, and not to waxe faint,

2 Saying, There was a Iudge in a certaine
citie, which feared not God, neither reue-
renced man.

3 And there was a widow in that cite,
which came vnto him, saying, Do me iustice
against my aduersary.

4 And hee would not of a long time: but
afterwarde he said with himselfe, Though I
feare not God, nor reuerence man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me,
I will do her right, least at the last she come
and make me weary.

6 And the Lord said, Heare what the *vn-
righteous iudge* sayth.

7 Nowe shall not God auenge his elect,
which cry day & night vnto him, yea though
he suffer long for them?

8 I tell you, hee will auenge them quick-
ly: but when the Sonne of man commeth,
shall he finde faith on the earth?

9 ¶ Hee spake also this parable vnto cer-
taine which trusted in themselves that they
were iust, and despised other.

10 Two men went vp into the Temple
to pray: the one a Pharise, and the other a
Publicane.

11 The Pharise stood and prayed thus
with himselfe, O God, I thanke thee, that I
am not as other men, extortioners, vnjust, a-
dulterers, or euen as this Publicane.

12 I fast twice in the weeke: I giue tithes

5. 1. 1.
All that euer I possesse.

13 But the Publicane standing a farre off, would not lift vp so much as his eyes to heauen, but smote his breast, saying, O God, be merciful vnto me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man departed to his house iustified, rather then the other: for e-very man that exalteth himselfe, shall bee brought lowe, and hee that humbleth him- selfe, shall be exalted.

15 ¶ They brought vnto him also babes that hee should touch them. And when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Iesus called them vnto him: and said, suffer the babes to come vnto mee, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verily I saye vnto you, whosoever receineth not \bar{y} kingdome of God as a babe, he shal not enter therein.

18 Then a certaine ruler asked him, say- ing, Good master, what ought I to do, to in- herit eternal life.

19 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good saue one, euen God.

20 Thou knowest the commandements, Thou shalt not commit adulterie: Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare false witnesse: Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said, All these haue I kept fro my youth.

22 Now when Iesus heard that, he saide vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing, Sell al that euer thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in hea- uen, and come follow me.

23 But when hee heard those thinges, hee was very heauy: for he was marueilous rich.

24 And

CHAP. XVIII

24 And when Iesus saw him very sorrowfull, he said, With what difficultie shall they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God!

25 Surely it is easier for a camell to goe through a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 They saide they that heard it, & who then can be saved?

27 And he said, The things which are vnpossible with men, are possible with God.

28 ¶ Then Peter saide, Loe, we haue left all, and haue followed thee.

29 And he said vnto them, Verely I saye vnto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdome of Gods sake.

30 Which shall not receive much more in this worlde, and in the world to come life everlasting.

31 ¶ Then Iesus tooke vnto him xij twelve and saide vnto them, Beholde, wee goe vp to Hierusalem, and all thinges shall be fulfilled in the Sonne of man, that are written by xij prophets.

32 For he shall be deliuered vnto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked and shall be spitefully intreated, and shall be spitted on.

33 And when they haue scourged him, they wil put him to death: but the third day he shall rise againe.

34 But they vnderstoode not of these things, and this saying was hid from them, neither perceiued they the thinges which were spoken.

35 ¶ And it came to passe, that as hee was gone neere vnto Iericho, a certaine blinde man sat by the way side begging.

36 And when he heard the people passe, he asked what it meant,

24 And

37 And

37 And they saide vnto him, that Iesus of Nazareth passed by.

38 Then he cryed, saying, Iesus the sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him that hee should holde his peace, but he cryed much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

40 And Iesus stood still, and commanded him to be brought vnto him. And when he was come neere, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I doe to thee? And he saide, Lorde, that I may receiue my sight.

42 And Iesus said vnto him, Receiue thy sight: thy faith hath saved thee.

43 Then immediatly he receiued his sight and followed him, praying God: and all the people, when they sawe this, gaue prayse to God.

CHAP. XIX

1 **Zaccheus the Publicane.** *13* Ten pieces of money deliuered to seruants to occupy with all.

NOW when Iesus entred & passed thorow Iericho,

2 Beholde, there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chiefe receiuer of the tribute, and he was rich.

3 And hee sought to see Iesus, who he should be, and could not for the preasse, because he was of a low stature.

4 Wherefore he ran before, and climed vp into a fig tree, that he might see him: for hee should come that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, hee looked vp, and sawe him, and said vnto him, Zaccheus, come downe at once: for to daye must abide at thine house.

6 Then he came downe hastily, & receiued him joyfully,

7 And when all they saw it, they murmured, saying, that hee was gone to lodge with a sinful man,

8 And Zaccheus stood forth, and said vnto the Lord, Beholde, Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore: and if I haue taken from any man by forged cauillation, I restore him foure fold.

9 Then Iesus said to him, This day is salvation come vnto this house, forasmuch as he is also become the sonne of Abraham.

10 For the sonne of man is come to seeke and to saue that which was lost.

11 And whiles they heard these things, he continued and spake a parable, because he was neere to Hierusalem, and because also they thought that the kingdome of God should shortly appeare.

12 Hee saide therefore, A certaine noble man went into a far countrey, to receiue for himselfe a kingdome, and so to come againe.

13 And hee called his ten seruants, and deliuered them ten pieces of money, & said vnto them, Occupy till I come.

14 Nowe his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying, We will not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, when hee was come againe and had receiued his kingdome, that he commanded the seruants to be called to him, to whom he gaue his money, that he might know what euery man had gained.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lorde, thy piece hath encreased ten pieces.

17 And he said vnto him, Well, good servant: because thou hast bene faithfull in a very litle thing, take thou authority ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lorde, thy piece hath encreased five pieces.

19 And

S. LYKE.

19 And to the same he said, Be thou ruler over five cities,

20 So the other came, and said, Lorde, be-
holde thy piece, which I haue layde vp in a
napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art a
straite man: thou takest vp that thou laydest
not downe, and reapest that thou didst not
sow.

22 Then he said vnto him, Of thine own
mouth will I iudge thee, O euill servant,
Thou knewest that I am a strait man, ta-
king vp that I laid not downe, and reaping
that I did not sow.

23 Wherefore then gauest thou my
money into the banke, that at my coming
I might haue required it with vantage?

24 And hee saide to them that stood by,
Take from him that piece, and giue it him
that hath ten pieces.

25 (And they said vnto him, Lord he hath
ten pieces)

26 For I say vnto you, that vnto al them
that haue it shalbe giuen, and from him that
hath not, euen that hee hath, shall be taken
from him.

27 Moreover those mine enemies, which
would not that I should reigne over them,
bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 ¶ And when hee had thus spoken, hee
went forth before ascending vp to Hierusalem.

29 And it came to passe, when hee was
come neere to Bethphage, and Bethania, be-
sides the mounte which is called *the mounte*
of oliues, he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying, Go ye to the towne which
is before you, wherein, as soone as ye are come,
ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon neuer man
sate: loose him, and bring him hither,

31 And if any man aske you why

lose him, thus shall yee say vnto him, Be-
cause the Lord hath need of him.

32 So they y^e were sent, went their way, &
found it as he had said vnto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the
owners there of said vnto them, Why lose ye
the colt?

34 And they saide, The Lord hath neede
of him.

35 & So they brought him to Iesus, and
they cast their garments on the colt, and set
Iesus thereon.

36 And as hee wente, they spread their
clothes in the way.

37 And when hee was nowe come neere
to the going downe of the mount of Oliues,
the whole multitude of the disciples began
to reioyce, & to praise God wth a loud voyce,
for all the great workes that they had seene.

38 Saying, Blessed be the king that com-
meth in the Name of the Lord, peace in hea-
uen, and glory in the highest places.

39 Then some of the Pharisees of y^e com-
panie said vnto him, Master rebuke thy di-
sciples.

40 But hee answered and said vnto them,
I tell you, that if these should hold their
peace, the stones would cry,

41 & And when hee was come neere hee
beheld the citie, and wept for it,

42 Saying, O if thou hadst euen knowe at
the least in this thy day those things, which
be long vnto thy peace! but nowe are they
hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come vppon thee,
that thine enemies shall cast a trench about
thee, and compass thee round, & keepe thee
in on every side,

44 And shall make thee even with the
ground, & thy children which are in thee,

and they shal not leaue in thee a stone
a stone, because thou knewest not that
of thy visitation.

45 ¶ Hee went also into the Temple, and
began to cast out them that sold therein,
and them that bought,

46 Saying vnto them, It is written, My
house is the house of prayer, but yee haue
made it a denne of theecies.

47 And hee taught daily in the Temple.
And the high Priestes and the Scribes, and
the chiefe of the people sought to destroy
him.

48 But they could not finde what they
might doe to him: for all the people hanged
vpon him, when they heard him.

CHAP. XX.

¶ Hee conuinceth the Sadducees denying the
resurrection.

ANd it came to passe, that on one
of those dayes, as hee taught the people
in the Temple, and preached the Gospell,
the high Priestes and the Scribes came vpon him
with the Elders,

2 And spake vnto him, Saying, Tell vs
what authoritie thou doest these things:
who is he that hath given thee this authori-
tie?

3 And hee answered and said vnto them,
I also will aske you one thing: tell me there-
fore:

4 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from hea-
uen, or of men?

5 And they reasoned within themselves,
saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will
say, Why then belecue ye him not?

6 But if we shall say, Of men, all the peo-
ple will stone vs: for they be perswaded that
Iohn was a Prophet.

7 Therefore they answered, that they could
not say.

Will whence it was.

7 Then Iesus sayd vnto them, Neither tell you by what authoritie I do these things.

8 ¶ Then began hee to speake to y^e people this parable, A certaine man plāted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey, for a great space.

9 And at the timē conuenient he sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruit of the vineyard: but y^e husbandmen did beate him, and sent him away empty.

10 Againe hee sent y^e et another seruant: but they did beat him, and foule entreated him, and sent him away empty,

11 Moreouer hee sent the thirde, & him they wounded, and cast out.

12 Then said the Lorde of the vineyard, What shal I doe? I wil send my beloued Sonne: may be that they wil do reuerence, when they see him.

13 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned with themselues, saying, This heire: come let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

14 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What shal the Lord of the vineyard therefore do vnto them?

15 Hee will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will giue out his vineyard to others. But when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

16 ¶ And he beheld them, & said, What saith this then that is written, The stone which the builders refused, that is made the head of the corner?

17 Whosoever shal fall vpon that stone, shall bee broken: and on whomsoever it shall fall, it wil grind him to powder,

5. I. VKE.

19 Then the hie Priests, and the Scribes
the same houre went about to lay hands
him: (but they feared the people) for they
perceined that he had spoken this parable
gainst them.

20 And they watched him, & sent four
spies, which should faine themselves in
to take him in his talke, and to deliuer him
vnto the power and authoritie of the gou-
nour.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master,
know that thou saiest, & teachest right,
whether dost thou accept mans person, but teach-
est the way of God truly.

22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue Cesar
tribute or no?

23 But he perceined their craftinesse, and
sayd vnto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shewe mee a penie. Whose image
superscription hath it? They answered, and
said, Cessars.

25 Then he said vnto them, Giue then
to Cesar the things which are Cessars, and
God those which are Gods.

26 And they coulde not reprove him
ing before the people: but they marvelled
his answere, and held their peace.

27 Then came to him certaine of the
duces (which deny y there is any resurre-
ction) and they asked him,

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote vnto
If any mans brother die hauing a wife,
and hee die without children, that his brother
should take his wife and raise vp seed to
his brother.

29 Now there were seven brethren, &
the first tooke a wife, & he died without child.

30 And the second tooke the wife, and
died childelesse.

31 Then the third tooke her: and so

CHAP. XX.

And the seven died, and left no children.
 32 And last of all the woman died also.
 33 Therefore at the resurrection, whose
 wife of them shall she be? for seven had her
 wife.

34 Then Iesus answered, and saide vnto
 them, The children of this world marry
 & are married,

35 But they which shall be counted wor-
 thy to enioy that worlde, and the resurrecti-
 on from the dead, neither marry wiues, neither
 are married.

36 For they can die no more, forasmuch
 as they are equall vnto the Angels, and are
 the sonnes of God, since they are the childre
 of the resurrection.

37 And that the dead shall rise againe, e-
 uen Moses shewed it besides the bush, when
 he said, The Lord is the God of Abraham, &
 the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob.

38 For he is not the God of the dead, but
 of them which live: for all liue vnto him.

39 Then certaine of the Scribes answe-
 red, and sayd, Master, thou hast wel sayd.

And after that durst they not aske him
 anything at all.

40 Then sayd he vnto them, Howe say
 ye that Christ is Dauids sonne?

41 And David himselfe saith in γ booke
 of Psalmes, The Lord sayd vnto my Lord
 sit at my right hand,

42 Till I shall make thine enemies thy
 foote.

43 Seeing Dauid calleth him Lord, how is
 then his sonne?

44 Then in the audience of all people
 sayd vnto his disciples,

45 Beware of the Scribes, which willing-
 ly in longe robes, and lone salutations in

er: and so

S. LVKE.

the markets, & the highest seats in synagogues, and the chiefe rooms at feasts.
 47 Which deuoure widowes houses: These shall receiue greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 The widowes liberalitie about his riches.
 Of the time of the destruction of the Temple.

And as he beheld, he sawe the rich which cast their gifts into the treasure.

2 And he saw also a certain poore widow which cast in thither two mites,

3 And he said, Of a truthe I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast in more than they al.

4 For they all haue of their superfluous cast into the offerings of God, but shee of her penurie hath cast in all the liuing that she had.

5 Now as some spake of the Temple, because it was garnished wth goodly stones, and wth consecrate things, he sayd,

6 Are these the things that ye looke vpon? the daies wil come, wherein a stone shall not bee left vpon a stone, y^t shall not be thownd downe.

7 Then they asked him, saying Master, when shall these things bee? and what shall there be when these things shall come to passe.

8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceined: for many will come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and the time draweth neere: folow yee not them therefore.

9 And when ye heare of warres & seditions be not afraid, for these things must come, but the end foloweth not by and by.

10 Then said he vnto them, Nation shall rise against nation, & kingdom against kingdom.

And great earthquakes shall be in di-
verse places & hunger, & pestilence, & feare-
full things, and great signes shall there be
in heaven.

But before al these, they shal lay their
hands on you, and persecute you, deliuering
you vp to the assemblies, and into prisons, &
bringing you before kings and rulers for my
names sake.

And this shal turne to you, for a testi-
monial.

Lay it vp therfore in your hearts, that
ye cast not before hand, what yee shall an-
swer.

For I will giue you a mouth and wise-
dome, where against al your aduersaries shal
be able to speake, nor resist.

Yea, ye shal be betrayed also of your
parents, & of your brethren, and kinsmen, &
friends, & some of you shal they put to death

And ye shal be hated of al men for my
names sake.

Yet there shall not one haire of your
heads perish.

By your patience possesse your soules.

And when ye see Hierusalem besie-
ged with souldiers, then vnderstand that the
desolation thereof is neere.

Then let them which are in Iudea, flee
to the mountains & let them which are in
the sides thereof, depart out: and let not them
which are in the countrey enter therein.

For these be the dayes of vengeance, to
fulfill al things that are writte,

But wo be to them that be with child,
to them that giue suck in those dayes: for
they shal be great distres in this land, and
shall ouer this people.

And they shal fall on the edge of the
sword, and shal be led captiue into all nati-
ons.

out, & Hierusalem shall be trodden
of the Gentiles, vntill the time of the
eiles be fulfilled.

25 Then there shall be signes in the
and in the moone, and in the starres, and
on the earth trouble among y^e nations
perplexitie: the sea and the waters shall

26 And mens hearts shall faile them
fear, & for looking after those things
shall come on the worlde: for the power
heauen shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Sonne
man come in a cloud, with power and
glory.

28 And whē these things begin to
to passe, then looke vp. & lift vp your heads
for your redemption draweth neere.

29 And hee spake to them a parable,
hold, the figtree and al trees,

30 When they now shoot forth, ye
ing them, know of your own selues, that
mor is then neere.

31 So likewise, ye, whē ye see these things
come to passe, know ye that the kingdom
God is neere.

32 Verily I say vnto you, This age
not passe til al these things be done:

33 Heauen & earth shall passe away,
my words shall not passe away.

34 Take heed to your selues, least at
time your hearts bee oppressed with sur
ting and drunkenesse, and cares of this
& least y^e day come on you at vnawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on al
that dwel on the face of the whole earth,

36 Watch therefore & pray continually
that ye may be counted worthy to escape
these things that shall come to passe, and
ye may stand before the Sonne of man.

37 ¶ Nowe in the day time hee taught

and at night he went out, & out of the temple mount y^e is called the mount of

in the morning And al the people came in y^e morning to heare him in the Temple.

CHAP. XXII.

Judas selleth Christ. 7 The Apostles prepare the Pasche.

Now y^e feast of vnleavened bread drew neer, which is called y^e Pasche.

And the hie Priest and Scribes sought they might kill him: for they feared y^e people.

Then entred Satan into Judas, who was called Iscariot, and was of the number of the twelve.

And he went his way and communed with the hie Priests & captains, how he might betray him to them,

So they were glad and agreed to giue him money.

And hee consented, and sought opportunitie to betray him vnto them, vhen the people were away.

Then came the day of vnleavened bread, vhen the Pasche must bee sacrificed.

And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Go and prepare vs the Pasche, that wee may eat it.

And they said to him, Where wilt thou have us prepare it?

Then he sayd vnto the, Behold, whē ye are entred into the citie there shal a mā meete you, bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house, that he entred in,

And say vnto the goodman of y^e house, Peace be vnto thee, Where is the lodging, where I shal eat my Pasche with my disciples?

12 Then hee shall shew you a great
chamber trimmed: there make it ready.

13 So they went and found as hee had
sayd vnto the: and made ready the Pasceouer.

14 And when the houre was come, he sat
down and the twelue Apostles with him.

15 Then he said vnto the, I have earnestly
desired to eat this Pasceouer with you, before
I suffer.

16 For I say vnto you, Henceforth I will
not eat of it any more: vntill it be fulfilled in
the kingdom of God.

17 And he tooke the cup, & gaue thanks
& said, Take this, and deuide it among you.

18 For I say vnto you, I will not drink
of the fruit of the vine, vntill the kingdom
of God be come.

19 And he tooke bread, and when hee had
giuen thanks, he brake it, and gaue to them,
saying, This is my body, which is giuen for
you: doe this in the remembrance of me.

20 Likewise also after supper, he tooke the
cup, saying, This cuppe is that new Testament
in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 Yet beholde, the hand of him that
trayeth me, is with me at the table.

22 And truly the Sonne of man goeth
it is appointed: but woe be to that man
whom he is betrayed.

23 The they began to enquire among
selues, which of the it should be, that should
do that.

24 ¶ And there arose also a strife among
them, which of them should seeme to be the
greatest.

25 But he saide vnto them, The kingdome
of the Gentiles reigne over them, & they be-
come their lords, are called bound.

26 But ye shall not be so: but let the greater
among you be as the younger, & the chiefest
as the meane.

among
he that

27 E
table, o

stretch a
that ser

28 A
with m

29 T
dom, as

30 T
table in

judge e

31 ¶
Behold,

you as v

32 I
faith fai

peried, (

33 An
dy to gu

34 B
shal not

denied u

35 ¶
you Wi

hed ye a

36 T
hath a b

scrip: a

coat and

37 Fe
which is

Even wi

doubtles

of me ha

38 An

are two

is enoug

39 ¶

among you be as the least: & the chiefest be that serueth,

27 For who is greater, hee that sitteth at table, or hee that serueth? Is not hee that sitteth at table? And I am among you as hee that serueth.

28 And ye are they which haue continued with me in my tentations.

29 Therefore I appoint vnto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed to me,

30 That yee may eate and drinke at my table in my kingdom, and sit on seats, and iudge the twelve tribes of Israel,

31 ¶ And the Lord sayd, Simon, Simon, Behold, Satan hath desired you, to winnow you as wheat.

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not: therefore when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren,

33 And he sayd vnto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee into prison, and to death,

34 But he sayd, I tel thee, Peter, thy cocke shal not crow this day before thou hast thrise denied that thou knewest me.

35 ¶ And he sayd vnto them, Whē I sent you Without bagge, & scrip, & shooes, lacked ye any thing? And they sayd, Nothing.

36 Then he saide to them, But now he hath a bag, let him take it, and likewise a scrip: and he that hath none let him sell his coat and buy a sword.

37 For I say vnto you, that yet the same which is written, must be performed in me. Even with the wicked was he numbred: for doubtlesse those things which are written of me haue an end.

38 And they sayd, Lorde, beholde, heere are two swords. And he sayd vnto them, It is enough.

39 ¶ And he came out, & went (as he was wont)

to the mount of Olives: and his
also followed him.

40 And when he came to the place, he
said to them, Pray, lest ye enter into tenta-

41 And he was drawen aside from them
and a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and
prayed.

42 Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away
this cup from me, neuerthelesse, not my wil,
but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an Angel vnto
him from heauen, comforting him.

44 But being in an agonie, he prayed more
earnestly: and his sweat was like drops of
blood, trickling downe to the ground.

45 And he arose vp from prayer, & came
to his disciples, and found them sleeping for
soreineesse.

46 And he said vnto them, Why sleepe
ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into tentation.

47 ¶ And while he yet spake, behold, a
company & he that was called Iudas one of
the twelue, went before them, & came vnto
Iesus to kisse him,

48 And Iesus sayd vnto him Iudas, betray-
est thou the Son of man vvith a kisse?

49 Now when they which were about
him, saw what would follow, they sayd vnto
him, Lord, shal we smite with sword?

50 And one of them smote a seruant of
the high priest, and stroke off his right eare.

51 Then Iesus answered, & sayd, Suffe
them thus farre: and he touched his eare, and
healed him,

52 Then Iesus said vnto the high priest and
captains of the temple and the elders which
were come to him Be ye come out as vvith
thiefe vvith svvords and staves?

53 When I vvvas dayly vvith you in the
Temple

Temple, y
gainst me.
power of
54 ¶ T
brought b
ret folov
55 And
f midft of
her, Peter
56 And
saie by th
him sayd,
57 But
know him
58 And
saw him, a
Peter said
59 And
a certaine
this man v
lilean,
60 And P
thou sayest
spake, the c
61 Ther
vpon Peter
of the Lord
fore the coc
thrise.
62 And
63 ¶ An
ked him and
64 And
they smote
aying, Prop
65 And m
spake they
66 And a
of the people
came tog

ye stretched not forth the hands
gainst me: but this is your very houre, and
power of darkenesse.

54 ¶ Then tooke they him, & led him,
brought him to y^e hie Priests house: And Pe-
ter folovved him a farre off.

55 And vvhhen they had kindled a fire in
y^e midft of y^e hal and vvere set downe toge-
ther, Peter also fate downe among them,

56 And a certaine maid beheld him as he
sat by the fire, and hauing vvel looked on
him sayd, This man vvas also vwith him.

57 But hee denied him, saying, Woman, I
knowv him not.

58 And after a litle vvhile, another man
sawv him, and sayd, Thou art also of the. But
Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of an houre after
a certaine other affirmed, saying; Verily ene
this man vvas vwith him: for he is also a Ga-
lilean,

60 And Peter sayd, Mā, I knowv not vvhath
thou sayest. And immediatly vvhile hee yet
spake, the cocke crevv,

61 Then y^e Lord turned backe, & looked
vpon Peter: and Peter, remembred y^e wordes
of the Lord, how he had said vnto him, Be-
fore the cocke crovv, thou shalt deny me
thrice.

62 And Peter went out & wept bitterly,

63 ¶ And the men that held Iesus, moc-
ked him and stroke him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him,
they smote him on the face, and asked him,
saying, Prophecie vvhich it is that smote thee,

65 And many other things blasphemously
spake they against him.

66 And as soone as it was day, the Elders
of the people, & the hie Priests, and the Scri-
bes came together, and led him into their
council,

cil.

67 Saying. Art thou that Christ? tell vs.
And he said vnto them, If I tel, ye will not
beleue it,

68 And if also I aske you, ye wil not an-
swere me, nor let me goe,

69 Hereafter shall \bar{y} Sonne of man sit at
the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then said they al, Art thou then the
Sonne of God? And he said to them, Ye, say
that I am.

71 Then said they, What need wee any
further witnesse? for wee our selues haue
heard it of his owne mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

*1 He is accused before Pilate. 7 He is sent to
Herod, 11 He is mocked 24 Pilate yeeldeth
him vp to the Iewes request.*

Then the whole multitude of the arose,
and led him vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying,
We haue found this man perverting the na-
tion, and forbidding to pay tribute to Cesar,
saying, That he is Christ a king.

3 And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou
 \bar{y} king of the Iewes? And he answered him,
and said, Thou sayest it,

4 Then said Pilate to the hie Priest, and to
the people, I find no fault in this man.

5 But they were the more fierce, saying,
He moueth \bar{y} people, teaching throughout
all Iudea, beginning at Galile, euen to this
place.

6 Now when Pilate heard of Galile, he
asked whether the man were a Galilean,

7 And when he knew that he was of He-
rods iurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, which
was also at Hierusalem in those dayes.

8 And when Herod saw Iesus, he was ex-
ceedingly glad: for he was desirous to see him

CHAP. XXIII

of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and trusted to have seen some signe done by him.

9 Then questioned he with him of many things: but he answered him nothing.

10 The hie Priests also and Scribes stood forth, and accused him vehemently.

11 And Herod with his men of warre, despised him, and mocked him, and araied him in white, and sent him againe to Pilate:

12 And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were enemies one to another.

13 ¶ Then Pilate called together the hie Priests and the rulers, and the people,

14 And sayd vnto them, Ye haue brought this man vnto me as one that perverted the people: & beholde, I haue examined him before you, & haue found no fault in this man, of those things whercof ye accuse him.

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him: & lo, nothing worthy of death is done of him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose.

17 (For of necessity hee must haue let one loose vnto them at the feast)

18 Then all the multitude cried at once, saying, Away with him, and deliuer to vs Barabbas:

19 Which for a certaine insurrection made in the city, and murther, was cast into prison.

20 Then Pilate spake againe to them, willing to let Iesus loose.

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie crucifie him.

22 And he said vnto them the third time, But what euill hath he done? I find no cause of death in him: I wil therefore chastise him,

32 Let him loose.

33 But they were instant with loude voices, & required that he might be crucified: & the voices of them and of the hie priests pre-vailed.

34 So Pilate gaue sentence, y it should be as they required.

35 And hee let loose vnto them him that for insurrection and murther was cast into prison, whom they desired, and deliuered Iesus to doe with him what they would.

36 ¶ And as they led him away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene, comming out of the field, & on him they layd y crosse, to beare it after Iesus.

37 And there folloved him a great multitude of people and of woman, which woman bevvailed and lamented him.

38 But Iesus turned backe vnto them, & sayd, Daughters of Hierusalem, vveep not for me, but vveepe for your selues, and for your children.

39 For beholde the dayes vvill come, when men shal say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombes that neuer bare, & the paps which neuer gaue sucke.

40 Then shall they begin to say to the mountaines, Fal on vs: & to the hilles, Cover vs.

41 For if they doe these things to a greene tree, what shal be done to the dry?

42 And there vv ere t v v o others, which vv ere euil doers, led vv ith him to be slaine.

43 And vv hen they vv ere come to the place, vv hich is called Caluarie: there they crucified him, and the euil doers. one at the right hand, and the other at the left.

44 Then said Iesus, Father, forgive them: for they knowe not vv hat they doe. And he parted his rayment, and cast lots.

35 And the rulers refused other Christ, the

36 The came and

37 And Jewes, saue

38 And over him, i

in Hebrew THE IEW

39 ¶ And were hang

be that Ch

40 But him, saying thou art in

41 We we receiue

done: but t

42 And ber mee. w

dome.

43 Ther vnto thee, Paradise.

44 ¶ A there was

vvail the n

45 And raile of the

46 And yd, Father

spirit. And the ghost.

47 ¶ N was done,

tie that ma

48 And

CHAP. XXIII

35 And the people stood, and beheld: the rulers mocked him with thē, saying, Hee saued others: let him saue himselfe, if he be Christ, the choyse of God.

36 The souldiers also mocked him, and came and offered him vineger.

37 And said, If thou be the king of the Iewes, saue thy selfe,

38 And a superscription was also written ouer him, in Greeke letters, and in Latine, & in Hebrew, THIS IS THAT KING OF THE IEWES.

39 ¶ And one of the euill doers, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be that Christ, saue thy selfe and vs.

40 But the other answered, and rebuked him, saying, Fearest thou not God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 We are indeede righteously here: for we receiue thinges worthy of that we haue done: but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he said vnto Iesus, Lord remember mee, when thou comest into thy kingdome.

43 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

44 ¶ And it was about the sixt houre: & there was a darkennesse ouer al the land, vntil the ninth houre.

45 And the Sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the Temple rent through the middes.

46 And Iesus cryed with a loud voyce, & sayd, Father, into thine hands I commend my spirit. And when he thus had said, he gaue vp the ghost.

47 ¶ Now whē the Centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Of a suretie this man was iust.

48 And al the people that came together

...troubling brethre; and when
...all his acquaintance stood
...woman that followed him
...holding these things.

...and behold, there was a man named
...was a counsellour, a good
...and just.

51 He did not consent to the counsellors
...of them, which was of Arimathæus
...of the Jewes; who also himselfe was
...the kingdom of God.

52 Hee went vnto Pilate, and asked the
...odie of Iesus.

53 And tooke it down, and wrapped it in
...linnen cloth, and laid it in a tombe hewed
...of a rocke, wherein was neuer man yet
...layd.

54 And that day was the preparation, &
...the Sabbath drew on.

55 And y^e women also that followed
...ter, which came with him from Galilee, be-
...held y^e sepulchre, & how his body was layd.

56 And they returned and prepared
...ours, & oyntments, and rested the Sabbath
...ay according to the commandement.

CHAP. XXIII

*The women come to the sepulchre. 9 The
...report that which they heard of the Angels
...unto the Apostles.*

NOwe the first day of the weeke early
...in the morning, they came vnto the
...sepulchre, & brought the odours, which they
...had prepared, and certaine women with them.

1 And they found the stone rolled away
...from the sepulchre,

2 And went in, but found not the body of
...the Lord Iesus.

3 And it came to passe, that as they were
...mused thereat, beholde, two men suddainly
...stood by them.

And as they were affaide, and bowed
the their faces to the earth, they sayde to
him, Why seeke ye him that liueth, among
the dead?

6 He is not here, but is risen: remember
how he spake vnto you, when he was yet in
Galile,

7 Saying, that the Sonne of man must be
deliuered into the hands of sinfull men, & be
crucified, and the third day rise againe.

8 And they remembered his words,

9 And returned from y^e sepulchre, & told
all the things vnto the eleuen, and to all y^e
congregation.

10 Now it was Mary Magdalene & Ioan-
na and Mary the mother of James, and other
women with them, which told these things
vnto the Apostles.

11 But their words seemed vnto them, as
fained thinge, neither beleued they them.

12 Then arose Peter, and ranne vnto the
sepulchre, and looked in, and saw the linnen
clothes laid by the selues, and departed won-
dering in himselfe at that which was come to
pass.

13 ¶ And behold, two of them went that
same day to a town which was frō Hierusa-
lem about threescore furlongs, called Emmaus

14 And they talked together of these
things that were done.

15 And it came to passe, as they communed
together, & reasoned, y^e Iesus himselfe drevv
nigh vnto them, and went vvith them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they
should not know him.

17 And he said vnto them, What manner
communications are these that ye haue
one to another as ye vvalke, and are sad.

18 And the one (named Cleophas) answered

S. LYNE.

And said vnto him, Art thou only a
 Jew in Hierusalem, and hast not knowne
 things which are come to passe therein
 these dayes?

19 And he sayd vnto them, What thing?
 And they sayde vnto him, Of Iesús of Naza-
 reth, which was a Prophet, mighty in deede
 and in word before God and al the people.

20 And how the hie Priests, & our rulers
 deliuered him to be condemned to death, &
 haue crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had bene he that
 should haue deliuered Israel, & as touching
 al these things, to day is y^e third day, y^e they
 were done.

22 Yea, and certaine women among vs
 made vs aſtonied, which came early vnto
 sepulchre.

23 And when they found not his body,
 they came, saying, that they had also seen
 vision of Angels, which saide that he was
 aliue.

24 Therefore certaine of them which were
 with vs, went to the sepulchre, and found
 even so as y^e women had sayd, but him they
 saw not.

25 Thē he sayd vnto them, O fooles, &
 slow of heart to beleue al that the Prophets
 haue spoken.

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these
 things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And he began at Moses, and at all
 Prophets, & interpreted vnto them in al
 Scriptures the things which were written
 of him.

28 And they drew neere vnto y^e towne
 which they went to, but he made as though
 he would haue gone further.

29 But they compſtrayned him, saying,
 abide with vs: for it is toward night, and

CHAP. XXIII.

day is farre spent. So he went in to rary with
them.

30 And it came to passe as he sate at table
with them, he tooke the bread, & blessed, &
broke it, and gaue it to them.

31 Then their eyes vvere opened, & they
knew him : and he vvas no more seene of
them.

32 And they sayde betweene themselves,
Did not our hearts burne vwithin vs, while
hee talked vwith vs by the vway, and vvhile he
opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they rose vp y same houre, & re-
turned to Hierusalem, and found the Eleuen
gathered together, and them that were with
them.

34 Which said, The Lord is risen in deede,
& hath appeared to Simon.

35 Then they told vwhat things were done
in the vway, and howv he vvas knowven of
them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ And as they spake these things, Iesus
himselfe stood in the mids of them, and said
vnto them, Peace be to you.

37 But they vvere abashed & afraid, sup-
posing that they had seene a spirit.

38 Then he said vnto them, Why are ye
troubled? and wherefore doe doubts arise in
your hearts.

39 Behold mine handes and my feete: for
it is I my selfe: handle mee, and see: for a spi-
rit hath not flesh and bones, as yee see me
haue,

40 And vwhen he had thus spoken, hee
shewed them his handes and feete.

41 And vvhile they yet beleued not for
joy, and vvondered, he said vnto the, Haue
ye here any meat?

42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled
fish, and of an hony combe.

S. IOHN.

43 And hee tooke it, and did eate be-
them.

44 And he said vnto them, These are the
words, which I spake vnto you while I was
yet with you, that al must be fulfilled which
are written of mee in the Law of Moyses, and
in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes.

45 Then opened he their vnderstanding,
that they might vnderstand the Scriptures.

46 And said vnto them, Thus it is writ-
ten, & thus is behoued Christ to suffer, and to rise
again from the dead the third day,

47 And that repentance and remission of
sinnes shoulde bee preached in his Name a-
mong al nations, beginning at Hierusalem.

48 Now ye are witnesses of these things.

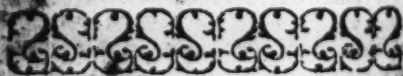
49 And behold, I doe send the promise of
my Father vpon you: but tary ye in the citie
of Hierusalem, vntil ye be endued with pow-
er from on hie.

50 Afterward he led them out into Be-
thania, and lift vp his hands, and blessed the.

51 And it came to passe, that as he blessed
them, he departed from them, and was carri-
ed vp into heauen.

52 And they worshipped him, and return-
ed to Hierusalem with great ioy,

53 And were continually in the Temple
praying, and lauding God, Amen.



THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS
Christ, according to Iohn.

CHAP. I.

1 That Word begottē of God before al world
2 and which was ewer with the Father,
3 is made man.

In the beginning was that Word, & that Word was with God, and that Word was God.

2 This same was in the beginning with God.

3 All things were made by it, & without it was made nothing that was made.

4 In it was life, and γ life was that light of men.

5 And that light shineth in the darkenes, and the darkenesse comprehended it not.

6 ¶ There was a man sent frō God, whose name was Iohn.

7 This same came for a witnesse, to beare witnesse of that light, that all men through him might beleue.

8 Hee was not that light, but was sent to beare witnesse of that light.

9 This was that true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

10 He was in γ world, & the world was not by him: and the world knew him not.

11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not.

12 But as many as receiued him, to them he gaue prerogative to be the sonnes of God, vnto them that beleene in his Name.

13 Which are borne not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the wil of man, but of God.

14 And that Word was made flesh, and dwelt among vs, (& we saw the glory thereof, as the glory of the only begotten, Sonne of the Father) full of grace and truerth.

15 ¶ Iohn bare witnesse of him, & cryed, saying, This was he of whom I said, He that cometh after me, was before me: for hee was better then I.

16 And of his fulnesse haue all we receiued, and grace for grace.

17 For the Lawe was giuen by Moyses,
and truth came by Iesus Christ.

18 No man hath seene God at any time,
that only begotten Sonne, which is in the
bosome of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ Then this is the record of Iohn, who
the Iewes sent Priest & Leuites from Hieru-
salem, to aske him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed and denied not, and
sayde plainely, I am not that Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art
thou Elias? And he saide, I am not. Art
thou that Prophet? And he answered, No.

22 Then saide they vnto him, Whom
thou, that wee may giue an answer to them
that sent vs? what sayest thou of thy selfe?

23 He said, I am y^e voyce of him y^e cryeth
in the wilderness, Make straight the way of
the Lord, as said the Prophet Esaias.

24 Nowe they which were sent, were of
y^e Pharises.

25 And they asked him, and saide vnto
him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not
y^e Christ, neither Elias, nor that Prophet?

26 Iohn answered the, saying, I baptize
with water: but there is one among you, whom
ye know not,

27 He it is that cometh after me, which
was before me, whose shoe latchet I am not
worthy to vnloose.

28 These things were done in Bethabai
beyond Iordan, where Iohn did baptize.

29 ¶ The next day Iohn seeth Iesus com-
ming vnto him, & sayth. Behold y^e Lamb of
God, which taketh away the sin of y^e world.

30 This is hee of whom I said, After me
cometh a man, which was before me: for he
was better then I.

31 And I knew him not: but because he
shoulde be declared to Israel, therefore am I
come.

John bare record, saying, I beheld
the Spirit come downe from heauen, like a
dove, and it abode vpon him,

33 And I knew him not: but he that sent
me to baptise with water, he said vnto me,
Vpon whom thou shalt see that Spirit come
down, and tary still on him, that is he which
baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw, and bare recorde that this
is the Sonne of God.

35 ¶ The next day, Iohn stood againe &
two of his disciples:

36 And he beheld Iesus walking by, and
said, Behold that Lambe of God.

37 And ¶ two disciples heard him speak,
and followed Iesus.

38 Then Iesus turned a bout, & saw them
follow, and said vnto them. What seeke ye?
And they sayde vnto him Rabbi, (which is
to say by interpretatiō, master) where dwel-
lest thou?

39 He said vnto them. Come and se. They
came and saw where he dwelt, & abode w
him that day : for it was about the tenth
houre.

40 Andrevve, Simon Peters brother, was
one of the two which had heard it of Iohn,
and that folovved him.

41 The same found his brother Simon
first, and said vnto him. We haue found that
Messias, which is by interpretation, ¶ Christ.

42 And he brought him to Iesus. And Ie-
sus behelde him, and said, Thou art Simon the
sonne of Iona: thou shalt be called Cephas,
which is by interpretacion, a stone.

43 ¶ The day followving, Iesus would
goe into Galile, and found Philip, and saide
vnto him, Follow me,

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, ¶ a citie

of Andrew and Peter,

45 Philip found Nathanael, and saide vnto him, We haue found him of whom Moses did write in the Lawe, and the Prophets Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, that was of Nazareth.

46 Then Nathanael saide vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip sayd to him, Come and see.

47 Iesus saw Nathanael comming to him, and sayde of him, Beholde, in deede an Israélite, in whome is no guile.

48 Nathanael saide vnto him, Whence knewest thou me? Iesus answered, and saide vnto him, Before γ Philip called thee, when thou wast vnder the figtree, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered, & saide vnto him Babbi, thou art that sonne of God: thou art that King of Israel.

50 Iesus answered, and saide vnto him, Because I said vnto thee, I sawe thee vnder γ figtree, beleuest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.

51 And he said vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto you, heereafter shall yee see heauen open, and the Angells of God ascending and descending vpon that Sonne of man.

CHAP. II.

1 *Christ turneth water into wine, 11 which was the beginning of his miracles.*

ANd the third day, was there a marriage in Cana a town of Galile, & the mother of Iesus was there.

2 And Iesus was called also, & his disciples vnto the marriage.

3 Now when the wine failed, the mother of Iesus saide vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Iesus said vnto her, Woman, what haue I to do wth thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother said vnto γ seruants, What soeuer he

6 And
out of
ing of the
first a p
7 And
pots with
to the b r
8 Ther
and beare
they bare
9 Now
had tasted
(for he k
mans wh
pernour o
10 An
gioning
haue wel
but thou
til now.
11 Th
in Cana,
his glory
12 Af
mum, he
and his d
ny dayes
13 Fo
Therfore
14 An
solde oxe
gers of m
15 Th
des, and
the shee
changers
16 An
Take the
house, an

And he saith vnto you, doe it.

6 And there were set there fixe water
pots of stone, after the maner of the purify-
ing of the Iewes, containing two or three
firkins a peece.

7 And Iesus said vnto the, Fill the water-
pots with water. Then they filled them vp
to the brim.

8 Then he said vnto the, Draw out now
and beare vnto the gouernour of the feast. So
they bare it.

9 Nowe when the gouernour of the feast
had tasted the water that was made wine,
(for he knewe not whence it was: but the ser-
uants which drew the water, knew) the go-
uernour of the feast called the bridegrome,

10 And said vnto him, All men at the be-
ginning set forth good wine, and when men
haue wel drunke, then that which is woorse:
but thou hast kept backe the good wine vntil
now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus
in Cana, a town of Galile, & showed forth
his glory: and his disciples beleued on him.

12 After that, he went down into Caper-
naim, hee and his mother, and his brethren,
and his disciples, but they continued not ma-
ny dayes there.

13 For the Iewes Passecouer was at hand.
Therefore Iesus yvent vp to Hierusalem.

14 And he found in the Temple those that
solde oxen, and sheepe, and doves, and chan-
gers of money, sitting there.

15 Then he made a scourge of small cor-
des, and draue them all out of the Temple
with the sheepe and oxen, and poured out the
changers money, and overthrew the tables,

16 And saide vnto them that sold doves,
Take these things hence: make not my fathers
house, an house of merchandise.

17 And his disciples heard him say
written, The zeale of thine house hath
me vp.

18 Then answered the Iewes, and
said vnto him, What signe shewest thou
that thou doest these things?

19 Iesus answered and saide vnto
them, Destroy this Temple, & in three dayes I
will raise it vp again.

20 Then said the Iewes, Forty and
six yerres was this Temple a building, and
thou reare it vp in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the Temple of his
body.

22 As soone therefore as he was risen
from the dead, his disciples remembred that he
had sayde vnto them: and they beleued the
Scripture, & the word which Iesus had
sayd.

23 Now when he was at Hierusalem,
at the Pasche in the feast, many beleued
in his Name, when they sawe his miracles
which he did,

24 But Iesus did not commit himselfe
vnto them, because he knew them al,

25 And had no neede that any should
testifie of man: for he knew what was in
man.

CHAP. III.

2 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the very
principles of Christian regeneration.

THere was nowe a man of the Pharisees
named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iewes.

3 This man came to Iesus by night, and
said vnto him Rabbi, we know that thou art
a teacher come from God: for no man could
doe these miracles which thou doest, except God
were with him.

4 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Verily,
verily I say vnto thee, except a man be
borne againe, he cannot see the kingdome of
God,

4 Nicodemus

borne which is old? can hee enter into
his mothers wombe againe, & bee borne?
Iesus answered, Verily, verily I say vn-
to thee, except that a man be borne of water
& of the Spirit he cannot enter into the king-
dom of God.

7 That which is borne of $\bar{\gamma}$ flesh, is flesh
and that that is borne of the Spirit, is spirit.

8 Marvyle not that I saide to thee, Yee
must be borne againe.

9 The vvinde blowveth vvhere it listeth,
and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst
not tel vvhen it commeth, and vvither it
goeth: so is euery mā $\bar{\gamma}$ is born of the Spirit.

10 Nicodemus answered, & said vnto him
How can these things be?

11 Iesus answered, and saide vnto him,
Although a teacher of Israel, & knowest not
these things?

12 Verily verily I say vnto thee, vvee
speake that vve know, and testifie that vvee
haue seene: but ye receiue not our vvitness,

13 If vvhe I tel you earthly things, ye be-
leeue not, howe should ye beleene, if I shall
tell you of heavenly things?

14 For no man ascendeth vp to heauen,
but he that hath descended from heauen, $\bar{\gamma}$
Sonne of man vvhich is in heauen.

15 And as Moses lift vp the serpent in $\bar{\gamma}$
vvildernesse, so must that Sonne of man bee
lift vp,

16 That vvhofoeuer beleueth in him,
should not perish, but haue euerslasting life.

17 For God so loped the vvorld, that he
hath giuen his only begotten Son that vvho-
foeuer beleueth in him, should not perish,
but haue euerslasting life.

18 For God sent not his Sonne into the
vvorld, that he should condemne the vvorld
but

but that the world through him
condemned.

18 Hee that beleueth in him, is not
condemned: but he that beleueth not, is
condemned already, because he hath not
believed in the Name of that only begotten
of God.

19 And this is the condemnation that
light came into the world & mē loued
darknes rather then y light, because their
deeds were euil,

20 For euery man that euil doeth, hateth
the light, neither cometh to light, lest his
deedes should be reprobued.

21 But he that doth trueth, cometh to
the light, that his deedes might bee
manifest that they are wrought according to God.

22 After these things came Iesus and his
disciples into the lande of Iudea, and there
taught with them and baptized.

23 And Iohn also baptized in Enon
beside Salim, because there was much water
there: and they came and were baptized.

24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.

25 Then there arose a question between
Iohns disciplos & the Iewes, about purifying.

26 And they came vnto Iohn, and
said vnto him, Rabbi, hee that was with thee
beyond Iordan, to whom thou bearest witness
behold, he baptizeth, and al mē come to him.

27 Iohn answered, and saide, A man
receiue nothing, except it be giuen him from
heauen.

28 Ye your selues are my witnesse, & I said
I am not that Christ, but that I am sent
before him.

29 He that hath the bride, is y bridegrome
but the friend of the bridegrome which
standeth, and heareth him, reioyceth greatly
because of the bridegromes voyces. This

CHAP. III.

Therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I *must* decrease.

31 He that is come from an high, is above all: he that is of the earth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth: he that is come from heaven, is above all.

32 And what he hath seene and heard, *ſ* he testifieth: but no man receiveth his testimony.

33 He that hath received his testimony, hath sealed that God is true.

34 For he whom God hath ſet, ſpeaketh the words of God: for God giveth him not the Spirit by measure,

35 The Father loveth the Sonne, & hath given all things into his hand,

36 He that believeth in the Sonne, hath everlasting life, and hee that obeyeth not the ſon, ſhall not ſee life, but the wrath of God abide on him.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *I*esus being wearie asketh drinke of *ſ* woman of Samaria, 21 He teacheth the true worship.

Nowe when the Lorde knew, howe the Pharisees had heard that Iesus made, & baptized more disciples then Iohn,

2 (Though Iesus himſelfe baptized not: but his disciples)

3 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galile.

4 And he must needs go through Samaria

5 Then came he to a citie of Samaria, called Sychar, neere vnto the possession that Iacob gave to his sonne Iosaph,

6 And there was Iacobs well, Iesus then tarried in the iourney: ſate thus on the well: was about the ſixt houre.

There came a woman of Samaria to draw water. Iesus ſaid vnto her. Give me drinke.

§. IOHN.

8 For his disciples were gone away into the citie, to buy meate.

9 Then saide the woman of Samaria vnto him, How is it, that thou being a Iew, askst drinke of me, which am a vvoman of Samaria? For the Iewes meddle not with the Samaritanes.

10 Iesus answered & said vnto her, If thou knewest that gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Giue me drinke, that wouldest haue asked of him, & he would haue giuen thee water of life.

11 The woman saide vnto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to drawe with, and the well is deepe: from whence then hast thou y^e water of life?

12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue vs the wel, and hee himselfe dranke thereof, and his sonnes, and his camel?

13 Iesus answered, & said vnto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water, shall thirst no more:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall giue him, shal neuer be more thirsty: but the water that I shall giue him, shal be in him a well of water springing vp into everlasting life.

15 The woman said vnto him, Sir, giue me of y^e water, y^e I may not thirst, neither come hither to draw.

16 Iesus said vnto her, Goe cal thy husband, and come hither.

17 The vvoman answered, & said, I haue no husband. Iesus said vnto her. Thou hast wel saide, I haue no husband.

18 For thou hast had five husbands, & he whom thou now hast, is not thine husband: that saidest thou truly.

19 The vvoman saide vnto him, Sir, I

CHAP. IIIE

But thou art a Prophet.

20 Our fathers vvorshipped in this mountaine, and ye say, that in Hierusalem is the place where men ought to worship,

21 Iesus said vnto her, Woman, beleeue mee the houre commeth, when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor at Hierusalem worship the Father.

22 Ye worship $\bar{\gamma}$ which ye know not: we vvorship $\bar{\gamma}$ vvhich vve knowv: for saluation is of the Iewes.

23 But the houre commeth, and nowv is, vwhen the true worshipper shall vvorship $\bar{\gamma}$ father in spirite & trueth: for the Father requireth euen such to vvorship him,

24 God is a spirite, and they $\bar{\gamma}$ vvorship him, must vvorship him in spirit and trueth.

25 The vvoman said vnto him, I knowv wel that Meſias ſhall come vvhich is called Chriſt: vwhen he is come, he vvill tell vs all things.

26 Iesus ſayd vnto her, I am he $\bar{\gamma}$ ſpeake vnto thee.

27 ¶ And vpon that came his diſciples, & marvelled $\bar{\gamma}$ he talked vvith a vvoma yet no man ſaid vnto him, What aſkeſt thou? or vvhy talkeſt thou vvith her.

28 The vvoman then left her vvaterpot, & vvent her vvay into the citie, & ſaid to $\bar{\gamma}$ me

29 Come, ſee a man vvhich hath told me al things that euer I did: is not he $\bar{\gamma}$ Chriſt?

30 Then they vvent out of $\bar{\gamma}$ citie, & came vnto him.

31 ¶ In the meane vvhile, the diſciples praied him ſaying, Maſter, eate.

32 But he ſaid vnto them, I haue meate to eate that ye knowv not of.

33 Then ſaid the diſciples betweene themſelves, Hath any man brought him meate?

34 Iesus ſaid vnto them, My meate is, that

I may do the will of him that sent me
finish his worke.

35 Say not ye, There are yet foure moneths
and *then* commeth harvest? Behold, I say
to you, Lift vp your eyes, and looke on the
regions: for they are white alreadie vnto
harvest.

36 And he \bar{y} reapeth, receiveth reward,
& gathereth fruit vnto life eternal, that both
he that soweth, and he that reapeth, might
reioyce together.

37 For herein is the saying true, that one
soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reape that, whereon ye
bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and
ye are entred into their labours,

39 Now many of the Samaritans of that
city beleued in him, for the saying of the
woman which testified. He hath told me all
things that euer I did.

40 Then when \bar{y} Samaritanes were come
vnto him, they besought him; that he would
tarie with them: and he abode there two
dayes.

41 And manie more beleued because of his
owne worde.

42 And they said vnto the woman, Now
wee beleue, not because of thy saying: for
we haue heard him our selues, and knowe
this is indeede that Christ the Saviour of the
world.

43 ¶ So two dayes after he departed
thence, and went into Galilee.

44 For Iesus himselfe had testified that
Prophet hath none honour in his own coun-
trei.

45 Then when he was come into Galilee,
the Galileians receiued him, which had seen
all the things that he did at Hierusalem at
feast: for they went also vnto the feast,

CHAP. V.

And Iesus came againe into, Cana, a
towne of Galile, where he had made of wa-
ter wine. And there was a certaine ruler,
whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum.

47 When hee heard that Iesus was come
out of Iudea into Galile, he went vnto him,
and besought him that he would go downe
and heale his son: for he was euen ready to
die.

48 Then Iesus said vnto him, Except yee
see signes and wonders, ye will not belceue

49 The ruler said vnto him, Sir, go down
before my sonne die.

50 Iesus said vnto him, Go thy way, thy
sonne liueth: & the man belcened the words
that Iesus had spoken vnto him, and went
his way.

51 And as he was now going downe, his
seruants met him, saying, Thy sonne liueth.

52 Then enquired hee of them the houre
when he began to amende. And they sayde
vnto him, Yester day the seuenh houre the
boyer left him.

53 Then the father knew that it was the
same houre in which Iesus had saide vnto
him, Thy sonne liueth, And he beleueed, and
in his household.

54 This second miracle did Iesus againe,
after he was come out of Iudea into Galile.

CHAP. V.

*One lying at the poole. 5 is healed of Christ
on the Sabbath. 10. The lewes rashly finde
fault with that his dede.*

After that there was a feast of γ Iewes
and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

And there is at Hierusalem by the place
of sheepe, a poole called in Ebrew Bethesda
hauing five porches.

In the which laye a great multitude of
folke, of blind, halt, & withered, waiting

for the moving of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a season into the poole, and troubled the water: whosoever then first, after that the water, stepped in, was made whole, whatsoeuer disease he had.

5 And a certaine man was there, which had bin diseased eight and thirty years.

6 When Iesus saw him lie, & knew how long time he had bene diseased, he said vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The sick man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole, but while I am coming, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus saide vnto him, Rise, take vp thy bed and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed, and walked. The same day was the Sabbath.

10 The Iewes therefore said to him, It is the Sabbath day: it is not lawful for thee to cary thy bed.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, he said vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man said that which said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and walke?

13 And hee that was healed, knew not who it was: for Iesus had conueyed himself away from the multitude, & was in another place.

14 And after that, Iesus found him in the Temple, and sayd vnto him, Beholde, thou art made whole: sinne no more, least a worse thing come vnto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Iewes, that it was Iesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore the Iewes did persecute him.

...and sought to slay him, because he
...these things on the Sabbath day.

But Iesus answered them, My Father
...hitherto, and I worke.

Therefore the Iewes sought the more
...him: not onely because he had broken
...Sabbath: but said also that God was his
...father, and made himselfe equall with

Then answered Iesus, and saide vnto
...Verely, verely I say vnto you. The Son
...do nothing of himselfe, saue that he se-
...the Father doe: for whatsoeuer things he
...doth, the same things doth the Son in like
...manner.

30 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and
...sheweth him al things, whatsoeuer he him-
...doth, & he wil shew him greater works
...these, that ye should marueile.

31 For likewise as the Father rayseth vp
...the dead, and quickeneth them, so the Sonne
...quickeneth whom he will.

32 For the Father iudgeth no man, but
...hath committed all iudgement vnto the Son.

33 Because that al men should honor the
...Sonne as they honour γ Father: he that ho-
...ureth not the Sonne, the same honoreth not
...the father, which hath sent him.

34 Verely, verely I say vnto you, he that
...heareth my worde, and beleueth him that
...sent me, hath euermoring life, and shall not
...come into condemnation, but hath passed fro
...death vnto life.

35 Verely, verely I saye vnto you, the
...more shall come, and now is, when the dead,
...shall heare the voyce of the Sonne of God:
...and they that heare it, shall liue.

36 For as the Father hath life in himself
...likewise hath hee giuen to the Sonne to
...life in himselfe,

27 And hath given him power to execute iudgement, in that he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marraile not at this: for the houre shall come in the which all that are in the graues shall heare his voyce.

29 And they shall come forth, that haue done good vnto the resurrection of life: but they that haue done euill, vnto the resurrection of condemnation.

30 I can do nothing of mine owne self: as I heare I iudge: and my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not mine owne will, but the wil of the Father which hath sent me.

31 If I should beare witnesse of my self, my witnesse were not true.

32 There is another that beareth witnesse of mee, and I know that the witnes which he beareth of me, is true.

33 Ye sent vnto Iohn, and he bare witnesse vnto the truth.

34 But I receiue not the record of man: neuerthelesse these things I saye, that yet might be saued.

35 He was a burning, and a shining candle: and yee would for a season haue reioyced in his light.

36 But I haue greater witnes then the witnes of Iohn: for the workes which the Father hath giuen mee to finish, the same workes that I doe, beare witnes of mee, that the Father sent me.

37 And the Father himselfe which hath sent me, beareth witnes of me. Yee haue not heard his voyce at any time, neither haue ye seene his shape.

38 And this word haue ye not abiding in you: for whō he hath sent, him ye beleue not.

39 Search the Scriptures: for in them yee thinke to haue eternal life, and they are they

40 But you will not come to me, that yee might haue life.

41 I receiue not prayse of men.

42 But I know you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you,

43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and ye receiue me not: if another shal come in his owne name, him wil ye receiue,

44 How can yee beleue, which receiue honour one of another, and seeke not the honour that commeth of God alone?

45 Doe not thinke that I will accuse you to my Father: there is one that accuseth you, *euē* Moses in whom ye trust.

46 For had ye beleueed Moses, ye would haue beleueed me: for he wrote of me.

47 But if ye beleue not his writings, how shal ye beleue my words?

CHAP. VI.

5 *Five thousand are fedde with fīue loaves & two fishes. 15. Christ goeth apart frō y people*

After these things, Iesus went his waye ouer y sea of Galile, which is Tiberias

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 Then Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there sate with his disciples,

4 Now the Passouer, a feast of the Iewes was neere.

5 Then Iesus liſt vp *his* eyes, and seeing that a great multitude came vnto him, hee said vnto Philip, Whēce shall vve buy bread that these might eate?

6 (And this he said to prooue him: for he himselfe knew what he would doe)

7 Philip answered him, Tvvō hundreth peniworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that euerie one of them may take a litle.

R 3 8 Then

8 Then said vnto him one of his disciples
Andrew, Simon Peters brother.

9 There is a little boy here, which hath
fue barley loaves, and two fishes: but what
are they among so many?

10 And Iesus saide, Make the people sit
downe. (Now there was much grasse in that
place.) Then the men sate downe in number
about five thousand.

11 And Iesus tooke the bread, and gaue
thanked, and gaue to the disciples, and the di-
sciples to them that were set downe: & like-
wise of the fishes as much as they would.

12 And when they were satisfied, he said
vnto his disciples, Gather vp $\frac{1}{2}$ broken meate
which remaineth, that nothing be lost.

13 Then they gathered it together, & fil-
led twelue baskets with the broken meate
of the fue barley loaves, which remained
vnto them that had eaten.

14 Then the men, when they had seene
the myracle that Iesus did, saide, This is of a
truth that Prophet that should come into
the world.

15 When Iesus therefore perceived that
they would come, & take him to make him
a King, he departed again into a mountain
himselfe alone.

16 ¶ When euen was now come, his di-
sciples went downe vnto the Sea,

17 And entred into a ship, and went o-
uer the Sea towarde Capernaum: and now it
was darke, and Iesus was not come to them.

18 And the Sea arose with a great winde
that blew.

19 And when they had rowed about five
and twenty or thirty furlongs, they saw Ie-
sus walking on the sea, and drawing nere
vnto the ship: so they were afraide.

20 But he saide vnto them, it is I: be not
afraid.

21 Then willingly they receiued him in
the ship, and the ship was by and by at y
land, whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, the people which
stood on the other side of the Sea, sawe that
there was none other ship there, saue that
of whereinto his disciples were entred, &
that Iesus wente not with his disciples in y
ship, but that his disciples were gone alone.

23 And that there came other ships from
Tiberias, neere vnto the place where they see
the bread, after the Lord had giuen thanks.

24 Now when the people saw that Iesus
was not there, neither his disciples, they also
tooke shipping, & came to Capernaum, see-
king for Iesus.

25 And when they had found him on the
other side of the Sea, they saide vnto him,
Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Iesus answered them, and said, Verely,
verely I say vnto you: yee seeke mee not be-
cause ye saw the miracles, but because ye ate
of the loaves and were filled,

27 Labour not for the meate which peri-
sheth, but for the meate that endureth vnto
euermoring life, which the Sonne of mā shal
giue vnto you: for him hath God the Father
sealed.

28 Then said they vnto him, what shal we
do, that we might worke the works of God?

29 Iesus answered, & saide vnto them,
This is the worke of God, that ye beleue in
him, whom he hath sent,

30 They said therefore vnto him, What
signe shewest thou then, that we may see it,
and beleue thee? What doest thou worke?

31 Our Fathers did eate Manna in the
desert, as it is written, Hee gaue them bread
from heauen to eate.

32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, Moses gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you that true bread from heauen,

33 For the bread of God is hee which cometh downe from heauen, & giueth life vnto the world.

34 Then they said vnto him, Lord, euer more giue vs this bread.

35 And Iesus saide vnto them, I am that bread of life: hee that cometh to mee, shall not hunger, and he that beleeueth in me, shall neuer thirst.

36 But I sayd vnto you, that ye also haue seene me, and beleeue not.

37 All that the father giueth mee, shall come to me: and him that cometh to me, I cast not away.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to do mine own wil, but his wil which hath sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent mee, that of all which he hath giuen mee, I should loose nothing but should raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that euery man which seeth the Sonne, & beleeueth in him, should haue euermore life: and I wil raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because he said, I am that bread, which is come downe from heauen.

42 And they saide, is not this Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother we know? how then saith he, I came downe from heauen?

43 Iesus then answered and saide vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.

44 No man can come to mee, except the Father, which hath sent me, draw him: & I

45 they
there
of the
46
ther,
the F
47
belee
48
49
wilde
50
down
it, the
51
down
bread
that
giue
52
selue
flesh
53
verel
flesh
blood
54
keth
raise
55
blood
56
my b
57
so lin
me, e
58
from

will raise him vp at the last day.

45 It is written in the Prophets. And they shall be all taught of God. Euery man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me.

46 Not that any man hath seene the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seene the Father.

47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that beleeueth in me, hath euerlasting life.

48 I am that breed of life.

49 Your fathers did eate Manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

50 This is that bread which commeth downe from heauen, that he which eateth of it, should not die.

51 I am that liuing bread, which came downe from heauen. If any man eate of this bread: hee shall liue for euer: and the bread that I will giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the world.

52 Then the Iewes stroue among themselves, saying, How can this man giue vs his flesh to eate?

53 Then Iesus saide vnto them, Verely, verely I saye vnto you, Except yee eate the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, ye haue no life in you.

54 Whosoever eateth my flesh, & drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him vp at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meate in deed, & my blood is drinke in deede.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As that liuing Father hath sent mee, so liue I by the Father, and hee that eateth me, euen he shall liue by me.

58 This is the bread which came downe from heauen: not as your fathers haue eaten
Manna

Manna and are dead. Hee that eateth
bread shall live for ever.

59 These things spake hee in the Syna-
gogue, as he taught in Capernaum,

60 Many therefore of his disciples (which
they heard this) said, This is an hard saying:
who can heare it:

61 But Iesus knowing in himselfe, that
his disciples murmured at this, said vnto the
Doth this offend you?

62 What then if ye should see that Son
of man ascend vp where he was before?

63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth: the
Flesh profiteth nothing: the wordes that I
speake vnto you, are spirit and life.

64 But there are some of you that beleeue
not: for Iesus knew frō the beginning, which
they were that beleeued not, and who should
betray him.

65 And he sayde, Therefore saide I vnto
you, that no man can come vnto me, except it
be giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 From that time many of his disciples
went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then saide Iesus to the twelue, Will
ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Ma-
ster, to whome shall wee goe? thou hast the
wordes of eternal life:

69 And we beleeue and know that thou
art that Christ that Son of the liuing God,

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I cho-
sen you twelue, and one of you is a deuil?

71 Now he spake it of Iudas Iscariot the
sonne of Simō: for he it was that should be-
tray him, though he was one of the twelue.

CHAP. VII.

3 Christ after his cosins were gone vnto the
feast of Tabernacles, goeth thither pryncipally.

For these things, Iesus walked in Galile, and would not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes sought to kill him.

2 Nowe the Iewesfeast of the Tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore saide vnto him, Depart thence, and goe into Iudea, that thy disciples may see thy works that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doth any thing secretly, & he himselfe seeketh to be famous. If thou doest these things, shew thy selfe to the world.

5 For as yet his brethren beleueed not in him.

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you: but mee it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the works thereof are euill.

8 Goe ye vp vnto this feast: I wil not go vp yet vnto this feast: for my time is not yet fulfilled.

9 & These things he said vnto them, & abode still in Galile.

10 But as soone as his brethren were gone vp, then went he also vp vnto the feast, not openly, but as it were priuily.

11 Then the Iewes sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And much murmuring was there of him among the people. Some said, he is a good mā: other sai, nay, but he deceiueth y people.

13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him, for feare of the Iewes.

14 Now when halfe the feast was done, Iesus went vp into the Temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, How knoweth this man the Scriptures, seeing that he neuer learned?

16 Iesus answered them, and said, My doctrine

doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will doe his wil, hee shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.

18 Hee that speaketh of himselfe, seeketh his owne glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no vnrighteousnes is in him.

19 Did not Moses giue you a Law, & yet none of you keepeth the Law? Why goe yee about to kill me?

20 The people answered and sayd, Thou hast a deuill: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Iesus answered and saide vnto them, I haue done one worke, and ye all maruaile.

22 Moses therefore giue vnto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers) and yee on the Sabbath day circumsise a man.

23 If a man on the Sabbath receiue circumcision, that the Law of Moses should not be broken, be yee angry with mee, because I haue made a man enery whit whole on the Sabbath day?

24 Iudge not according to the appearance, but iudge righteous iudgement.

25 ¶ Then said some of them of Hierusalem, Is not this he whom they go about to kill

26 And beholde, he speaketh openly, and they say nothing to him: do the rulers know indeede that this is indeede that Christ?

27 Howbeit vve know this man whence he is: but when that Christ cometh, no man shall know whence he is.

28 ¶ Then cryed Iesus in the Temple as he taught, saying, Yee both know mee, and knowe whence I am: yet am I not come of my selfe, but he that sent me, is true, whome ye know not.

29 But I know him: for I am of him, and

he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him, but no man layde handes on him, because his houre was not yet come.

31 Now many of the people beleued in him, and saide, When that Christ commeth, will he do moe miracles then this man hath done?

32 The Pharises heard y^e the people murmured these things of him, & the Pharises, and high Priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then saide Iesus vnto them, Yet am I a little while with you, and then go I vnto him that sent me.

34 Yee shall seeke me, and shal not finde me, and where I am, can ye not come.

35 Then said y^e Iewes among themselues, Whither wil he go, y^e we shal not finde him? Wil he goe vnto them that are disperse among the Grecians, and teach the Grecians?

36 What saying is this that he saide, Yee shal seeke mee, and shall not finde me? and where I am, can ye not come?

37 Now in the last and great day of the feast, Iesus stood and cryed, saying, If any man thirst, let him come vnto me, & drinke.

38 He that beleueth in me, as saith the Scripture, out of his belly shall flow riuers of water of life.

39 (This spake hee of the Spirit, which they that beleued in him, should receiue: for the holy Ghost was not yet giuen, because that Iesus was not yet glorified.)

40 So many of the people, when they heard this saying, said, Of a trueth this is y^e Prophet.

41 Other saide, This is that Christ: and some said, But shall that Christ come out of Galile?

42 Saith not the Scripture, that that Christ

Christ shall come of the seede of David
out of the towne of Bethlechem, where he
was?

43 So was there dissention among the
people for him.

44 And some of them would have taken
him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 Then came the officers to γ his Priests
and Pharises, and they said vnto them, Why
haue ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Neuer man
spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharises,
Are ye also deceiued?

48 Doeth any of the rulers or of the Pha-
rises beleue in him?

49 But this people which knowe not the
Lawe, are cursed.

50 Nicodemus sayd vnto them, (he that
came to Iesus by night, and was one of the)

51 Doeth our Lawe iudge a man before
it heare him, and know what he hath done?

52 They answered & said vnto him, Art
thou also of Galile? Search and looke: for out
of Galile ariseth no Prophet.

53 And euery man went vnto his owne
house.

CHAP. VIII.

3 *The woman taken in adulterie, 11 hath her
sins forgiven her. 12 Christ the light of γ world*

AND Iesus went vnto the mount of O-
liues,

2 And early in the morning came againe
into the Temple, and all the people came vn-
to him, and he sate downe, and taught them.

3 Then the Scribes & γ Pharises brought
vnto him a woman taken in adulterie, and
set her in the middes,

4 And said vnto him, Master, wee founde
this woman committing adulterie, euen in
the

they aske.

Now Moses in our Lawe commanded,
that such should be stoned: what sayest thou
therefore?

6 And this they said to tempt him, that
they might haue whereof to accuse him. But
Iesus stouped downe, and with his finger
wrote on the ground.

7 And while they continued asking him,
he lift himselfe vp, and said vnto them, Let
him that is among you without sinne, cast the
first stone at her.

8 And againe he stouped downe, & wrote
on the ground.

9 And when they heard it, being accused
by their own conscience, they went out one
by one beginning at the eldest euen to the
last: so Iesus was left alone, and the woman
standing in the middes.

10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe againe
and saw no man, but the woman, he said vn-
to her, Woman, where are those thine accu-
sers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And Iesus said,
Neither do I condemne thee: goe and sinne
no more?

12 Then spake Iesus againe vnto them,
saying, I am that light of the world: he that
followeth me, shall not walke in darknesse,
but shall haue that light of life.

13 The Pharises therefore said vnto him,
Thou bearest recorde of thy selfe: thy record
is not true.

14 Iesus answered, and saide vnto them,
Though I beare recorde of my selfe, yet my
record is true: for I know whence I came, &
whither I goe: but ye cannot tel whence I
come, and whither I goe.

15 Ye iudge after the flesh; I iudge no
man,

3. JOHN.

16 And if I also iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone: but, I and the Father that sent me.

17 And it is also written in your Lawe, that the testimonie of two men is true.

18 I am one that beare witnesse of my selfe, and the Father that sent mee, beareth witnesse of me.

19 Then saide they vnto him, Where is that Father of thine? Iesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor that Father of mine. If ye had knowen me, yee should haue knowen my Father of mine also.

20 These words spake Iesus in the treasure, as he taught in my Temple, & no man laid hands on him: for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then saide Iesus againe vnto them, I goe my way, & ye shall seeke me, & shall die in your sinnes. Whither I goe, can ye not come?

22 Then saide the Iewes, Will hee kill himselfe, because he saith, Whither I go can ye not come?

23 And he saide vnto them, Yee are from beneath: I am from above: ye are of this world: I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore vnto you, that ye shall die in your sinnes: for except ye beleue that I am he, ye shall die in your sinnes.

25 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou? And Iesus said vnto them, Euen the same thing that I sayd vnto you from my beginning.

26 I haue many things to say, & to iudge of you: but he that sent mee, is true, and the things that I haue heard of him, those spake I to the world.

27 They vnderstoode not that hee spake vnto them of the Father.

28 Then said Iesus vnto them, When ye haue lift vp the Sonne of man, then shall ye know that I am he, & that I do nothing of my

CHAP. VIII.

For my Father hath taught me, so I
do these things.

29 For he γ sent me, is with me: the Fa-
ther hath not left me alone, because I do al-
wayes those things that please him.

30 γ As he spake these things, many be-
leeued in him.

31 Then said Iesus to the Iewes that be-
leeued in him, If ye continue in my worde,
ye are verily my disciples,

32 And shall know the truth, and the
truth shal make you free.

33 They answered him, We be Abrahams
seede, & were neuer bound to any mā: why
sayest thou then, Ye shall be made free?

34 Iesus answered them, Verily, verily I
say vnto you, that whosoever committeth
sin, is the seruant of sinne.

35 And the seruant abideth not in the
house for euer: but the Son abideth for euer.

36 If that Sonne therefore shal make you
free, ye shall be free indeede.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed:
but ye seek to kil me, because my word hath
no place in you.

38 I speake γ which I haue seene with my
father: & ye do γ which ye haue seene with
our father.

39 They answered and sayd vnto him,
Abraham is our father. Iesus said vnto them,
If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do
workes of Abraham.

40 But now ye goe about to kil me, a mā
that haue tolde you the truth which I haue
heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye doe the workes of your father. The
y said they to him, We are not borne of forni-
cation: we haue one father, which is God.

42 Therefore Iesus said vnto them, If God
be your Father, then would you loue me:

for I proceeded forth, & came from God: neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why doe ye not vnderstand my saying, because ye cannot heare my word.

44 Ye are of your father the deuill, & the lusts of your father ye wil doe: he hath bene a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, the speaketh he of his owne: for he is a liar, & the father thereof.

45 And because I tel you the truth, ye beleeue me not.

46 Which of you can rebuke me of sinne, and if I say the truth, why doe you not beleeue me?

47 He that is of God, heareth Gods word: ye therefore heare them not, because, ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, Say we not wel that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a deuill.

49 Iesus answered I haue not a deuill, but I honour my Father, & ye haue dishonoured me.

50 And I seeke not mine owne praise: there is one that seeketh it, and indgeth.

51 Verely verely I say vnto you, If a man keepe my word, he shal neuer see death.

52 The said Iewes to him, Now know we that thou hast a deuill. Abraham is dead, and the Prophetes, and thou sayest, If a man keepe my word, he shall neuer taste death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the Prophetes are dead: whom makest thou thy selfe.

54 Iesus answered, If I honour my selfe, mine honour is nothing worth: it is my Father that honoureth me, whom ye say,

CHAP. IX.

your God.

51 Yet ye haue not knowen him: but I know him, & if I should say, I know him not I should be a lyar like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his word.

54 Your father Abraham reioyced to see my day, and he saw it, and was glad,

57 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fifty yere old, and hast thou seene Abraham:

58 Iesus said vnto them, Verily, verily I say vnto you, before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then tooke they vp stones to cast at him, but Iesus hidde himselfe, and went out of the Temple: and he passed through the middes of them, and so went his way.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Christ giueth sight on the Sabbath day, to him that was borne blinde.*

AND as Iesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man or his parents, that he was borne blinde.

3 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents (but that the workes of God should be shewed on him.

4 I must work the workes of him that sent me, while it is day; the night commeth when no man can worke.

5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

6 Alsoone as he had thus spokē, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and anoynted the eyes of the blind with the clay.

7 And said vnto him, Go wash in ^{the} pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his vway therefore, and washed, & came again, seeing.

S. IOHN.

8 Now the neighbours and they that had
seene him before, when he was blind, sayd,
not this he that sate and begged?

9 Some sayd, This is he : and other, sayd
He is like him: but he himselfe said, I am he.

10 Therefore they sayd vnto him, Howe
were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered, and said, The man that
is called Iesus made clay, and anointed mine
eyes, and said vnto me, Goe to the poole of
Siloam, and wash. So I went, and washed, &
received sight.

12 Then they said vnto him, Where is he?
He sayd, I cannot tel.

13 They brought to the Pharisees him that
was once blind.

14 And it was the Sabbath day, when
Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharisees also asked him,
howe he had receiued sight, And he said vnto
them, He layd clay vpon mine eyes, and
washed and doe see,

16 Then sayd some of the Pharisees, This
man is not of God, because he keepeth not the
Sabbath day, Others said, how can a man that
is a sinner doe such miracles? and therewas
dissenting among them.

17 Then spake they vnto the blind againe,
What sayest thou of him, because he hath
opened thine eyes? And he said, He is a Pro-
phet.

18 Then the Iewes did not beleene him,
(that he had bene blind, and receiued his
sight) vntill they had called the parents of him
that had receiued sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this
your sonne, whom ye say was borne blind?
how doeth he now see then.

20 His parents answered them, and said,
We know that this is our sonne, & that he
was borne blind.

been blinded

12 But by what means he now seeth, we know not: or who hath opened his eyes, can we not tel: he is olde y enough: aske him: he shall answere for himselfe.

13 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordained already, that if any man did confesse y he was Christ, he should be excommunicate out of the Synagogue.

14 Therefore said his parents, He is olde y enough: aske him.

15 Then againe called they the man that had bene blind, & said vnto him, Giue glory vnto God we know that this man is a sinner.

16 Then he answered, and said, Whether hee be a sinner or no, I cannot tell, one thing I know, that I was blinde, and now I see.

17 Then said they to him againe, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

18 He answered them, I haue tolde you already, and ye haue not heard it: wherefore would ye heare it againe? wil ye also be his disciples?

19 Then reuiled they him, and saide, Thou art his discipule, we be Moses disciples,

20 Wee knowe that God spake with Moses: but this man we know not fro whence he is.

21 The man answered, & said vnto them, Doubtlesse, this is a marueilous thinge, that ye knowe not vvhence he is, & yet he hath opened mine eyes.

22 Now we know that God heareth not sinners, but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doth his vvil him heareth he.

23 Since the vworld began vvas it not heard of any man: opened the eyes of one that vvas borne blind.

24 If this man vvere not of God, he could

have done nothing.

34 They answered, and saide: vnto him, Thou art altogether borne in sinnes, & how canst thou teach vs? so they cast him out.

35 Iesus heard y they had cast him out, & when he had found him, he said vnto him, Dost thou belecue in the Sonne of God?

36 Hee answered, and saide, Who is he, Lord, that I might belecue in him?

37 And Iesus saide vnto him, Rost thou hast sene him, & he it is y talketh with thee.

38 The he said, Lord, I belecue, & washipped him.

39 And Iesus saide, I am come vnto iudgement into this world, that they which see not, might see: & that they which see, might be made blinde.

40 And some of y Pharises which were with him, heard these things, and said vnto him, Are wee blinde also?

41 Iesus said vnto them, If ye were blinde, ye should not haue sinne, but nowe yee say, We see: therefore your sinne remaineth.

CHAP. X.

11.14 *Christ is the good shepheard.*

Verily, verily I say vnto you. Hee that entreth not in by the doore into the sheepfold, but climeth vp another way, hee is a thiefe and a robber.

2 But he that goeth in by the doore, is the shepheard of the sheepe.

3 To him y porter openeth, & the sheepe heare his voyce, and hee calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he hath sent forth his owne sheepe, he goeth before them, & the sheepe followe him: for they know his voice.

5 And they wil not follow a stranger, but they flee from him: for they knowe not the voyce of strangers.

This parable spake Iesus vnto them: but they vnderstood not what things they were, which hee spake vnto them.

7 Then said Iesus vnto them againe, Verily, verily I say vnto you, I am that doore of the sheepe.

8 Al ſeuerall euer came before me, are thieves and robbers: but the sheepe did not heare them.

9 I am that doore: by me if any man enter in, he shall be ſaued, and shall goe in, & goe out, and finde pasture.

10 The thiefe cometh not: but for to ſteale and to kill, and to deſtroy: I am come that they might haue life, and haue it in abundance.

11 I am that good ſhepherd: that good ſhepherd giueth his life for his ſheepe.

12 But an hireling, and hee which is not the ſhepherd, neither ſeeth the ſheepe are his own, ſeech ſeeth the wolfe coming, and he leaueth the ſheepe, and fleeth, and the wolfe catcheth them and ſcattereth the ſheepe.

13 So the hireling fleeth, becauſe hee is an hireling, and careth not for the ſheepe.

14 I am that good ſhepherd, and know mine, and am knowne of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, ſo know I the Father, and I lay downe my life for my ſheepe.

16 Other ſheepe I haue alſo, which are not of this fold: them alſo muſt I bring, and they ſhall heare my voice: and there ſhall be one ſheepfold, and one ſhepherd.

17 Therefore doth my Father loue me, becauſe I lay downe my life that I might take it againe.

18 No man taketh it from mee, but I lay it downe, of my ſelfe: I haue power to lay it downe, & haue power to take it againe: this

amendment hath I receiued of my

19 ¶ Then there was a difference
among the Iewes for these sayings.

20 And many of them said, He hath a de-
uill, and is madde: why heare ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the wordes
of him that hath a deuill: can the deuill open
the eyes of the blinde?

22 And it was at Hierusalem the feast of
the Dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Iesus walked in the Temple, in
Salomons porch.

24 Then came the Iewes round about him
and sayde vnto him, Howe long doest thou
make vs doubt? If thou be that Christ, tel vs
plainely.

25 Iesus answered them, I tolde you, and
ye beleeue not: the works y^e I do in my Fa-
thers Name, they beare witnes of me.

26 But ye beleeue not: for yee are not of
my sheep, as I said vnto you.

27 My sheep heare my voyce, & I know
them, and they folow me,

28 And I giue vnto them eternall life, &
they shal neuer perishe, neither shal any pluck
them out of mine hand,

29 My Father which gaue them me, is
greater then all, and none is able to take them
out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 Then y^e Iewes againe took vp stones,
to stone him.

32 Iesus answered the, Many good works
haue I shewed you frō my Father: for which
of these workes doe ye stone me?

33 The Iewes answered him, saying, For
thy good worke wee stone thee not, but for
blasphemie, & that thou being a man, makest
thy selfe God.

34 Iesus answered them, Is it not writen

35 If he called them gods vnto whom
word of God was giuen, & the Scripture ca-
not be broken,

36 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath
sanctified, & sent into the world, Thou blas-
phemeft, because I faide, I am the Sonne of
God?

37 If I do not the workes of my Father,
beleue me not.

38 But if I do, the though ye beleue not
me, yet beleue the workes, & ye may know
and beleue, that the Father is in mee, and I
in him.

39 Again they went about to take him;
but he elcaped out of their hands,

40 And went againe beyond Iordane, in-
to the place where Iohn first baptizd, and
there abode.

41 And many resorted vnto him, and said
Iohn did no miracle: but al things that Iohn
spake of this man, vvere true.

42 And many beleeued in him there.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ, to shew that he is, 25 the life & the
resurrection, 14 commeth to Lazarus being
dead, 17. 34 & buried. 43 & raiseth him vp

ANd a certaine man was sick, named La-
zarus of Bethania, the towne of Mary,
& her sister Martha,

2 (And it was that Mary which anoynt-
ed the Lorde vvith oyntment, & vviped his
feete vvith her haire, vvhole brother Laza-
rus vvas sicke)

3 Therefore his sisters sent vnto him, say-
ing, Lord, beholde, hee vvhom thou louest, is
sicke.

4 Whē Iesus heard it, he sayd, This sick-
nesse is not vnto death, but for the glory of
God, that the Son of God might bee glorified
thereby.

Barby.

5 Now Iesus loued Martha & her sister
and Lazarus.

6 And after hee had heard that hee was
sicke, yet abode he two dayes stil in the same
place where he was.

7 Then after that, said he to his disciples,
Let vs go into Iudea againe.

8 The disciples said vnto him, Master, the
Iewes lately sought to stone thee, and dost
thou go thither againe?

9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue
houres in the day? If a man walke in y day,
he stumbleth not, because hee seeth the light
of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night, he
stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

11 These things spake he, and after hee
said vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth:
but I go to wake him vp.

12 The said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep
he shalbe safe.

13 Howbeit, Iesus spake of his death: but
they thought that he had spoken of the na-
tural sleepe.

14 Then said Iesus to them plainly, La-
zarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes that I
was not there, that ye may beleue; but let vs
go vnto him.

16 Then said Thomas (which is called
Didymus) vnto his fellowe disciples, Let vs
also go, that we may die with him.

17 ¶ Then came Iesus, and found that he
had lyen in the graue foure dayes already.

18 (Now Bethania was nere vnto Hieru-
salem, about fifteene furlongs off)

19 And many of the Iewes were come
to Martha and Mary to comfort them for
their brother.

20 The

Then Martha, when she heard that
Jesus was coming, went to meete him, but
Mary sat still in the house.

21 Then said Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if
thou haddest bene here, my brother had not
bene dead.

22 But now I know also, that whatsoeuer
thou askest of God, God wil giue it thee.

23 Iesus saide vnto her, Thy brother shal
rise againe.

24 Martha said vnto him, I know that he
shal rise again in $\frac{y}{y}$ resurrectiō at $\frac{y}{y}$ last day.

25 Iesus saide vnto her, I am the resurrec-
tion and the life: hee that beleeueth in mee,
though he were dead, yet shal he liue.

26 And whosoener liueth, and beleueth
in mee, shal neuer die: Beleuest thou this?

27 She said vnto him, Yea, Lord, I beleue
that thou art that Christ that Sonne of God,
which should come into the world.

28 ¶ And whē she had so said, she went
her way, and called Mary her sister secretly,
saying, The master is come, and calleth, for
thee.

29 And when shee heard it, shee arose
quickly, and came vnto him.

30 For Iesus was not yet come into the
towne, but was in the place where Martha
met him.

31 The Iewes thē which were with her
in the house, and comforted her, when they
saw Mary, that she rose vp hastily, and went
out followed her, saying, She goeth vnto the
grave to weepe there.

32 Then when Mary was come where
Iesus was, and saw him she fell down at his
fette, saying vnto him, Lord, if thou haddest
bene here, my brother had not bene dead.

33 When Iesus therefore saw her weepe
and the Iewes also weepe which came with
her

And he groined in the Spirit, and was
to himselfe,

34 And saide, Where haue ye layd him?
They said vnto him, Lord, come and see.

35 And Iesus wept.

36 Then said the Iewes, Behold, how he
loued him.

37 And some of them said, Could not he
which opened the eyes of the blinde, haue
made also, ¶ this man should not haue died.

38 Iesus therefore againe groined in him-
selfe, and came to the graue. And it was
caue, and a stone was layd vpon it.

39 Iesus saide, Take yee away the stone.
Martha the sister of him that was dead, said
vnto him, Lorde, hee stinketh already: for he
hath bene dead foure dayes.

40 Iesus saide vnto her, Saide I not vnto
thee, ¶ if thou didst beleene, thou shouldst
see the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away the stone from
the place where the dead was layd: And Je-
sus lift vp his eyes, and said, Father, I thank
thee, because thou hast heard me.

42 I know that thou hearest me alwayes
but because of the people that stand by, I said
it, that they may beleene, that thou hast sent
me.

43 As he had spoken these things, he cri-
ed with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 Then hee that was dead, came forth,
bound hand and foote with bands, and his
face was bound with a napkin. Iesus said vnto
them, Loose him, and let him Go.

45 ¶ Then many of ¶ Iewes which came
to Mary, & had seene ¶ things which Iesus
did, beleued in him.

46 But some of them went their way
the Pharises, and told them what things Je-
sus had done.

CHAP. XI.

47 Then gathered the hie Priest and the
scribes a council, & said, What shal we do?
For this man doth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will
believe in him, and the Romanes will come
and take away both our place, and the natiō.

49 Then one of them named Caiaphas,
which was the hie priest that same yeere,
said vnto them, Yee perceiue nothing at al,

50 Nor yet doe you consider that it is ex-
pedient for vs, that one man die for the peo-
ple, and that the whole nation perish not.

51 This spake he not of himselfe: but be-
ing high Priest that same yeere, hee prophe-
cied that Iesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation only, but that
hee should gather together in one the childrē
of God which were scattered.

53 Then from that day forth they con-
sulted together, to put him to death.

54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly
among the Iewes, but went thence vnto a
countrey neere to the wildernesse, into a ci-
tie called Ephraim, & there continued with
his disciples.

55 And the Iewes Passecouer was at hād
and many went out of the countrey vp to
Hierusalem before the Passecouer, to purifie
themselves.

56 Then sought they for Iesus, & spake
among themselves, as they stood in the Tē-
ple, What thinke ye, that he cometh not to
the feast?

57 Now both the hie Priests & the Pha-
rises had given a commandement, that if any
man knew where he were, hee should shew
it, that they might take him,

CHAP. XII.

42 The chiefe Rulers that beleene in him, but
for feare doe not confesse him, 44 he exhor-
teth to faith.

Then

Then Iesus fixe dayes before he
ouer, came to Bethania, where
was, who died, whom he had raised
the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, & Mar-
tha serued: but Lazarus was one of them
sate at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of oymen-
t of Spikenard very costely, and anoynted
Iesus feete, and wiped his feete with her haire
& the house was filled with the sauour of
oymment.

4 Then said one of his disciples, even Ju-
das Iscariot Simons sonne which should be-
tray him.

5 Why was not this ointment sold for
three hundreth pence, and giuen to the poore?

6 Nowe hee said this, not that he cared
for the poore, but because hee was a thiefe
& had the bagge, and bare that which was
giuen.

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone: against
the day of my burying she kept it.

8 For the poore alwayes ye haue with
you, but me ye shal not haue alwayes.

9 Then much people of the Iewes knew
he was there: and they came, not for his
sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus
also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 The hie Priests therefore consulted
that they might put Lazarus to death also.

11 Because that for his sake many of
the Iewes went away, and beleued in Iesus.

12 ¶ On the morow a great multitude
were come to the feast, where they heard that
Iesus should come to Hierusalem,

13 Tooke branches of palme trees, and
went forth to meeete him, and cried, Hosanna,
Blessed is the king of Israel that cometh
in the Name of the Lord.

And Iesus found a yong asse and that
son, as it is writen,

15 Feare not, daughter of Sion: behold,
thy king cometh sitting on an asses colt.

16 But his disciples vnderstood not these
things at the first: But when Iesus was glori-
fied, then remembered they, that these things
were writtē of him, and that they had done
these things vnto him.

17 The people therefore that vvas vvith
him, bare vvitness that he called Lazarus our
of the graue, and raised him from the dead.

18 Therefore met him y people also, be-
cause they heard that he had done this mira-
cle.

19 And the Pharises said among themselues,
Perceiue ye howe ye preuaile nothing? Be-
holde, the vvorld goeth after him,

20 & Nowe there vv ere certain Greekes
among them that came vpto vvorship at y
feast.

21 And they came to Philip, vvich vvas
of Bethsaida in Galile, and desired him, say-
ing, Sir, we vvould see that Iesus.

22 Philip came and told Andrevv: and
again Andrevv and Philip told Iesus.

23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The
houe is come, that the Son of man must be
glorified,

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except
the vvheatcorne fall into the ground & die,
it abide th alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth
much fruit.

25 Hee that loueth his life, shal lose it, &
hee that hateth his life in this world, shal
keepe it vnto life eternal,

26 If any man serue me, let him follow
mee: for where I am, there shal also my ser-
uant bee: & if any man serue me, him will
my Father honour.

27 Now

27 Nowe is my soule troubled: what shall I say? Father, saue me from this hour: but therefore came I vnto this houre.

28 Father glorifie thy Name, Then came there a voyce from heauen, saying, I haue both glorified it, and wil glorifie it againe.

29 Then said the people that stood by, heard, that it was a thunder: other saide, an Angel spake to him.

30 Iesus answered, and saide, This voyce came not because of me, but for your sake.

31 Nowe is the iudgement of this world: now shal the prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I were lift vp from the earth, will draw al men vnto me.

33 Now this saide hee, signifying what death he should die.

34 The people answered him, Wee haue heard out of the Law, that that Christ bideth for euer: and how saiest thou, that that Son of man must be lift vp? Who is that Son of man?

35 Then Iesus said vnto them, Yet a little while is the light with you: walk while ye haue that light, lest the darkenesse come vpon you: for hee that walketh in the darknesse knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye haue that light, beleeueth in that light, that ye may be the children of the light. These things spake Iesus, and departed, and hid himselfe from them.

37 ¶ And though hee had done so many miracles before them, yet beleeued they not on him,

38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, which he said, Lord, who haue beleued our report? and to whom is the arm of the Lord reueiled?

39 Therefore coule they not beleue, because that Esaias saith againe,

They hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they should not see with their eyes nor vnderstand with their heart, neither should be conuerted, and I should heale them.

41 These things said Esaias vvhē he saw his glory, and spake of him.

42 Neuerthelesse, enen among the chiefe men, many beleued in him, but because of the Pharises they did not confesse him, lest they should bee cast out of the Synagogue.

43 For they loued the praise of mē, more than the praise of God.

44 And Iesus cried, and said. He that be- leueth in me, beleeueth not in me, but in him that sent me.

45 And hee that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoener beleeueth in mee, should not abide in darkenesse.

47 And if any man heare my vvords, and beleeue not, I iudge him not: for I came not to iudge the vvorld, but to saue the vvorld.

48 He that refuseth mee, and receiveth not my vvords, hath one that iudgeth him: y^e vvord that I haue spoken, it shal iudge him in the last day.

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the Father vvhich sent me, he gaue me a cō- mandement vvhat I should say, and vvhat I should speake.

50 And I know v that his commandement is life euerlasting: the things therefore that I speake, I speake them so as the Father sayd vnto me.

CHAP. XIII.

Christ rising from supper, & to commend himselfe to his Apostles, washeth their feet

T NOV

NOW before the feast of the Passover, when Iesus knew that his hour was come, & he should depart out of this world vnto the Father, forasmuch as he loved them which were in the world, vnto whom he loved them.

2 And when supper was done (and the devil had now put in the heart of Iudas cariot, Simons sonne to betray him)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen al things into his hands, & that he was come forth from God, and went to God,

4 He riseth from supper, and laith aside his upper garments, and tooke a towel and girded himselfe.

5 After that, he powred water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples feet, and to wipe them with the towel, wherewith he was girded.

6 Then came hee to Simon Peter, who sayd to him, Lord doeſt thou wash my feet?

7 Iesus answered and sayd vnto him, What I do thou knowest not nowe: but thou shalt know it hereafter.

8 Peter sayd vnto him, Thou shalt not wash my feet. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou shalt haue no part with me.

9 Simon Peter sayd vnto him, Lord, not my feet onely, but also the hands and the head.

10 Iesus sayd to him, He that is washed needeth not saue to wash his feet, but is cleane euery whit: and ye are cleane, but not all.

11 For he knew vnto who should betray him: therefore sayde he, Ye are not all cleane.

12 ¶ So after he had washed their feet, & had taken his garments, & was set downe againe, he sayd vnto them, Know ye what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call me master, and Lord, & yet I haue done this for you.

When your Lord, and Master, haue
washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one
others feet.

For I haue giuen you an example, that
ye should doe, euen as I haue done to you.

Verely, verely I say vnto you, The ser-
uant is not greater then his master, neither
the ambassador greater then he that sent him.

If ye know these things, blessed are ye
that doe them.

I speake not of you all: I know whom
ye haue chosen: but it is y^e the Scripture might
be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me,
shall lift vp his heele against me.

From hencefoorth tell I you before it
come, that vwhen it is come to passe, ye might
knowe that I am he.

Verely, verely I say vnto you, If I send
him, he that receiueth him receiueth me, and
he that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent
me.

When Iesus had sayd these things hee
was troubled in the Spirit, and testified and
said, Verely, verely. I say vnto you, that one
of you shal betray me.

Then the disciples looked one on ano-
ther, doubting of vvhom he spake.

Nowe there vvas one of his disciples,
whom Iesus loved, which leaued on Iesus bosome, vvhom Iesus
washed.

To him therefore beckened Simon Pe-
ter, saying he should aske vvhom it vvas of vvhom
he spake,

He then, as he leaued on Iesus breast,
said vnto him, Lord, vvhom is it.

Iesus answered, He it is to vvhom I shal
dip a sop when I haue dipped it: & he vvet a
sop & gaue it to Iudas Iscariot Simons sonne.

And after the sop, Satan entred into
him. The said Iesus vnto him, That thou doest

do quickly.

28 But none of them that were at
knew for what cause he spake it vnto him.

29 For some of them thought because
dasha had the bag, y^e Iesus had sayd vnto him
Buy those things that wee haue neede
gainst the feast : or that he should giue
thing to the poore.

30 A lloone then as he had receiued
sop, he went immediately out : and it was
night.

31 ¶ When he vvas gone out, Iesus sayeth
Nowe is the Sonne of a man glorified, and
God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shall
also glorifie him in himselfe, & shall straight
way glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while
with you: yee shall seeke mee, but as I goe
vnto the Iewes. Whither I goe, can ye not
come: also to you say I now,

34 A new commandement giue I vnto
you y^e ye loue one another, as I haue loued
you, that ye also loue one another.

35 By this shall all men know that yee
my disciples, if ye haue loue one to another.

36 Simon Peter sayde vnto him, Lord,
whither goest thou? Iesus answered him
Whither I goe, thou canst not folow me
now: but thou shalt folow me afterward.

37 Peter said vnto him, Lord, why can
not folow thee now? I will lay downe
life for thy sake.

38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou
downe thy life for my sake? Verely, verely
I say vnto thee, The cocke shall not crow
till thou haue denied me thrise.

CHAP. XIII.

1. He comforteth his disciples, 2. 7. declar-
his diuinitie and the fruits of his death.

Let not your heart be troubled, yee be-
leeue in God, beleeue also in me.

In my Fathers house are many dwell-
ing places: if it were not so, I would haue
said to you: I go to prepare a place for you.

And if I goe to prepare a place for you,
I will come againe, and receiue you vnto my
self, that where I am, there may ye be also.

And vvhither I goe, yee know, and the
way yee know.

Thomas sayde vnto him, Lorde, we
know not vvhither thou goest: how can we
know the way?

Jesus sayd vnto him, I am that Way, &
the Truth, and that Life. No man cometh
vnto the Father, but by me.

If ye had knowen me, ye should haue
known my Father also: and from hence-
forth ye know him, and haue seene him.

Philip said vnto him, Lord, shew vs thy
Father, and it sufficeth vs.

Jesus said vnto him, I haue bene so long
with you, and hast thou not knowen
me, Philip? he that hath seen me, hath seene
my Father: how then sayest thou, Shew vs
my Father?

Beleeuest thou not, that I am in the
Father, and the Father is in me? The words
I speake to you, I speake not of my selfe:
but my Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth
the works.

Beleeue mee that I am in the Father,
and the Father is in me: at the least beleeue
me for the very works sake.

Verely, verely. I say vnto you, he that
beleueth in me, the works that I doe, hee
shall doe also, and greater then these shall he
doe: for I goe vnto my Father.

And vvhatsocuer ye aske in my Name,
I will doe, that the Father may be glori-
fied.

Bed in the Sonne.

14 If ye shal aske any thing in my name,
I will doe it,

15 of ye loue me, keep my comandments.

16 And I wil pray the Father, & he
shal send you another Comforter, that he
shal abide with you for euer,

17 Euen the Spirite of truth whom
the worlde cannot receiue because it seeth
not, neither knoweth him: but ye know
him for he dwelleth with you, & shalbe in you

18 I will not leaue you fatherlesse:
for I wil come to you.

19 Yet a litle while, and the world
shal see me no more, but ye shal see mee: because
I liue, yee shal liue also.

20 At that day shal ye knowe that I
am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandments,
& keepeth them, is he that loueth me: and he
that loueth me, shalbe loued of my Father, &
I will loue him, & will shew mine
selfe to him.

22 Iudas sayd vnto him (not Iscariot) Lord,
what is the cause that thou wilt shewe
thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the world?

23 Iesus answered and sayd vnto him,
If any man loue me, he will keepe my word
& my Father wil loue him, & we wil come
vnto him, and wil dwell with him.

24 Hee that loueth me not, keepeth not
my word, and the word which ye heare, is not
of mine, but of the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you,
being present with you.

26 But the Comforter which is the
Holy Ghost, whome the Father will sende in
my Name, he shal teach you al things, & he
shal bring to your remembrance, which I haue
told you.

CHAP. XV.

Peace I leaue with you: my peace I giue
to you: not as the world giueth, giue I
to you, Let not your heart be troubled, nor

Ye haue heard how I sayd vnto you, I
will come away, & wil come vnto you: If ye loued
me, ye would verely, reioyce, because I sayd,
I will come vnto the Father, for the Father, is grea-
ter than I.

And now haue I spoken vnto you, be-
cause it come, that when it is come to passe, ye
shall not beleeue.

Hereafter will I not speak many things
to you: for the prince of this vworld com-
eth: he hath nought in me.

But it is that the vworld may know
that I am my Father: & as the Father hath con-
fided in me, so I do: Arise, let vs go hence.

CHAP. XV.

*By the parable of the vine & the branches,
he declareth how the disciples may beare
fruit.*

I am that true vine, and my Father is that
husbandman.

Every branch that beareth not fruit I
will take away: & every one that bea-
reth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring
forth more fruit.

Now are ye cleane through the word
which I haue spoken vnto you.

Abide in me, & I in you: as the branch can
not beare fruit of it selfe, except it abide in
the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

I am that vine, ye are the branches: hee
that abideth in mee, and I in him, the same
shall bring forth much fruit: for without me
ye can do nothing.

If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth
as a branch, & withereth: & men gather the
branches, & cast them into the fire, & they burne.

7 If ye abide in me, and my word abide in you, aske what ye wil, and it shall be done to you.

8 Herein is my Father, glorified, if ye bear much fruit, and be made my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loued me, so hath he loued you: continue in that my loue.

10 If ye shall keepe my commandments, ye shall abide in my loue, as I haue kept my Fathers commandments, & abide in his loue.

11 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioy might be full.

12 This is my commandment, that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you.

13 Greater loue then this hath no man, when any man bestoweth his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.

15 Henceforth, call I you not seruants: for the seruant knoweth not what his master doeth, but I haue called you friends: for all things which I haue heard of my Father, haue I made knowne to you.

16 Ye haue not chosen mee, but I haue chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remaine, that whatsoever ye shall aske of the Father in my Name, he may giue it you.

17 These things command I you, that ye loue one another.

18 If the world hate you, yee know that it hated me before you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would loue his owne: but because ye are not of the world, but I haue chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 Remember my word that I said vnto you: The seruant is not greater then his master. If they haue persecuted me, they will persecute you.

And you also : if they haue kept my word,
they will also keepe yours.

21 But all these things they will doe vnto
you for my Names sake , because they haue
not knowen him that sent me.

22 If I had not come and spoken vnto the,
they should not haue had sin: but now haue
they no cloke for their sinne.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father
also.

24 If I had not done works among them
which none other man did, they had not had
sin: but now haue they both seen, & haue ha-
ted both me & my Father.

25 But it is that the word might be fulfil-
led, that is written in their Law, They hated
me without a cause.

26 But when that Comforter shal come,
whom I wil send vnto you from the Father,
even the Spirit of trueth, which proceedeth of
the Father, hee shall testifie of me.

27 And ye shal witnes also , because ye
haue bene vvith me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

1 He foretelleth the disciples of persecutions, 7
Hee promiseth the Comforter, and declareth
his office. 2 He compareth the afflictions of
his to a woman that traueileth with childe.

THese things haue I sayd vnto you, that
ye should nor be offended.

2 They shal excommunicate you: yea: the
time shal come, that vvhosoever killeth you,
vvil thinke that he doeth God seruice.

3 And these things vvil they doe vnto you
because they haue not knowen the Father,
nor me.

4 But these things haue I told you , that
when the houre shal come, ye might reme-
ber y I told you the, And these things said I
not vnto you fro y beginning, because I was
vvith

with you.

5 But now I go my way to his chamber
me, and none of you asketh me. Whither
goest thou?

6 But because I haue said these things vnto
you, your hearts are full of sorrow.

7 Yet I tellyou the truth, It is expedient
for you y I go away: for if I go not away,
that Comforter will not come vnto you: but
if I depart, I will send him vnto you.

8 And when he is come, hee will reprove
the worlde of sinne, and of righteousness, and
of iudgement:

9 Of sinne, because they beleue not in
me:

10 Of righteousness, because I go to my
Father, & ye shal see me no more:

11 Of iudgement, because the prince of
this world is iudged.

12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you,
but ye cannot beare them now.

13 Howbeit, when hee is come which is
the Spirit of truth, hee wil lead you into all
truth: for he shal not speake of himselfe, but
whatsoeuer he shal heare, shall he speake, &
he wil shew you the things to come.

14 He shal glorifie me: for he shal receiue
of mine, and shal shew it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are
mine: therefore sayd I, that he shal take
mine, & shew it vnto you.

16 A litle while, & ye shal not see mee:
and againe a litle while, and ye shall see mee
for I goe to the Father.

17 Then sayd some of his disciples among
themselues, What is this that hee saith vnto
vs, A litle while, and ye shall not see me: and
againe. A litle while, and ye shal see me, and
For I goe to the Father.

18 They saide therefore, What is this that

he saith
he saith
19 N
aske him
quire an
while, a
litle wh
20 V
shal we
reioyce
shal be r
21 A
row, bec
as he is
breth no
is borne
22 A
but I w
reioyce.
23 A
thing: V
foeuer y
he wil
14 H
my Nan
your ioy
25 T
parables
no more
shew y
26 A
and I f
the Fat
27 F
because
that I c
28 I
came in
and go
29 I

he said, A litle while? wee know not what he saith.

19 Nowe Iesus knewe that they would aske him, and slide vnto them, Doe yee enquire among ybur selues, of that I said A litle while, and ye shall not see me: and againe, A litle while, and shall see me?

20 Verily, verily I say vnto you, that ye shall weep and lament: and the worlde shall reioyce: and ye shall sorow but your sorow shall be turned to ioy.

21 A women whē she traueileth hath sorow, because her houre is come: but as soone as she is deliuered of the child, shee remembreth no more the anguish, for ioy that a mā is borne into the world.

22 And ye now therefore are in sorow: but I wil see you againe, & your hearts shall reioyce, & your ioy shall no mā take frō you.

23 And in that day shall yee aske me nothing: Verily, verily I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer ye shall aske the Father in my Name, he wil giue it you.

24 Hitherto haue yee asked nothing in my Name: aske, and, yee shall receiue, that your ioy may be full.

25 These things haue I spoken to you in parables: but the time wil come, when I shall no more speake to you in parables: but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

26 At that day shall ye aske in my Name, and I say not vnto you, that I wil pray vnto the Father for you:

27 For the Father himselfe loueth you, because ye haue loved me, and haue beleued that I came out from God.

28 I am come out from the Father, and came into the world: againe I leaue y world and goe to the Father.

29 His disciples said vnto him, Loe, now speake

30. *Thou speakest thou plainly, and thou speakest in parable.*

30. Now know we that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should tell thee. By this we beleue, that thou art come out from God.

31. Iesus answered them, Do you beleue now?

32. Behold, the houre commeth and is already come, that ye shal bee scattered every man into his own, and shall leaue me alone: but I am not alone: for the Father is with me.

33. These things haue I spoken vnto you, that in me ye might haue peace: in *y* world ye shall haue affliction, but be of good comforte I haue overcome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1. *Christ prayeth that his glory together with his Fathers may be made manifest.*

THese things spake Iesus, and lift vp his eyes to heauen, and saide, Father, that houre is come: glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee,

2. As thou hast giuen him power ouer all flesh, that hee should giue eternall life to all them that thou hast giuen him.

3. And this is life eternal, that they know thee to be the only very God, & whom thou hast sent Iesus Christ.

4. I haue glorified thee on earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to doe.

5. And now glorifie me, thou Father, with thine own selfe, with *y* glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6. I haue declared thy Name vnto the me which thou gauest me out of *y* world: thine they were and thou gauest them me, & they haue kept thy word.

7. Now

CHAP. XVII.

7 Now they know that all things whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee.

8 For I haue giuen vnto them the words which thou gauest me, and they haue receiued *them*, & haue knowē surely that I came out from thee, and haue belceued that thou hast sent me.

9 I pray for thē: I pray not for *ſ* world, but for them which thou hast giuen mee: for they are thine,

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.

11 And now am I no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I am come to thee. Holy Father, keep thē in thy Name, *and* them whom thou hast giuen me, that they may be one, as we are.

12 While I was vvith them in the vvorld I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gauest me haue I kept, & none of them is lost, but the child of perdition, that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

13 And nowve come I to thee, and these things speake I in *ſ* vvorld, that they might haue my ioy fulfilled in themselves.

14 I haue giuen them thy vvord, and the vvorld hath hated them because they are not of the vvorld, as I am not of the vvorld.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the vvorld, but that thou keepe them from euil.

16 They are not of *ſ* vvorld, as I am not of the vvorld.

17 Sanctifie them vvith thy truth: thy vvorde is truth.

18 As thou didst send me into the vvorld, so haue I sent them into the vvorld.

19 And for their sakes sanctifie I my selfe that they also may be sanctified through the truth.

20 I pray not for these alone, but
also which shall beleene in me through
word.

21 That they all may be one, as thou
Father, art in me, & I in thee: *even* that
may bee also one in vs, that *thy* world may be-
leeue that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory that thou givest me,
I haue given them, that they may be one,
we are one.

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they
may bee made perfect in one, and that the
world may know that thou hast sent me, and
hast loued them, as thou hast loued me.

24 Father, I wil, that they which thou hast
given me, be with mee *eu*n where I am, that
they may behold that my glory, which thou
hast given mee: for thou louedst mee before
the foundation of the world,

25 O righteous Father, *thy* world also hath
not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee: &
these haue knowen that thou hast sent me.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy
Name, & wil declare it, that the loue where
with thou hast loued me, may be in them, &
I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 By Christes power, whom Iudas betrayeth, &
the souldiers are cast downe to the ground.

When Iesus had spoken the se things, hee
went forth with his disciples ouer the
brooke Cedron, where was a garden, into
which hee entred: and his disciples.

2 And Iudas which betrayed him knew
also the place: for Iesus oft times resorted
thither with his disciples.

3 Iudas then, after he had receiued a band
of men and officers of the hie Priests and of
the Pharises, came thither with lanternes, &
torches, and weapons.

4 Then

Then Iesus knowing all thinges that
should come vnto him, went forth and sayd
vnto them, Whom seeke ye?

They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth,
Iesus sayd vnto them, I am he. Now Iudas
which betrayed him stood with them,

¶ As soone then as hee had sayd vnto the,
I am hee, they went away, backwards, and
fel to the ground.

¶ The he asked them again, Whom seeke
ye? And they sayd, Iesus of Nazareth,

¶ Iesus answered, I sayd vnto you, *y* I am
he: therefore if ye seeke me, let these go their
way,

¶ *This was that y word might be fulfilled*
which he spake, Of them which thou gauest
me, haue I lost none.

¶ Then Simon Peter hauing a sword
drew it, and smote the high Priests seruant, &
cut of his eare, Now the seruants name was
Malchus.

¶ Then sayd Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy
sword into the sheath: shall I not drinke of
the cup which my Father hath giuen me?

¶ Then the band and the captaine, and
the officer of the Iewes tooke Iesus & bound
him.

¶ And led him away to Annas first (for
he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was
the hie Priest that same yere)

¶ And Caiaphas was he that gaue counsel
to the Iewes that it was expedient that one
man should die for the people,

¶ ¶ Now Simon Peter followed Iesus
and another disciple, and that disciple was
knownen of the hie Priest: therefore he went
in with Iesus into the hall of the hie Priest:

¶ But peter stood at the doore without.
Then went out the other disciple which was
knownen vnto the hie Priest, and spake to
him

5. 10. 11.
set that kept the doore, & brought him

17 Then sayd the mayd that kept
vnto Peter. Art not thou also one of the
disciples? He sayd, I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stood
there vvhich had made a fire of coales: for
was coulede, and they vvarmed themselves.
And Peter also stood among the, & warmed
himselfe.

19 ¶ (The hie Priest then asked Iesus
his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly
the vworld: I euer taught in the Synagogue
in the Temple, vvhither the Iewes resort con-
tinually, and in secret haue I sayd nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? aske them vvhich
heard me vvhath I said vnto the: behold, they
know vvhath I sayd.

22 When he had spoken these things, one
of the officers vvhich stood by, smote Iesus
vwith his rodde, saying, Answerest thou the
hie Priest so?

23 Iesus answered him, If I haue euil spoken,
ken beare vvitnesse of the euil: but if I haue
well spoken, why smitest thou me?

24 ¶ Now Annas had sent him bound
to Caiaphas the hie Priest.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed
himselfe, and they sayd vnto him, Art thou
also of his disciples? He denied it, saying,
sayd, I am not.

26 One of the seruants of the hie Priest
his cousin whose care Peter smote off, sayd
Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied againe, & immedi-
ly the cocke crew.

28 ¶ The ledde they Iesus from Caiaphas
into the common hal. Now it was morning
and they themselves went not into the com-
mon hall, lest they shou'd be defiled,

they might eat the Pasche.

Pilate then went out vnto them, and
What accusation bring you against this

They answered, and sayde vnto him,
he were not an euil doer, we would not
deliuered him vnto thee.

31 Then sayd Pilate vnto them, Take ye
him and iudge him after your owne lawe.

Then the Iewes said vnto him, It is not law-
ful for vs to put any man to death.

32 It was that the worde of Iesus might
be fulfilled which he spake, signifying what
death he should die.

33 So Pilate entred into the common hal-
lowe, and called Iesus, and sayd vnto him,
Art thou the king of the Iewes?

34 Iesus answered him, Sayest thou
that of thy selfe, or did other tell it thee of
me?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine
owne nation and the hie Priests haue deli-
uered thee vnto me. What hast thou done?

36 Iesus answered, My kingdome is not
of this world: if my kingdome were of this
world, my seruants would surely fight, that
I should not be deliuered to the Iewes: but
now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate then sayde vnto him, Art thou
a king then? Iesus answered, Thou sayest
that I am a king: for this cause am I borne & for
this cause came I into the worlde, that I
should beare witnesse vnto the trueth: e-
uery one that is of the trueth, heareth my
voice.

38 Pilate said vnto him, What is trueth?
When he had said that, he went out a-
bout the ninth houre vnto the Iewes, and saide vnto them,
I finde in him no cause at all.

39 But you haue a custome, that I should
v
de-

deliuer you one loose at the Passover.
ye then that I loose vnto you the
Iewes?

40 Then cryed they all againe,
Not him, but Barrabas: now this
was a murderer.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Pilate, whē Christ was scourged, 2. & crowned
with thornes, 4. was desirous to let
him loose, 2. but being overcome with the
rage of the Iewes, 16, he deliuereth him
to be crucified.

Then Pilate tooke Iesus & scourged him.
2 And the souldiers platted a crowne
of thornes, and put it on his head, and
put on him a purple garment,

3 And saide, Hayle King of the Iewes.
And they smote him with their rods,

4 Then Pilate went forth againe, &
said vnto them, Behold, I bring him forth
vnto you, that ye may know that I finde no fault
in him at all.

5 Then came Iesus forth, wearing
a crowne of thornes, and a purple garment.
And Pilate said vnto them, Behold the man.

6 Then when the high Priestes and
scribes saw him, they cryed, saying, Crucifie
him. Pilate said vnto them. Take
him, & crucifie him; for I finde no fault in
him.

7 The Iewes answered him, Wee haue
Law, and by our laws hee ought to die,
because he made himselfe the Sonne of God.

8 When Pilate then heard that word,
he was the more afraide,

9 And went againe into the common hall,
and said vnto Iesus, Whence art thou?
Iesus gaue him none answer.

10 Then saide Pilate vnto him, Speake
thou not vnto mee? knowest thou not that
I haue power to crucifie thee, & haue power

Jesus answered, Thou couldest haue
power at all against me, except it were gi-
uen thee from above: therefore he that deli-
uered me vnto thee, hath the greater sinne.

12 From thencefoorth Pilate sought to
loose him, but the Iewes cryed, saying, If
thou deliuer him, thou art not Cæsars friende
whosoever maketh himselfe a king, spea-
keth against Cesar.

13 When Pilate heard this worde, hee
brought Iesus fourth, and sate downe in the
iudgement seat in a place called the Pau-
ment, and in Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the Preparation of the
passeouer, and about the sixt houre: and hee
said vnto the Iewes, Behold your king.

15 But they cryed, Away with him, a-
way with him, crucifie him. Pilate said vnto
them, Shall I crucifie your king? The hie
priests answered, we haue no king but Cesar.

16 Then deliuered he him vnto them to
be crucified. And they tooke Iesus and led
him away.

17 And he bare his owne crosse, & came
vnto a place named of *dead mens skuls*, which
is called in Hebrew, Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified him, and two
other with him, on either side one & Iesus
in the mids.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote also a title, & put
it on the crosse, and it was written, IESVS
OF NAZARETH THE KING OF
THE IEWES,

20 This title the read many of the Iewes:
for the place where Iesus was crucified, was
neere to the citie: and it was written in He-
brew, Greeke, and Latine.

21 Then said the high Priests of the Iewes
to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Iewes:

32 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue written.

33 Then the souldiers when they had parted Iesus tooke his garments (and they were four parts, to euery souldier a part) and the coate was without seam, and from the top thorowcut.

34 Therefore they sayde one to another, We will not deuide it, but cast lots for it, which shall be. *This was* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which sayeth, They parted my garments among them, and on my coate cast lots. So the souldiers did these things.

35 ¶ Then stood by the crosse of Iesus, his mother and his mothers sister, Mary the wife of Cleopas, and Mary Magdalene.

36 And when Iesus saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loued, he sayde vnto his mother, Woman, beholde thy sonne.

37 Then said he to the disciple, Beholde thy mother: and from that houre the disciple tooke her home vnto him.

38 ¶ After when Iesus knew y^e all things were perfourmed that the Scripture might be fulfilled, he sayd, I thirst.

39 And there was set a vessel ful of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it about an hyssope stalke, and put it to his mouth.

40 Now when Iesus had receiued of the vinegar, he sayde, It is finished, and bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghost.

41 The Iewes then (because it was the Preparation, that the bodies should not remaine vpon the crosse on the Sabbath day: for that Sabbath was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and

33 But wh
he was d

34 But on
parced his
out blood an

35 And l
concordis cru
me, that ye

36 For t
Scripture sh
him shalbe

37 And
They shall

thorow,

38 And
mothes (w
erely for f

39 And
first came
myrre an

40 The
wrapped
as the ma

41 And
crucified
new sepi

42 T
of the Ie
dure wa

43 Mary

of the first, and of the other which
was crucified with Iesus.

33 But when they came to Iesus, & saw
that he was dead already, they brake not his
legs.

34 But one of the souldiers with a speare
pierced his side, and forthwith came there-
out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it bare record, & his
record is true; and he knoweth that he sayeth
true, that ye might beleue it.

36 For these things were done that the
Scripture should be fulfilled, Not a bone of
him shalbe broken.

37 And againe another Scripture sayeth,
They shall see him whome they haue thrust
thorow,

38 And after these things Ioseph of Ari-
mathea (who was a disciple of Iesus, but se-
cretly for feare of the Iewes) besought Pi-
late that hee might take downe the body of
Iesus. And Pilate gaue him licence. He came
then and tooke Iesus body.

39 And there came also Nicodemus (which
first came to Iesus by night) and brought
myrre and aloes mingled together about an
hundred pound.

40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, &
wrapped it in linnen clothes wth the odours,
as the maner of the Iewes is to bury,

41 And in that place where Iesus was
crucified, was a garden, and in the garden
new sepulchre wherin was neuer man yet laid.

42 There then layed they Iesus, because
of the Iewes Preparation day, for the sepul-
chre was netre.

CHAP. XX.

1 Mary bringeth wende that Christ is risen.

John 4. come to finde.

NOw the first day of the weeke,
Marie Magdalene, early when it was yet
darke, vnto the sepulchre, and saw the stone
taken away from the tombe.

2 Then she ran and came to Simon Peter,
and to the other disciples whom Iesus loved,
and saide vnto them, They haue taken away
the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know
not where they haue layed him.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and the o-
ther disciples, and they came vnto the sepul-
chre.

4 So they ran both together, but the o-
ther disciples did outrun Peter, and came first
to the sepulchre.

5 And hee stooped downe, and sawe the
linnen clothes lying: yet went hee not in.

6 Then came Simon Peter following him,
and went into the sepulchre, and sawe the
linnen clothes lie,

7 And the kerchiefe that was vpon his
head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but
wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then wente in also the other disciples,
which came first to the sepulchre, and hee
saw it, and beleueed.

9 For as yet they knewe not the Scrip-
ture, That he must rise againe frō the dead.

10 And the disciples went away againe
vnto their owne home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the se-
pulchre weeping: and as she wept, she bow-
ed her selfe into the sepulchre,

12 And saw two Angels in white, sitting
the one at the head, and the other at the feet,
where the body of Iesus had lyen.

13 And they said vnto her, Woman, why
seest thou? She said vnto them, They haue
taken away my Lorde, & I know not where
they haue layed him.

lay
when
back
not tha
15 Iesus
thou
that h
him, Si
me whe
take him a
16 Iesus
and her selfe
which is to
17 Iesus
I am no
go to my b
and vnto
to my God
18 Mar
disciples t
he had spo
19 ¶ T
was the fi
doores w
assemble
and stood
be vnto y
20 An
vnto the
the disci
Lord.
21 Th
be vnto
you.
22
thed on
the hol
23 V
remitt
again

she layde him.

When shee had thus sayd, shee turned
her selfe backe, and sawe Iesus standing, and
knew not that it was Iesus.

15 Iesus sayeth vnto her, Woman, what
seekest thou? Whom seekest thou? She sup-
posed that hee had bene the gardiner, sayde
vnto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence,
telle me where thou hast layde him, and I will
take him away.

16 Iesus sayeth vnto her, Marie, She tur-
ned her selfe, and sayde vnto him, Rabboni,
which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus saith vnto her, Touch mee not:
for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but
go to my brethren, and say vnto them, I as-
cend vnto my Father, and to your Father, &
to my God and your God.

18 Marie Magdalene came and tolde the
disciples that she had seene the Lord, & that
he had spoken these things vnto her.

19 ¶ The same daye then at night, which
was the first day of the weeke, and when the
doores were shut where the disciples were
assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus
and stood in the mids, & sayd to them, Peace
be vnto you.

20 And when he had so sayd, he shewed
vnto them his hands, and his side. Then were
the disciples glad when they had seene the
Lord.

21 Then sayd Iesus to them againe, Peace
be vnto you: as my Father sent me, so send I
you.

22 And when he had saide that, he brea-
thed on them, and sayd vnto them. Receive
the holy Ghost.

23 Whoso euers finnes yee remit, they are
remitted vnto them: & whoso euers finnes ye
retaine, they are retained.

24 But Thomas one of the twelve
Didymus, was not with them when
he came.

25 The other disciples therefore say
vnto him, We haue seene the Lord: but he
sayd vnto them, Except I see in his hands
of the nayles, & put my finger into the
of the nayles, and put my hand into his side,
I will not beleene it.

26 ¶ And eight dayes after, againe his
disciples were within, and Thomas with them.
Then came Iesus, when the doores were shut
and stood in the mids, and sayd, Peace be
to you.

27 After, said he to Thomas, Put thy
finger here, and see mine hands, and put forth
thine hand, and put it into my side, & be not
faibleffe, but faithfull.

28 Then Thomas answered, and said vnto
him, *Thou art my Lord and my God.*

29 Iesus sayde vnto him, Thomas, because
thou hast seene mee, thou beleuest: blessed
are they which haue not seene & haue beleued.

30 ¶ And many other signes also did Ie-
sus in the presence of his disciples, which are
not written in this booke.

31 But these things are written that yee
might beleue that Iesus is that Christ that
Soone of God, & that in beleeuing yee might
haue life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

¶ Iesus appeareth to his disciples as they
were a fishing, 6.7. whom they knew by a
miraculous draught of fish.

After these things Iesus shewed him-
selfe againe to his disciples at the sea
of Tiberias, and thus shewed he himselfe.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and
Thomas, which is called Didymus, and Na-
thanael of Cana in Galile, and the sonnes of

Za-

and two other of his disciples.
 3 Simon Peter said vnto them, I go a fishing.
 They saide vnto him, Wee also will goe
 with thee. They went their way, and entered
 into a shippe straightway, and that night
 caught they nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come,
 Iesus stood on the shore: neuertheles the dis-
 ciples knew not that it was Iesus.

5 Iesus then sayd vnto them, Sirs, haue ye
 any meate? They answered him, No.

6 Then he sayde vnto them, Cast out the
 net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall
 finde. So they cast out, and they were not a-
 ble at al to draw it, for ^{the} multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore said the disciple whome Ie-
 sus loved, vnto Peter, It is the Lorde. When
 Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he
 girded his coat to him (for he was naked) &
 cast himselfe into the sea.

8 But the other disciple came by ship (for
 they were not far from lande, but about two
 hundredth cubits) & they drew ^{the} net wth fishes.

9 Assoone then as they were come to land,
 they saw hote coales, and fish layd thereon,
 and bread.

10 Iesus sayde vnto them, Bring of the
 fishes, which ye haue now caught.

11 Simon Peter stepped forth, and drew
 the net to lande, full of great fishes, an hun-
 dredth fifty and three: and albeit there were
 so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus sayd vnto them, Come & dine.
 And none of the disciples durst aske him,
 Who art thou, seeing they knewe that hee
 was the Lord.

13 Iesus then came, and tooke bread, and
 gave them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus
 shewed himselfe to his disciples, after that

he was risen againe from the dead.

25 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus said to Simon Peter, Simon *the sonne of Iona*, lovest thou me more then these? He sayd vnto him, Yea Lorde, thou knowest that I loue thee. He said vnto him, Feed my lambe.

26 He said to him againe the second time, Simon *the sonne of Iona*, louest thou me? He sayd vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He said vnto him, Feed my sheepe.

27 He said vnto him the third time, Simon *the sonne of Iona* louest thou me? Peter was sory because he said to him the third time, Louest thou mee? and said vnto him, Lorde, thou knowest all things, thou knowest y I loue thee. Iesus sayd vnto him, Feed my sheepe.

28 Verily, verily I say vnto thee, When thou wast yong, thou girdedst thy selfe, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be olde, thou shalt stretch forth thine hands, and another shall gird thee, and leade thee whither thou wouldest not.

29 And this spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had said this, he said to him, Follow mee.

30 Then Peter turned about and saw the disciple whom Iesus loued, following, which had also leaned on his breast at supper, & he said, Lorde, which is he that betrayeth thee?

31 When Peter therefore sawe him, he sayd to Iesus, Lorde, what shall this man doe?

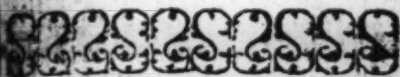
32 Iesus said vnto him, If I will that he tary til I come, what is it to thee? Follow thou me.

33 Then went this worde abroad among the brethre, that this disciple should not die: Yet Iesus said not to him, he shall not die: but if I wil y he tary til I come, what is it to thee?

34 This is that disciple, which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, and

...that his testimony is true.

Now there are also many other things which Iesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose the world could not containe the books that should be written. Amen.



THE ACTES OF THE HOLY
Apostles written by Luke the
Euangelist.

CHAP. I.

*Luke tirth this historie to the Gospel. 9 Christ
being taken into heauen, 10 the Apostles.
11 being warned by the Angel, 12, returns
14 and giue themselves to prayer.*

Have made the former treatise, O Theophilus, of all that Iesus began to doe & teach,

2 Vntill the daye that hee was taken
after that hee through the holy Ghost
giuen commandements vnto the Apostles,
whom he had chosen:

3 To whom also he presented himselfe after
that hee had suffred, by many infallible
tokens, being sene of them by the space of
many dayes, and speaking of those things
which appertaine to the kingdome of God.

4 And when hee had gathered them together,
he commanded them, that they should
depart from Ierusalem, but to waite for
the promise of the Father, which said he, ye
shall heare of me:

For Iohn indeed Baptised with water,
but ye shall bee baptised with the holy
Ghost

THE ACTES
Ghost within these few dayes.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, thou at this time restore \bar{s} kingdom to Israel.

7 And he said vnto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power.

8 But yee shal receiue power of the holy Ghost, when he shal come on you: and yee shalbe witnesses vnto me both in Hierusalem and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto the uttermost part of the earth.

9 And when he had spoken these things, while they behelde, hee was taken vp: for a cloude tooke him out of their sight.

10 And while they looked stedfastly upward heauen, as he went, behold, two men stood by them in white apparrell,

11 Which also saide, Yee men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing into heauen? This Iesus which is taken vp from you into heauen, shall so come, as yee haue seene him go into heauen.

12 ¶ Then returned they vnto Hierusalem from the mount that is called the mount of Olmes, which is neere to Hierusalem, being from it a Sabbath dayes iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper chamber, where abode bothe Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew, and Philip, and Thomas, Bartlemew, Matthew, Iames the sonne of Alphaeus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas Iames brother,

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood up in the middes of the disciples, and saide (unto them) Brethren, I haue heard that Iudas had betrayed Iesus, and hee is dead, and we know not where hee is.

an hundred and twentie)

16 Yee men and brethren, this Scripture must needs haue bene fulfilled, which the holy Ghost by the mouth of Dauid saide before of Iudas, which was guyde to them that tooke Iesus.

17 For he was numbred with vs, & had obtained fellowship in this ministration.

18 He therefore hath purchased a field with the reward of iniquitie: and when hee had throwen downe himselfe headlong, hee burst a sunder in the middies, and al his bowels gushed out.

19 And it is knowen vnto al the inhabitants of Hierusalem insomuch that that field is called in their owne language, Aeldama, that is, The held of blood.

20 For it is written in the booke of Psalmes, Let his habitation be voide, and let no man dwell therein: also, let another take his charge.

21 Wherefore, of these men which haue companied with vs, all the time that the Lord Iesus was conuersant among vs,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of Iohn, vnto the day that he was taken fro vs, must one of them be made a witnesse vvith vs of his resurrection.

23 And they presented two, Ioseph called Barsabas, whose surname was Iustus, and Mathias.

24 And they prayed, saying, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shewe whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That hee may take the roome of this ministration and Apostleship, from which Iudas hath gone astray, to goe to his owne place.

26 Then they gaue forth their lots: and the lot fel on Mathias, & he was by a com-

men consent counted with the cleane
 lles.

CHAP. II

1 The Apostles 4 filled with the holy Ghost
 speake with diuers tongues..

ANd when the daye of Pentecost
 come, they were all with one accord
 in one place,

2 And suddenly there came a sound from
 heauen as of a rushing and mighty winde, &
 it filled all the house where they sate.

5 And there appeared vnto them cleere
 tongues like fire, and it sate vppon each of
 them.

4 And they were all filled with the Ho-
 ly ghost, and began to speake with othe
 tongues, as the Spirit gaue them vtterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hieru-
 salem Iewes, men that feared God, of every
 nation vnder heauen.

6 Now when this was noysed, the mul-
 titude came together and were astonied, be-
 cause that euery man heard them speake in
 owne language.

7 And they wondred al, and marvelled,
 saying among themselves, Beholde, are not
 all these which speake, of Galile?

8 Howe then heare wee euery man in
 owne language wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, & Elamites, and
 the inhabitants of Mesopotamia, and of Iu-
 dea, & of Cappadocia, of Pontus, and Asia,

10 And of Phrygia, and Pamphilia, of E-
 gypt, & of the partes of Libya, which is be-
 side Cyrene, & strangers of Rome, & Iewes,
 and Profelytes,

11 Cretes, and Arabians, we heard them
 speake in our owne tongues the wonderful
 workes of God.

12 They were all then amazed, & dou-

13 And o
 full of m
 14 9 Bur
 15 his yo
 16 thalca, a
 17 to this kno
 18 words.
 19 For
 20 pose, since
 21 But
 22 Prophe
 23 And
 24 God. I wil
 25 and your fo
 26 theie, and
 27 and your ol
 28 And
 29 maides I w
 30 dles, and
 31 And
 32 shone, & r
 33 and fire, a
 34 The
 35 and the m
 36 and notab
 37 An
 38 call on th
 39 Ye
 40 Iesus of N
 41 among yo
 42 and signes
 43 mids of yo
 44 Him
 45 terminate
 46 God, after
 47 you haue
 48 24 W

one to another, What may this

13 And others mocked, and saide, They
are full of new wine.

14 But Peter standing with the eleuen,
rope his voyce, and said vnto them, Ye men
of Galilee, and ye all that inhabite Ierusalem,
be this knowen vnto you, and hearken vnto
my words.

15 For these are not drunken, as yee sup-
pose, since it is but the third houre of the day.

16 But this is that which was spoken by
the Prophet Joel.

17 And it shalbe in the last daies, sayeth
God, I wil powre out my Spirit vpon al flesh,
and your sonnes & your daughters shall pro-
phesie, and your yong men shall see visions,
and your old men shal dreame dreames.

18 And on my seruants, and on my hand-
maidens I wil powre out of my Spirit in those
daies, and they shal prophesie.

19 And I will shew wonders in heauen
aboue, & tokens in the earth beneath, blood
and fire, and the vapour of smoke.

20 The Sun shall be turned into darknes,
and the moone into blood, before that great
and notable day of the Lorde come.

21 And it shal be that whosoener shall
call on the Name of the Lord, shalbe saved.

22 Ye men of Israel, heare these wordes,
Jesus of Nazareth, a man approoued of God
among you with great workes and wonders
and signes, which God did by him in the
mids of you, as ye your selues also know:

23 Him, I say, being deliuered by the de-
termineate counsell, and foreknowledge of
God, after you had take, with wicked hands
you haue crucified and slaine.

24 Whome God hath raysed vp, & loo-

And the former of death, because it is
possible that he should be holden

25 For David saith concerning him
held the Lord alwayes before me: for he
my right hand, that I should not be shak

26 Therefore did mine hart reioyce,
my tongue was glad, and moreover all
flesh shal rest in hope,

27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule
in graue, neither wilt suffer thine holy
to see corruption.

28 Thou hast shewed mee the waye
life, and shalt make me full of ioye with
countenance.

29 Men & brethren, I may holdly speake
vnto you of the Patriarke David, that hee
both dead and buried, and his sepulchre
maineth with vs vnto this daie.

30 Therefore, seeing hee was a Prophet
and knowe that God had sworne with
othe to him, that of the fruit of his loyn
he would rayse vp Christ, concerning
flesh to set him vpon his throne,

31 Hee knowing this before, spake of
resurrection of Christ, that his soule shoul
not be left in graue, neither his flesh shoul
see corruption.

32 This Iesus hath God raised vp, where
of we are all witnesses.

33 Since then y^e he by the right hand
God hath bene exalted, and hath receiued
his Father the promise of the holy Ghost,
hath shewed forth this which ye now see &
heare.

34 For David is not ascended into hea
uen, but he sayeth, The Lorde sayde to my
Lord, Sit at my right hand,

35 Vntill I make thine enemies thy
footestoole.

36 Therefore, let all the house of Isra

by a suretie, that God hath made his
 Lord, and Christ, this Iesus, *I say*, whom
 he crucified.

37 Now when they heard it; they were
 pricked in their hearts, and said vnto Peter,
 and the other Apostles, Men and brethren,
 what shall we doe?

38 Then Peter said vnto them, Amend
 your liues, and be baptized euery one of you
 in the Name of Iesus Christ for the remission
 of sinnes, & ye shall receiue the gift of the
 holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is made vnto you, and
 to your children, and to all that are a farre
 off, as many as the Lord our God shall
 call.

40 And with many other words he be-
 sought and exhorted them, saying, Saue your
 selues from this froward generation.

41 Then they that gladly receiued his
 word, were baptized: and the same day there
 were added to the Church about three thou-
 sand soules.

42 And they continued in the Apostles do-
 ctine and fellowship, & breaking of bread,
 and prayers.

43 And feare came vpon euery soule, & many
 wonders & signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all were beleeued, were in one place,
 and had all things common.

45 And they sold their possessions and
 goods, & parted them to all men, as euery
 one had neede.

46 And they continued dayly with one
 accord in the Temple, and breaking bread at
 home, did eate their meate together with
 gladnesse, and singlenesse of hearts.

47 Praying God, and had fauour with all
 the people: & the Lorde added to the Church
 day to day, such as should be saved.

THE ACTES.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter going up into the Temple with John
2 healeth the creeple.

NOW Peter and Iohn went vp together
into the Temple, at the ninth houre
of prayer.

2 And a certaine man which was a creeple
from his mothers wombe, was carried in the
whom they layde dayly at the gate of the
Temple called Beautifull, to aske almes
of them that entred into the Temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and Iohn, that they
would enter into the Temple, desired to
receiue an almes.

4 And Peter earnestly beholding him with
Iohn, said, Looke on vs.

5 And he gaue heede vnto them, trusting
to receiue some thing of them.

6 Then said Peter, Siluer and gold haue I
none, but such as I haue, that giue I thee
in the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth
arise, vp, and walke.

7 And he tooke him by the right hand,
lift him vp, and immediatly his feete and
anckle bones receiued strength.

8 And he leaped vp, stood, & walked,
and entred with them into the Temple, walking
and leaping and praying God.

9 And all the people sawe him walke,
praying God.

10 And they knew him, that it was he
which sat for the almes at the Beautifull
gate of the Temple: and they were amazed
and astonied at that which was done
vnto him.

11 ¶ And as the creeple which was heald,
held Peter and Iohn, all the people ran
gathered vnto them in the porch which is
called Solomons.

12 So when Peter saw it, he answered vnto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why looke ye stedfastly on vs, as though by our owne power and godlinesse, we had made this man goe?

13 The God of Abraham, & Isaac, & Iacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his sonne Iesus, whom ye betrayed, and denied in the presence of Pilate, when he had iudged him to be deliuered.

14 But ye denied the holy one & γ Iust, and desired a murderer to be giuen you,

15 And killed the Lord of life, who God hath raysed from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his Name hath made this man sound, whom ye see, and know, through faith in his Name: and the faith which is by him, hath giuen to him this perfect health, of his whole body in the presence of you al.

17 And now brethre, I know γ through ignorance yee did it, as did also your gouernours

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of al his Prophets that Christ shoulde suffer hee hath thus fulfilled.

19 Amend your lines therefore: & turne, that your sinnes may be put away, when the time of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shal send Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you.

21 Whom the heauen must containe vntill the time that al things bee restored, which hath spoken by the mouth of al his holy Prophets since the world began.

22 For Moses said vnto the Fathers, The Lord your God shal raise vp vnto you a Prophet, euen of your brethren like vnto me: he shall beare him in all things, what-

THE ACTES.

Shewer he shall say vnto you.

23 For it shal be that euery person
shal not heare that Prophet, shalbe de-
ed out of the people.

24 Also all the Prophets from Samuel
thence forth as many as haue spoken,
likewise foretold of these dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the Prophet
and of the covenant, which God hath
vnto our fathers, saying to Abraham,
in thy seede, shall al the kinreds of the
be blessed.

26 First vnto you hath God raised
Sonne Iesus, and him he hath sent to
you, in turning euery one of you from
iniquities.

CHAP. iiij.

1 Peter & Iohn 3 are taken and brought
the Councill: 7 and 19 They speake boldly
Christ's cause.

ANd as they spake vnto the people,
Priests and the Captaines of the
ple, and the Sadduces came vpon them,

2 Taking it grievously that they
the peoole, and preached in Iesus Name
resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, & put
in hold, vntill the next day: for it was
euentide.

4 Howbeit many of the which heard
word, beleueed, and the number of them
about five thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morrow
that their rulers, & Elders and Scribes
gathered together at Ierusalem,

6 And Annas the chiefe Priest, and Ca-
phas, and Iohn & Alexander, and as many
were of the kinred of the hie Priests.

7 And when they had set them be-
them they asked, By what power, or in
the name of what Prince dost thou do this?

...have ye done this?

8 Then Peter full of the holy Ghost, saide
unto them, Ye rulers of the people, & Elders
of Israel.

9 Forasmuch as we this day are examined
of the good deed done to the impotent man,
how it by what meanes hee is made whole.

10 Be it knowen vnto you all, and to all
the people of Israel, that by the name of Iesus
Christ of Nazareth, whom ye haue crucified,
whome God raised, againe from the dead,
whom by him doeth this mā stand here before
you whole.

11 This is the stone cast aside of you build-
ers, which is become the head of the cor-
ner.

12 Neither is there saluation in any other:
for among men there is giuen none other
name vnder heauen, whereby we must be
saved,

13 Nowe when they saw the boldenesse
of Peter and Iohn, and vnderstood that they
were vnlearned men & without knowledge,
they marvelled, & knew them, that they had
dined with Iesus.

14 And beholding also y^e man which was
healed standing with thē, they had nothing
to say against it.

15 Then they commanded them to goe
side out of y^e Council, & conferred among
themselues,

16 Saying, What shall wee doe to these
men: for surely a manifest signe is done by
them, & it is openly knowen to al them that
 dwell in Ierusalem; & we cannot denie it,

17 But that it bee noised no farther among
the people, let vs threaten and charge them,
that they speake henceforth to no mā in this
name.

18 So they called them, & commaunded
them

THE ACTES.

them that in no wise they shoulde speake
teach in the Name of Iesus.

19 But Peter & Iohn answered vnto them
and said, Whether it be right in the sight
of God, to obey you rather then God, iudge ye.

20 For we cannot but speake the things
which we haue seene and heard.

21 So they threatned them, and let them
go, & founde nothing howe to punish them
because of the people : for al men praised
God for that which was done.

22 For the man was aboue forty years
olde, on whom the miracle of healing was
shewed.

23 Then as soone as they were let goe, they
came to their fellowes, and shewed al that
the Priest and Elders had said vnto them.

24 And when they heard it, they lift
up their voices to God with one accord, &
said, O Lord, thou art y God, which hast made
heaven, and the earth, the sea, & al things
therein.

25 Which by the mouth of thy seruant
David hast said, Why did the Gentiles rage,
and the people imagine vaine things?

26 The kings of the earth assembled,
and the rulers came together against the Lord,
against his Christ.

27 For doubles, against thine holy Sonne
Iesus, whom thou hadst anoynted, both Herod
Antipas and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles
and the people of Israel, gathered themselves
together,

28 To doe whatsoeuer thine hand, &
thy counsell had determined before to be done.

29 And now, O Lord, behold their threatenings,
and graunt vnto thy seruants with
boldnesse to speake thy word.

30 So that thou stretch forth thine hand
that healing, and signes and wonders may
be done in thy name.

CHAP. V.

by the name of thine holy sonne Ie-
sus,

31 And when as they had prayed, [¶] place
was shake where they were assebled toge-
ther, and they were all filled with the holy
Ghost, & they spake the word of God bold-
ly.

32 And the multitude of them [¶] beloued
were of one heart, and of one soule: neither
any of them said, that any things of [¶] which
hee possessed, was his owne, but they had all
things common.

33 And with great power gaue the Apo-
stles witness of the resurrection of the Lord
Iesus: and great grace was vpon them al.

34 Neither was there any among them, [¶]
lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands
or houses, solde them, ~~and~~ brought the price
of the thinges that were solde.

35 And laide it downe at the Apostles
feete, and it was distributed vnto every man,
according as he had neede.

36 Also Ioses ~~which~~ which was called of the
Apostles Barnabas (that is by interpretation,
the son of consolation) being a Leuite, and of
the cuntrey of Cyprus,

37 Whereas he had land, sold it, & brought
the money, and laid it downe at [¶] Apostles
feete.

CHAP. V.

Ananias, for his deceit in keeping back parte
of the price, & falleth downe dead, 10 and
likewise Sapphira his wife.

DVt a certaine man named Ananias, with
Sapphira his wife, sold a possession.

3 And kept away parte of the price, his
wife also being of counsel, and brought a cer-
taine part, & laid it down at [¶] Apostles feete.

4 Then said Peter. Ananias why hath
thou filled thine heart, [¶] thou shouldest lie
vnto

THE ACTES.

vnto the holy Ghost, and keep away
the price of this possession?

4 Whiles it remained, appertained it
vnto thee: and after it was solde, was it
in thine own power? how is it that thou
receiued this thing in thine heart? thou
hadst not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 Now when Ananias heard these words
he fel down, & gaue vp the ghost. The
feare came on al the, that heard these things.

6 And the yong men rose vp, and tooke
him vp, and caried *hiss* out, and buried him.

7 And it came to passe about the space
three houres after, that his wife came in,
ignorant of that which was done.

8 And Peter said vnto her, Tell me, did
yee the land for so much? And she said, Yea
for so much.

9 The Peter said vnto her, Why haue
ye agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of
Lord? beholde, the feet of them which
buried thine husband, are at the doore, and
shal cary thee out.

10 Then she fell downe straightway
his feete, and yeelded vp the ghost: and
young men came in, and found her dead,
and caried her out, & buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came on al the Church,
and on as many as heard these things.

12 Thus by the hands of the Apostles
were many signes & wōders shewed among
the people (and they were all with one
cord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the other durst no man ioyne
himselfe to them: neuerthelasse the people
magnified them,

14 Also the number of them that be-
lieued in the Lord, both of men & womē grew
more and more.)

15 In some

15 Inſomuch that they brought the ſicke into the ſtreets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the leaſt way the ſhadow of Peter, whē he came by, might ſhadow ſome of them.

16 There came alſo a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hieruſalem, bringing ſicke folkes, & them which were vexed with yncleane ſpirites, who were al healed.

17 ¶ Then the chiefe Priēſt roſe vp, and all they that were with him (which was the ſect of the Sadduces) and were full of indignation,

18 And laid hands on the Apoſtles, and put them in the common priſon.

19 But the Angel of ^{the} Lord, by night opened the priſon doores, and brought them forth, and ſaid,

20 Goe your way, & ſtande in the Temple, and ſpeake to the people, al the words of this life.

21 So when they hearde it, they entred into the Temple earely in the morning, and taught. And the chiefe Priēſt came, and they that were with him, and called ye Council together, & al the Elders of the children of Iſrael, and ſent to the priſon, to cauſe them to be brought.

22 But when the officers came, & found them not in the priſon, they returned and tolde it,

23 Saying, Certainly wee found the priſon ſhut as ſure as was poſſible, & the keepers ſtanding without, before ^{the} doores: but whē we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Then when the chiefe Priēſt, and the captaine of the Temple, and the high Priēſt heard theſe things, they doubted of them, whereunto this would grow,

25 Then

THE ACTES.

25 Then came one, and shewed
ing, Beholde, the men that yee put in
are standing in the Temple, and teach
people.

26 Then went the captaine with the
sifers, and brought the without violence
they feared y people, least they should
benefited)

27 And when they had brought them,
they set them before the Councill, and the
chiefe Priest asked them,

28 Saying, Did not we straitly comma
you, that ye shoulde not teach in this Name
& behold, yee haue filled Hierusalem with
your doctrine, & yee would bring this man
blood vpon vs.

29 Then Peter and the Apostles answ
red, and said, We ought rather to obey God
then men.

30 The God of our fathers hath raised v
Iesus, whom yee slew, and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God list vp with his righ
hand, to be a Prince, & a Saviour, to giue re
pentance to Israell, and forgiveness of sinnes.

32 And we are his witnessles concerning
these things which we say: yea, and the ho
ly Ghost, whom God hath giuen to them
to obey him.

33 Now whē they heard it, they brau
anger, and consulted to slay them,

34 Then stood there vp in the Councill
certaine Pharise named Gamaliel a doctour
of the Lawe, honoured of all the people, and
commanded to put the Apostles forth for a
little space,

35 And said vnto them, Mē of Israel, re
heede to your selues, what yee intend to do
touching these men.

36 For before these times, rose vp The

boasting
number of m
was slaine, &
were scatter

37 After
the dayes of
much people

all that obey

38 And N

shoes from

if this coun

come to nor

39 But

know it, leas

against God.

40 And

the Apostles

they comm

in the Nam

41 So th

joyeing, th

their rebul

42 And

whose r

Iesus Chr

2 The Ap

consnip 5

Seuen f

And i

A disci

of the Gr

enise thei

daily mi

2 Then

the discipl

that wee

are the

Wh

CHAP. VI.

boasting himselfe, to whom resorted a number of men, about foure hundred: who was slaine, and they all which obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.

37 After this arose vp Iudas of Galile, in the dayes of the tribute, and drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all that obeyed him were scattered abroad.

38 And Now I say vnto you, Refrain your shewes from these men, & let them alone: for if this counsel, or this worke be of me, it will come to nought:

39 But if it bee of God, ye cannot deny it, least ye bee founde euil fighters against God.

40 And to him they agreed, and called the Apostles: and when they had beaten the, they commanded y they should not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe.

41 So they departed from the Council, reioycing, that they were counted woorthie to suffer rebuke for his Name.

42 And daily in y Temple, & from house to house they ceased not to teach, & preach Iesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

2 The Apostles 3 appoint the office of Deaconship 5 to seven choyse men: 8 Of whom Steuen full of faith is one.

And in those dayes, as the number of the disciples grew, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians towards the Hebrews, because their widowes were neglected in the daily ministring.

3 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples together, & said, It is not meete that wee shoulde leaue the word of God to serue the tables,

Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among

among you seuen men of honest report, & of the holie Ghost, and of wisdom, which we may appoint to this businesse.

4 And we wil giue our selues continually to prayer, and to the ministration of the word.

5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Steuen a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, and Philip and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, & Parmenas, and Nicolas a Proselyte of Antiochia;

6 Which they set before the Apostles: and they prayed, and laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples was multiplied in Hierusalem greatly, and a great companie of the Priests were obedient to the faith.

8 ¶ Now Steuen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue, which are called Libertins & Cyrenians, and of Alexandria, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, and disputed with Steuen.

10 But they were not able to resist the wisdom, & the Spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men which said, Wee haue heard him speake blasphemous words against Moses and God.

12 Thus they moued the people & the Elders, & the Scribes: and running vpon him caught him and brought him to the Council.

13 And set forth false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous words against this holy place, & the law.

14 For we haue heard him say, that the Iesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, & shall change the ordinances, which Moses gave.

CHAP. VII.

And as al that sate in the Council, looked Redfastly on him, they sawe his face as it had bene the face of an Angel.

CHAP. VII.

Steven Pleading his cause sheweth that God chose γ fathers. 20 before Moses was borne, 47, and before the Temple was built.

Then saide the chiefe Priest, Are these things so?

2 And he said, Yee men, brethren, and fathers, hearken. That God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, while he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

3 And saide vnto him, Come out of thy countrey, and from thy kinred, and come into the land, which I shal shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the lande of the Caldeans, and dwelt in Charran. And after γ his father was dead, God brought him from thence into this land, wherein ye now dwell,

5 And he gaue him none inheritance in it no, not the breadth of a foot: yet he promised that he would giue it to him for a possession, and to his seede after him, when as yet hee had no child.

6 But God spake thus, γ his seed should be a sojourner in a strange lād, & that they should keep it in bondage, & intreat it euill foure hundred yeres.

7 But the nation to whom they shal be in bondage, will I iudge, saith God: and after that, they shall come forth and serue me in this place.

8 He gaue him also the couenant of circumcision: and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day: and Isaac begate Jacob, and Jacob the twelue Patriarchs.

9 And the Patriarks moued with enuy, sold Ioseph into Egypt: but God was γ him

10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions

THE ACTES.

visions, and gaue him fauour and grace
in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt, who
made him gouernour ouer Egypt, & ouer his
whole house.

11 ¶ Then came there a famine ouer all
land of Egypt and Canaan, and great afflic-
tion, that our fathers found no sustenance.

12 But when Iacob heard that there was
corne in Egypt, he sent our fathers first.

13 And at the second time Ioseph was
known of his brethren, and Iosephs kinred
was made known vnto Pharao.

14 Then sent Ioseph and caused his father
to bee brought, and all his kinred, euen three
score and fiftene soules.

15 So Iacob went downe into Egypt, and
he died, and our fathers.

16 And were remoued into Sychem, and
were put in the sepulchre, that Abraham had
bought for money of the sonnes of Emor,
sonne of Sychem.

17 But when the time of y^e promise drew
nere, which God had sworne to Abraham,
the people grew and multiplied in Egypt.

18 Til another King arose, which knew
not Ioseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly wth our kinred,
and euil intreated our fathers, & made them
to cast out their yong children, y^e they should
not remaine a line.

20 The same time was Moses borne, and
was acceptable vnto God, which was nour-
ished vp in his fathers house three moneths.

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs
daughter rooke him vp, and nourished him
for her own sonne.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wis-
dome of the Egyptians, and was mighty in
wordes and in deedes.

23 Now when he was full fourtie yeere
olde, it came into his heart to visite his bre-

the children of Israel.

24 And when he saw one of them suffer wrong he defended him, & auenged his quarrel that had the harme done to him, & smote the Egyptian.

25 For he supposed his brethren would haue vnderstood, γ God by his hand should giue them deliuerance: but they vnderstood it not.

26 And the next day, he shewed himselfe vnto them as they stroue, and would haue set them at one againe, saying, Sirs, yee are brethren: why doe yee wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying. Who made thee a prince and a iudge ouer vs.

28 Wilt thou kill me as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday.

29 Then fled Moses at that saying & was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sonnes,

30 And when forty yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of fire, in a bush.

31 And when Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight and as he drew neere to consider it, the voice of γ Lord came vnto him, saying,

32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, & durst not behold it.

33 Then the Lord said to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene γ affliction of my people, which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groning, and am come down to deliuer them: and now come, and I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This

35 This Moses whom they forsooke,
Who made thee a Prince and a Iudge
The same God sent for a prince, and a deli-
uerer by the hand of the Angel, which appeared
unto him in the bush.

36 He brought them out, doing wonders
and miracles in the land of Egypt, and in the
Red Sea, and in the wilderness forty yeres.

37 This is that Moses, which said vnto
the children of Israel, A Prophet shall the Lord
your God raise vp vnto you, *euen* of your
brethren, like vnto me: him shall ye hear.

38 This is he which was in the Congregation
in the wilderness with the Angel, which spake
vnto him in mount Sina, and with our fathers
who receiued the liuely oracles to giue vnto
you.

39 And whom our fathers would not obey,
but refused, and in their hearts turned back
again into Egypt.

40 Saying vnto Aarō, Make vs gods that
may go before vs: for we know not what
become of this Moses that brought vs out
of the land of Egypt.

41 And they made a calfe in those dayes,
and offered sacrifice vnto the idole, and
reioyced in the workes of their owne hands.

42 Then God turned himselfe away, and
gaue them vp to serue the host of heauen,
as it is written in the booke of the Prophets,
O house of Israel, haue ye offered to me flaine
beastes and sacrifices by the space of forty
yeres in the wilderness?

43 And ye took vp the tabernacle of
Moloch, and the starre of your god Remphan
figures, which ye made to worship them:
therefore I will cary you away beyōd Baby-
lon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of wit-
ness in the wilderness as he had appointed
speaking vnto Moses, that he should make
it according to the pattern which was shewed
vnto him in mount Sina.

CHAP. VII.

According to the fashion that he had seene,
 Which *tabernacle* also our fathers re-
 ceived, & brought in with Iesus into the pos-
 session of the Gentiles, which God draue out
 before our fathers, vnto the dayes of Da-
 uid:
 46 Who found fauour before God, & de-
 sired that he might find a tabernacle for the
 God of Iacob,
 47 But Solomon built him an house.
 48 Howbeit the most High, dwelleth not
 in temples made with hands, as sayth *ŷ* Pro-
 phet.
 49 Heaven is my throne, and earth is my
 footstool: what house wil ye build for me,
 sayth *ŷ* Lord? or what place is it *ŷ* I should
 dwell in?
 50 Hath not mine hand made all these
 things?
 51 Ye stifnecked & of vncircumcised hearts
 and eares, ye haue alwayes resisted the holy
 Ghost: as your fathers did, so doe you.
 52 Which of the Prophets haue not your
 fathers persecuted? and they haue slaine the,
 which shewed before of the comming of *ŷ*
 Christ, of whom ye are now the betrayes and
 murderers.
 53 Which haue receiued the Law by the
 ordinance of Angels, and haue not kept it.
 54 But when they heard these things,
 their hearts braft for anger, & they gnashed
 of foreteeth at him with *their* teeth.
 55 But hee being ful of the holy Ghost,
 looked stedfastly into heauen, and sawe the
 glory of God, and Iesus standing at the right
 hand of God.
 56 And sayd, Beholde, I see the heauens
 open, and the Sonne of man standing at the
 right hand of God,
 57 Then they gaue a shout with a loud
 voice,

voice, and stopped their eares, and ran
him violently all at once.

58 And cast him out of the citie, & stoned him: and the witnesses layd down their
clothes at a yong mans feete, named Saul.

59 And they stoned Steuen, who called
on God, & said, Lord Iesus, receiue my spirit.

60 And he kneeled down, & cried with
a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sinne to their
charge. And when he had thus spoken, he
slept.

CHAP. VIII.

3 *The godly make lamentation for Steuen, Saul maketh hauocke of the Church. 5 Philip preacheth Christ at Samaria.*

And Saul consented to his death, and
at that time, there was a great persecution
against the Church, which was at Hierusalem
and they were all scattered abroad through
the regions of Iudæa and of Samaria, except
the Apostles.

2 Then certaine men fearing God, came
Steuen amōg them, to be buried, & made great
lamentation for him.

3 But Saul made hauocke of the Church,
and entred into euery house, and drewe out
both men & women, & put them into prison.

4 Therefore they were scattered abroad
went to and fro preaching the word.

5 ¶ Then came Philip into the citie
Samaria, & preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people gaue heede vnto the
things which Philip spake with one accord
hearing, & seeing the miracles which he
did.

7 For vncleane spirits crying with a
voice, came out of many that were possessed
of them: and many taken with palsies, and
halted, were healed.

8 And there was great ioy in that citie.

9 And there was before in the citie a

...called Simon, which vsed witch-
craft, & bewitched the people of Samaria,
saying, that he himselfe was some great mi-
10 To whom they gaue heed from y^e least
to the greatest, saying, This mā is that great
power of God.

11 And they gaue heed vnto him, because
that of long time he had bewitched them wth
sorceries.

12 But as soone as they beleueed Philip,
which preached the things that concerned y^e
kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus
Christ, they were baptized both men & wo-
men.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleueed also,
and was baptized, and continued with Phi-
lip, and wondered, when hee saw the signes
and great miracles which were done.

14 ¶ Now when y^e Apostles which were
in Hierusalem, heard say, that Samaria had
receiued y^e word of God, they sent vnto the
Peter and Iohn.

15 Which when they were come downe,
prayed for them, that they might receiue the
holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet hee was fallen downe on
one of them but they were baptized onely
in the Name of the Lord Iesus)

17 Then laied they their hands on them,
and they receiued the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon sawe, that through
laying on of y^e Apostles hands the holy Ghost
was giuen he offered them money,

19 Saying Giue me also this power, that
whomsoeuer I lay the handes, he may re-
ceiue the holy Ghost.

20 Then said Peter vnto him, Thy money
perish wth thee, because thou thinkest that y^e
gift of God may be obtained with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor fellowshipp

in this businesse: for thine heart is not
in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wicked-
nes, and pray God, that if it bee possible, the
thought of thine heart may be forgieue thee.

23 For I see that thou art in the gal of
bitternes, and in the bond of iniquitie.

24 Then answered Simon, and sayd, Pray
ye to the Lorde for mee, that none of these
things which ye haue spoken come vpon me.

25 ¶ So they, when they had testified &
preached the worde of the Lord, returned to
Hierusalem, and preached y^e Gospel in many
towns of the Samaritanes.

26 Then the Angel of the Lord spake vn-
to Philip, saying. Arise, and goe toward the
South vnto the way that goeth down from
Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is waste.

27 And he arose and went on: & behold
a certain Eunuche of Ethiopia, Candaces y^e
Queene of the Ethiopians, chiefe gouernour,
who had the rule of al her treasure, & came
to Hierusalem to worship:

28 And as he returned sitting in his charet
he read Esaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirit saide vnto Philip. Go
neere and ioine thy selfe to yonder charet.

30 And Philip ran thither, & heard him
reade the Prophet Esaias. and sayd, But vn-
derstandest thou what thou readeest?

31 And he sayd, How can I, except I ha-
ue a guide? And he desired Philip, y^e he would
come vp and sit with him.

32 Now the place of the Scripture which
he read, was this, He was led as a sheepe to
the slaughter: & like a lambe dumbe before
his shearer, so opened he not his mouth.

33 In his humilitie his iudgement, ha-
bene exalted: but who shal declare his gene-
ration? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 The

CHAP. IX.

34 Then the Eunuch answered Philip, & sayd, I pray thee, of whom speaketh \bar{y} Prophet this? of himselfe or of some other mā?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, & preached vnto him Iesus.

36 And as they went on their vway, they came vnto a certaine vvater, & the Eunuch sayd, See, here is vvater, vvhat dorth let me to be baptized?

37 And Philip sayd vnto him, If thou beleeuest with al thine heart, thou mayest, The he answered, and sayde, I beleue that that Iesus Christ is that Sonne of God.

38 Then hee commanded the charet to stand stil: and they vvent down both into \bar{y} vvater, both Philip and the Eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 And as soone as they vvhere come vp out of the vvater, the Spirit of \bar{y} Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch sawe him no more: so he vvent on his vway reioycing.

40 But Philip vv as found at Azotus, and he vvalked to and fro preaching in al the ci- ties, til he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

2 Saul going toward Damascus, 4 is strooken downe to the ground of the Lorde: 10 Ananias sent to baptize him.

ANd Saul yet breathing out treatning and slaughter against the disciples of \bar{y} Lord, went vnto the hie Priest,

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, \bar{y} if hee found any that were of that way (either men or women) he might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem.

3 Now as he iourned, it came to passe, \bar{y} as he was come neere to Damascus, suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen.

THE ACTES.

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice, saying to him, Saul, Saul: why persecutest thou me?

5 And he sayd, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord sayd, I am Iesus, whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against prickes.

6 He then both trembling and astonished, said, Lorde? what wilt thou that I doe? And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, & goe into the citie, & it shalbe told thee what thou shalst doe.

7 The men also which iournied with him stood amazed, hearing his voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the ground, and opened his eyes, but saw no man. Then led they him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 Where he was three dayes without sight, and neither ate nor dranke.

10 And there was a certain Disciple in Damascus named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias, And he said, Behold, I am here Lord,

11 Then the Lord said vnto him, Arise, & go into the streete which is called Streight, and seeke in the house of Iudas after one called Saul of Tarsus for behold, he prayeth.

12 And he saw in a vision a man standing, Ananias comming in to him, and putting his hands on him that he might receiue his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euill he hath done to thy Saints at Hierusalem.

14 Moreover, here he hath authoritie of the hie priests, to bind all that call on thy Name.

15 Then the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way: for he is a chosen vessel vnto me,

CHAP. IX.

before my Name before y Gentiles, & kings,
and the children of Israel.

16 For I wil shew him how many things
he must suffer for my Names sake.

17 Then Ananias went his way, and en-
tered into y house, and put his hands on him,
& sayd, Brother Saul, the Lord hath sent me
(even Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the
way as thou comest) that thou mightest re-
ceive thy sight, and be filled with the holy
Ghost.

18 And immediately there fell from his
eyes as it had ben scales, & suddenly he recei-
ued sight, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And receiued meate & was strengthe-
ned. So was Saul certaine daies with the
disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straight way he preached Christ
in the Synagogues, that he was that Sonne of
God,

21 So that all that heard him, were ama-
zed, & sayd, Is not this he, that made houecke
of them which called on this Name in Hieru-
salem, and came hither for that intent, that
he should bring them bound vnto the high
Priest.

22 But Saul increased y more in strength
and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at
Damascus, confirming, that this was that
Christ.

23 And after that many dayes were fulfil-
led, the Iewes tooke counsel together, to kill
him.

24 But their laying await was knowen
of Saul: now they watched the gates day &
night, that they might kil him.

25 Then the disciples tooke him by night,
and put him through the wal, and let him
downe by a rope in a basket.

26 And whē Saul was come to Hierusalem,
he

he assayed to ioint himselfe with the
disciples: but they were al a frayd of him, and
beleeued not that he was a discipulo.

27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought
him to the Apostles, and declared to them
how he had seen the Lord in the way, and
that he had spoken vnto him. & how he had
spoken boldly at Damascus in the Name of Je-
sus.

28 And he was conuersant with them in
Hierusalem.

29 And spake boldly in the Name of the
Lord Iesus, and spake and disputed against the
Grecians, but they went about to slay him.

30 But when the brethren knew it, they
brought him to Cesarea, and sent him forth
to Tarsus,

31 Then had the Churches rest through-
out Iudea, & Galilee and Samaria, and were
edified and walked in the feare of the Lord, &
were multiplied by the comfort of the holy
Ghost.

32 And it came to passe, as Peter walked
throughout all quarters, hee came also to the
Saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And he found there a certaine man
named Aeneas, which had kept his couch eight
yeeres, and was sicke of the palsey.

34 The said Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Ie-
sus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, & trusse
up thy couch together. And he arose immediatly.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Sa-
ron, sawe him, and turned to the Lord.

36 There was also at Ioppa a certaine
woman, a discipulo, named Tabitha (which by
interpretation is called Dorcas) she was full
of good woorkes, and almes which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes,
she was sicke, & died: & when they had wa-
shed her, they layed her in an upper chamber.

Nowe forasmuch as Lydda was neere
to Ioppa, & the disciples had heard that Pe-
ter was there, they sent vnto him two men,
desiring that he would not delay to come
vnto them.

39 Then Peter arose & came with them;
and when he was come: they brought him
into the vpper chāber, where al the widows
stood by him weeping, and shewing the
coates and garments which Dorcas made
while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and
kneeled down & prayed, and turned him to
the body, and sayd, Tabitha, Arise. And she
opened hee eyes, and when she saw Peter,
saie vp.

41 Then he gaue her the hand, & lift her
vp, & called the Saints & widowes, & resto-
red her aliuē.

42 And it was knowen thorowout al Iop-
pa, and many beleued in the Lord

43 And it came to passe that, he taried ma-
ny dayes in Ioppa with one Simon a tanner,

CHAP. X.

34 Peter preacheth the Gospel to Cornelius &
his houshold: 45, Who hauing receiued the
holy Ghost, 47 are baptizēd.

Furthermore there was a certaine man in
Cesarea, called Cornelius, a captaine of
the band called the Italian band.

2 A deuout man, and one that feared God
with all his houshoulde, which gaue much
almes to the people, and prayed God conti-
nually.

3 He saw in a vision evidently (about the
ninth houre of the day) an Angel of God co-
ming in to him and saying vnto him, Cor-
nelius,

4 But when he looked on him, he was
frighted, & sayd, What it is Lord? And he sayd

vnto

THE ACTES.

unto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp into remembrance before God.

5 Now therefore send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter.

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the seaside: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to doe.

7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his seruants and a souldier that feared God, one of them that waited on him.

8 And tolde them all things, & sent them to Ioppa,

9 On the morow as they vvent on their iourney, and drevv neere vnto the citie, Peter vvent vp vpon the house to pray, about sixt houre,

10 Then waxed he an hungred, & woulde haue eaten: but while they made some thing ready, he fel into a trance.

11 And he saye heauen opened, & a certaine vessel come downe vnto him, as it had bene a great sheete, knit at the foure corners, and was let downe to the earth.

12 Wherein were all maner of foure footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beastes, creeping things and fowles of the heauen.

13 And there came a voyce to him, and said to Peter, kil and eate,

14 But Peter sayd, Not so Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is polluted or vncleane.

15 And the voyce spake vnto him againe the second time, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not.

16 This was so done thrise: and the vessel was drawen vp againe into heauen.

17 Now while Peter doubted himself what this vision which he had seene, meant, behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius

Cornelius
good at
18 A
which
there.
19 A
on, the
men see
20 A
and goe
haue sen
21 A
which
& sayd
what is
22 A
a iust m
good re
sed from
for thee
vwordes
23 T
them, an
vwith the
pa accor
24 A
Cesarea
and had
special f
25 A
that Co
his feete
26 B
vp: fore
27 A
in, & fou
28 An
is an v
company
God

CHAP. X

Cornelius had enquired for Simons house, & stood at the gate.

18 And called, and asked, whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 And while Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said vnto him, Behold, three men seeke thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee downe, and goe with them, & doubt nothing: for I have sent them.

21 ¶ Then Peter went downe to y me, which were sent vnto him from Cornelius, & sayd, Beholde, I am he vvhom yee seeke: what is the cause wherefore yee are come?

22 And they sayd, Cornelius the captain, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among al the Iewes, was vvarned from heauen by an holy Angell, to send for thee into his house, and to heare thy wordes.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them, and the next day Peter went fourth, with them, and certaine brethren from Iopha accompanied him.

24 ¶ And the day after, they entred into Cesarea: Nowe Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen, and special friends.

25 And it came to passe, as Peter came in, that Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feete, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp: for enen I my selfe am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he came in, & found many that were come together.

28 And he sayd vnto them, Ye know y it is an vnlawfull thing for a man y is a lew, to company, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call

ACTES.
call any man polluted, or vncleane.

29 Therefore came I vnto you, wth saying nay, whē I was sent for, I aske the-
fore, for what intent haue ye sent for me?

30 Then Cornelius said, Foure dayes agoe
about this houre I fasted, and at the ninth
houre I prayed in mine house, and behold
a man stood before me in bright clothing.

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard,
& thine almes are had in remembrance in
sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call for
Simon whose surname is Peter, (he is lodging
in y^e house of Simon a tanner by the sea side)
who when hee commeth, shall speake vnto
thee.

33 Then sent I for thee immediately, and
thou hast well done to come. Now therefore
are we all here present before God, to heare
all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 Then Peter opened his mouth, & sayde,
Of a trueth, I perceiue that God is
accepter of persons.

35 But in euery nation he y^e feareth him,
& worketh righteousnesse is accepted with
him.

36 Ye know the word which God hath
sent to the children of Israel, preaching peace
by Iesus Christ, which is Lord of all.

37 Euen the word which came thorow
Iudea, beginning in Galile, after the baptism
which Iohn preached,

38 To wit, how God anoynted Iesus
Nazareth with the holy Ghost, & with power,
who wēt about doing good, & healing
all that were oppressed of the deuill: for God
was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things
which hee did both in the lād of y^e Iewes

Jerusalem: whom they slewe, hanging
on a tree,

40 Him God raised vp the third day, and
caused that he vvas shewd openly:

41 Not to al the people, but vnto y^e vvit-
nesse chosen before of God, *even* to vs vvhich
did eate & drinke vvith him, after he arose
from the dead.

42 And he commaunded vs to preach vn-
to the people, and to testifie, that it is he that
is ordeined of God, a Iudge of quicke and
dead.

43 To him also giue al the Prophets vvit-
nesse, that through his Name, al that beleue
in him, shall receiue remission of finnes.

44 While Peter yet spake these vvords, y^e
holy Ghost fel on all them, vvhich heard the
vvord.

45 So they of the circumcision vvhich be-
lieued, vvere astonied, as many as came vvith
Peter, because that on the Gentiles also vvas
poured out the gift the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speake vvith
tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered
Peter,

47 Can any man forbid vvater, that these
should not be baptized, which haue receiued
the holy Ghost, as well as we?

48 So he commanded them to be baptized
in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they
him to tarie certaine dayes.

CHAP. XI.

*Peter being accused for going to the Gentiles
& defendeth himselfe. 22 Barnabas is sent
to Antiochia.*

NOW the Apostles and the brethren that
were in Iudea, heard that the Gentiles
also receiued the word of God.

And whē Peter was come vp to Hierusalē
of y^e circumcisiō contēded against him,

3 Saying,

3 Saying, Thou wentest into synagogs, and hast eaten with them.

4 Then Peter began, and expounded all thing in order to them, saying.

5 I was in the city of Ioppa, praying in a trance, I sawe *this* vision. A certaine sheet comming down as it had bene a great net let downe from heauen by the foure corners, and it came to me.

6 Toward the which when I had fallen mine eyes, I considered, and sawe foure kind of beasts of the earth, and wilde beastes, creeping things, and foules of the heauen.

7 Also I heard a voyce, saying vnto me. Arise Peter: slay and eate.

8 And I sayde, God forbid, Lord: for nothing polluted or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voyce answered me the second time from heauē, The things that God hath purified pollute thou not.

10 And this vvas done three times, and all were taken vp againe into heauen.

11 Then beholde, immediately there came three men already come vnto my house vnto which I vvas, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the Spirit sayde vnto mee, that I should goe with them, without doubting. Moreover these sixe brethre came with me, and we entred into the mans house.

13 And he shewed vs, how he had seen an Angel in his house, which stood and spake to him. Send men to Ioppa, and call for Silas whose surname is Peter.

14 He shal speake words vnto thee which by both thou and all thine house shal beleeued.

15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fel on them, euē as vpon vs at the beginning.

Then remembered the word of the
Lord, how he sayd, Iohn baptized with wa-
ter, but yee shalbe baptized with the holy
Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then as God gaue them a
gift, as he did vnto vs, vwhen vve beleue-
d in the Lord Iesus Christ, vwho vvas I, y
could I let God?

18 When they heard these things, they
held their peace, and glorified God, saying,
Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted
repentance vnto life.

19 ¶ And they which vvere scattered a-
broad because of the affliction that arose a-
bout Steuen, went thorovvout til they came
vnto Phenice and Cyprus, and Antiochia,
preaching the vword to no man, but vnto the
Iewes onely.

20 Nowv some of the vvere men of Cy-
rus, & of Cyrene, vvhich vwhen they vvere
come into Antiochia, spake vnto the Greci-
ans, & preached y^e Lord Iesus.

21 And the hand of the Lorde vvas vvith
them, so that a great number beleeued and
turned vnto the Lord.

22 Then tydings of those things came vn-
to the eares of y^e Church, which was in Hieru-
salem, & they sent forth Barnabas, that he
should go vnto Antiochia.

23 Who vwhen hee vvas come, and had
seene the grace of God, vvas glad, & exhort-
ed al, y^e vvith purpose of heart they should
continue in the Lord.

24 For he vvas a good man, and ful of y^e
holy Ghost, & faith, and much people ioined
themselves vnto the Lord.

25 ¶ Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus
to seeke Saul:

26 And vvhen he had found him, he brought
him to Antiochia, and it came to passe that
a vvhole

THE ACTES.

a whole yere they were conuersant in the Church, and taught much people, insomuch that the disciples were first called Christians in Antiochia.

27 In those dayes also came Prophecie from Hierusalem to Antiochia,

28 And there stood vp one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should be great famine throughout the world, which also came to passe vnder Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples every man according to his abilitie, purposed to send succour vnto the brethren which dwell in Iudea.

30 Which thing they also did, & sent it to the Elders, by the hand of Barnabas & Saul.

CHAP. XII.

2 Herod killed James with the sword 46 he prisoneth Peter 8 who the Angel deliuereth

NOwe about this time, Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex certaine of the Church.

2 And he killed James the brother of Iohn with the sword.

3 And when hee sawe that it pleased the Iewes, he proceeded further, to take Peter also (the were 4 dayes of vnleauened bread)

4 And when he had caught him, he put him in prison, & deliuered him to foure quarters of Souldiers to be kept, intending after Passequer to bring him forth to the people.

5 So Peter was kept in prison, but earnest prayer was made of the Church vnto God for him.

6 And when herod would haue brought him out vnto the people, the same night Peter lay betwene two souldiers, bound with chaines, & the keepers before the doore of the prison.

7 And beholde, the Angell of the Lord

CHAP. XII.

And he smote Peter on the side, & raised him vp. saying, Arise quickly. And his chaines fell off from his hands.

2 And the Angel said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, and binde on thy sandales. And so hee did. Then he sayde vnto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

3 So Peter came out, and followed him, and knewe not that it was true, which was done by the Angel, but thought he had seene a vision.

4 Now when they were past the first & second watch, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto the citie, which opened to them by it owne accorde, and they went out and passed thorowe one streete, and by and by the Angel departed from him.

5 And when Peter was come to himselfe, he sayd, Now I know for a trueth, that the Lorde hath sent his Angel, and hath delivered mee out of the hand of Herod, & from the waiting for of the people of Iewes.

6 And as hee considered the thing: hee came to the house of Mary, the mother of Iohn, whose surname was Marke, where many were gathered together, and prayed.

7 And when Peter knocked at the entry doore, a mayde came forth to hearken, naminge Rhode.

8 But when she knew Peters voyce, she opened not the entry doore for gladnes, but came out, & told how Peter stood before the entry.

9 But they saide vnto her, Thou art mad. she affirmed it constantly, that it was so. They said they, It is his Angel.

10 But Peter continued knocking, and when they had opened it, and saw him, they were astonished.

11 And hee beckened vnto them with the

THE ACTES.

the hand, to hold their peace, and told how the Lorde had brought him out of prison. And he sayd, Go shew these things vnto Iames and to the brethren: and he departed, and went into another place.

18 ¶ Now assone as it was day, there was no small trouble among the souldiers, who was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded them to bee led to be punished. And hee went downe from Iudaea to Cesarea, and there abode.

20 Then Herod was angry with them of Tyrus and Sidon, but they came all with accord vnto him, and perswaded Blastus, Kings Chamberlaine, & they desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by Kings land.

21 And vppon a day appoynted, Herod layed himse in royall apparrell, and sat on the iudgement seate, and made an oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shout, saying, The voice of God, and not of man.

23 But immediatly the Angel of the Lorde smote him, because he gaue not glory vnto God, so that he was eaten of worms, and gaue vp the ghost.

24 And the word of God grew and multiplied.

25 So Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, when they had fulfilled their office, & tooke with them Iohn, whose name was Make,

CHAP. XIII.

● The holy Ghost commaundeth that Paul and Barnabas be separated vnto him, & Iohn the forerunner. 11. 34. Stricken blinde.

CHAP. XIII.

There were also in the Church that was at Antiochia, certaine Prophets & teachers, as Barnabas and Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manahem (which had bene brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch) and Saul.

2 Now as they ministred to the Lorde, & fasted, the holy ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

3 Then fasted they and prayed, & layed their hands on them, and let them go.

4 And they, after they were sent forth of the holy Ghost, came downe vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sayled to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached ^e word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes; and they had also Iohn to *their* minister.

6 So when they had gone thorow out the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false prophet, being a Iew, named Bariesus,

7 Which was with the Deputie Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. Hee called vnto him Barnabus and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.

8 But Elymas, the sorcerer (for so is his Name by interpretation) withstood them, & sought to turne awaye the Deputie from the faith.

9 Then Saul (which also is called Paul) being full of the holy ghost, set his eyes on him

10 And said, O ful of all subtilty, and all mischiefe the childe of the deuil, and enemy of al righteousnes, wilt thou not cease to peruert the straight wayes of the Lord?

11 Now therefore behold, the hand of ^e Lord is vpon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, & not see the sunne for a season, And imme-

THE ACTES

And there fell on him a mist and
nefle, and hee went about, seeking
to leade him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputie when he saw
was done, beleeued, and was astonied at
doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul, and they that
with him, were departed by ship from
phus, they came to Perga a citie of Pam-
lia: then Iohn departed from them, and
turned to Hierusalem.

14 But when they departed from Per-
they came to Antiochia a citie of Pli-
and went into the Synagogue on the
Sabbath day, and sate downe,

15 And after the lecture of the Lawe
Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue
vnto them, saying, Yee men and brethren,
yee haue any worde of exhortation for
people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood yp, and beck-
with the hande, and saide, Men of Israel,
ye that feare God, hearken.

17 The God of this people of Israels
our fathers & exalted the people when they
dwelt in the lande of Egypt, and with
high arme brought them out thence of.

18 And about the time of fourty yeres
suffered he their maners in the wilderness.

19 And he destroyed seven nations in
lande of Canaan, and diuided their land
them by lot.

20 Then afterwarde hee gaue vnto the
Iudges about foure hundreth and fifty yeres
vnto the time of Samuel the Prophet,

21 So after that, they desired a King,
God gaue vnto them Saul, the sonne of
a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space
of fourty yeres.

22 And after he had taken him away

David to be their King, of whom
he witnessed saying, I have found David the
son of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart,
which wil do al things that I wil.

23 Of this mans seed hath God according
to his promise raised vp to Israel, the Sauour
Iesus:

24 When Iohn had first preached before
his comming the baptisme of repentance to
all the people of Israel.

25 And whē Iohn had fulfilled *his* course,
he saide, Whom yee thinke that I am: I am
not he: but behold there commeth one after
me, whose shooe of *his* fecte I am not wor-
thy to loe se.

26 Yee men and brethren, children of the
generation of Abraham, and whosoever a-
mong you feareth God, to you is the worde
of this saluation sent.

27 For the inhabitants of Ierusalem, and
their rulers, because they knew him not, nor
yet the wordes of the Prophets, which are
read every Sabbath day, they haue fulfilled
them in condemning him.

28 And though they found no cause of death
in him, yet desired they Pilate to kill him.

29 And when they had fulfilled al things
that were written of him, they tooke him
downe from y^e tree, & put him in a sepulchre

30 But God raised him vp from y^e dead.

31 And he was seene many daues of the
which came vp with him fro Galilee to Hie-
rusale, which ar his vvinnesles vnto y^e people

32 And vve declare vnto you, that touch-
ing the promise made vnto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled it vnto vs their
children, in that hee raysed vp Iesus, euen as
is yvritten in the second Psalme, Thou art
my Sonne: this day haue I begotten thee.

34 Nowv as concerning that he raised him

yp from the dead, no more to re-
ruption, he hath said thus, I wil giue
holy things of Dauid, which are faid
35 Wherefore hee saith also in
place, Thou wilt not suffer thine holy
to see corruption.

36 Howbeit, Dauid after he had
his time by the counsel of God, he
was layd with his fathers, & saw cor-

37 But he whom God raised yp, saw
corruption.

38 Be it knowen vnto you therefore,
& brethren, that through this man is
shed vnto you the forgiuenesse of sinnes.

39 And from all things from which
could not be iustified by the Lawe of Mo-
by him every one that beleueth is iustified.

40 Beware therefore, least that come
pon you, which is spoken of in the Pro-

41 Beholde, ye despisers, and wonder
vanish away: for I worke a worke in
dayes, a worke which ye shal not beleue
a man would declare it you.

42 ¶ And when they were come
the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gen-
besought y they would preach these
to them the next Sabbath day.

43 Now when the congregation was
solued, many of the Iewes, and Pros-
that feared God, followed Paul and Bar-
bas, which spake to them, & exhorted
to continue in the grace of God.

44 And the next Sabbath day came
most the whole citie together, to heare
word of God.

45 But when the Iewes sawe the peo-
they were full of enuie, and spake ag-
those things which were spokē of Paul,
travring them, and railing on them.

46 Then Paul & Barnabas spake bol-

And said, It was necessary that the word
should first haue bin spoken vnto you,
seeing ye put it from you, and iudge your
soules vnworthy of euermlasting life, los, were
sent to the Gentiles. —

47 For so hath the Lord commaunded vs,
saying, I haue made thee a light of the Gen-
tiles, that thou shouldest be the saluation vnto
the end of the world.

48 And when the Gentiles heard it, they
were glad, and glorified the worde of the
Lord: and as many as were ordeined vnto e-
uermlasting life, beleueed.

49 Thus the word of the Lord was pub-
lished thorowout the whole countrey.

50 But the Iewes stirred certaine deuoute
and honourable women, and the chiefe men
of the cite, and raysed persecucion against
Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out
of their coastes.

51 But they shooke off the dust of their
feet against them, and came vnto Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with ioy
and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIII.

*Paul and Barnabas. 5 are persecuted from
Iconium. 6 At Lystra Paul 10 healeth a
dumpe. 13 They are about to doe sacrifice
vnto them, 15 but they forbid it.*

And it came to passe in Iconium, that
they went both together into the Sy-
nagogue of the Iewes, and so spake, that a
great multitude both of the Iewes & of the
Gentiles beleueed.

But the vnbeleeuing Iewes stirred vp,
and corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles a-
gainst the bretheren.

So therefore they abode there along
time, and spake boldly in the Lorde, which
gave testimony vnto his word of his grace, &

showed signes & wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the people of the citie were divided: and some were with the Iewes, & some with the Apostles. —

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to do them violence, and to kill them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, & vnto the region round about,

7 And there preached the Gospel.

8 Nowe there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feete, which was a cripple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked.

9 He heard Paul speake: who beholding him, and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed,

10 Saide with a loud voice, Stand vp vpon thy feete. And he leaped vp, and walked.

11 Then when the people sawe what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likenesse of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter. Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.

13 Then Iupiters priest, which was before their citie, brought buls with garlands vnto the gates, and would haue sacrificed vnto the people.

14 But vwhen the Apostles, Barnabas & Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, & ran in among the people, crying

15 And saying, O men, vwhy do ye these things? vve are euen men subiect to the passions that ye be, and preach vnto you that ye should turne from these vaine things

mediating God; which made heaven
and earth, and the sea, and all things that in
them are:

16 Who in times past suffered al the Gen-
tiles to walke in their owne wayes.

17 Neuertheles, he left not himself with-
out witness, in that he did good, and gaue vs
signe from heauen, and fruitfull seasons, fil-
ling our hearts with food and gladnesse.

18 And speaking these things, scarce ap-
peared they the multitude, that they had not
sacrificed vnto them.

19 Then there came certaine Iewes from
Antiochia and Iconium, which when they
had perswaded the people, stoned Paul, and
drew him out of the citie, supposing he had
bene dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood rounde
about him, he arose vp, and came into the ci-
tie, and the next day hee departed with Bar-
nabas to Derbe.

21 And after they had preached the glad
tidings of the Gospel to that Citie, and had
taught many, they returned to Lystra, & to
Iconium, and to Antiochia,

22 Confirming the disciples hearts, and
exhorting them to continue in the faith, af-
firming that we must through many afflicti-
ons enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordeined them
Elders by election in euery Church, and
prayed and fasted, they commended them to
the Lord in whom they beleued.

24 Thus they went throughout Pisidia,
and came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the
word in Perga they came downe to Attalia,

26 And thence sailed to Antiochia, from
whence they had bene commended vnto the
grace of God, to the worke which they had
ful-

17 And when they were come

gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all the things that God had done by them, and how hee had opened the doore of faith unto the Gentiles.

18 So there they abode a long time with the disciples.

CHAP. XV.

36 Paul and Barnabas 39 are at a great variance.

Then came downe certaine from Iudea, and taught the brethren, saying, Except yee be circumcised after the maner of Moses, ye cannot be saved,

2 And when there was a great dissention and disputation by Paul and Barnabas against them, they ordeined that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine other of them should go vp to Ierusalem vnto the Apostles and Elders about this question.

3 Thus being brought forth by the church, they passed through Phenice, and Samaria, declaring the conuersion of the Gentiles: and they brought great ioye vnto all the brethren,

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the church, and of the Apostles and Elders, and they declared what things God had done by them.

5 But said they, certaine of the sect of the Pharisees, which did beleeeue, rose vp, saying, It was needefull to circumcise them, & to command them to keepe the lawe of Moses.

6 Then the Apostles and Elders came together to looke to this matter.

7 And when there had bene great dissention, Peter rose vp, and sayd vnto them, Ye men and brethren, yee knowe that a good while agoe, among vs God chose out me,

the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the word of the Gospel, and beleue.

8 And God which knoweth the heart, bare them witnesse, in giuing vnto them the holy Ghost: euen as he did vnto vs,

9 And hee put no difference betweene vs and them, after that by faith he had purified their hearts.

10 Now therefore, why tempt ye God, to lay a yoke on the disciples neckes, which neither our fathers, nor we were able to beare

11 But we beleene through the grace of the Lorde Iesus Christ to be saued, euen as they do.

12 Then all the multitude kept silence, & heard Barnabas and Paul, which told what signes and wonders God had done among the Gentiles by them.

13 And whē they held their peace, Iames answered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon hath declared, how God first did visite the Gentiles, to take of them a people vnto his Name.

15 And to this agree the wordes of the Prophets, as it is written.

16 After this I will returne, and wil build againe the Tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe, and the ruines thereof will I build againe, and I wil set it vp,

17 That the residue of men might seeke after the Lorde, and all the Gentiles vppon whom my Name is called, saith the Lorde, which doeth al these things.

18 From the beginning of the world God knoweth all his workes.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that wee trouble not them of the Gentiles that are turned to God,

20 But that we send vnto them, that they
ab-

to keepe themselves from filchines of
meat and fornication, and that that is strangled
with blood.

21 For Moses of olde time hath in every
city them that preach him, seeing he is read
in the Synagogues every Sabbath day.

22 Then it seemed good to the Apostles
and Elders with the whole Church, to send
chosen men of their owne company to Anti-
ochia with Paul and Barnabas: to wit, Iudas,
whose surname was Barsabas, and Silas,
which were chiefe men among the brethren.

23 And wrote letters by them after this
maner, **THE APOSTLES**, and the
Elders, and the brethren, vnto the brethren
which are of the Gentiles in Antiochia, and
in Syria, and in Cilicia, send greeting,

24 Forasmuch as wee haue heard, that
certaine which went out from vs, haue trou-
bled you with wordes, and cumbered your
minde, saying, Yee must be circumcised and
keepe the Lawe: to whom wee gaue no such
commandement,

25 It seemed therefore good to vs, when
we were come together with oue accord,
to send chosen men vnto you, with our beloved
Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that haue given vp their liues for
the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ.

27 Wee haue therefore sent Iudas and Silas,
which shall also tell you the same things
by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost
and to vs, to lay no more burden vpon you,
beside these necessary things,

29 That is, that yee abstaine from things
offered to idoles, and blood, and that that is
strangled, and from fornication: from which
if yee keepe yourselves, yee shall doe well.
Fare ye well.

CHAP. XVI.

30 Now when they were departed, they came to Antiochia, and after that they had assembled the multitude, they deliuered the Epistle.

31 And when they had read it, they reioyced for the consolation.

32 And Indas and Silas being Prophets, exhorted the brethren with many wordes, & strengthened them.

33 And after they had taried there a space, they were let go in peace of the brethren vnto the Apostles.

34 Notwithstanding Silas thought good to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antiochia, teaching and preaching with many other, the word of the Lord.

36 But after certaine dayes, Paul said vnto Barnabas, Let vs returne, and visit our brethren in euery city, where we haue preached the word of the Lord, and see how they doe.

37 And Barnabas counsilled to take with them Iohn, called Marke.

38 But Paul thought it not meete to take him vnto their company, which departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the worke.

39 Then were they so stirred, that they departed asunder one from the other, so that Barnabas tooke Marke, and sayled vnto Cyprus,

40 And Paul chose Silas and departed, being commended of the brethren vnto the grace of God.

41 And he went through Syria, and Cilicia, stablishing the Churches.

CHAP. XVI.

Paul hauing circumcised Timotheus, 13 being at Philippi, 14 instructeth Lydia in the faith.

1 Then

THE ACTES.

Then came hee to Derbe and to Lystra and beholde, a certaine discipule there named Timotheus, a womans sonne which was a Jewelle and beleehed, but his father was a Grecian.

2 Of whom the brethren which were at Lystra and Iconium, reported well.

3 Therefore Paul would that hee should goe forth with him, and tooke and circumcised him, because of the Jewes, which were in those quarters: for they knew all, that his father was a Grecian.

4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered them the decrees to keepe, which were ordeined of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Ierusalem.

5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 ¶ Now when they had gone through Phrygia, & the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia.

7 Then came they to Mysia, and sought to goe into Bithinia, but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 Therefore they passed through Mysia and came downe to Troas,

9 Where a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

10 And after he had scene the vision, immediately wee prepared to go into Macedonia, being assured that the Lord had called us to preach the Gospel vnto them.

11 Then went we forth from Troas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis,

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in the partes of Macedonia.

CHAP. XVI.

whose inhabitants came from Rome to dwell there, and we were in that citie abiding certaine dayes.

13 And on the Sabbath day, we went out of the citie, besides a River, where they were wont to pray: and we sat downe, and spake vnto the women which were come together.

14 And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatians, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lorde opened that shee attended vnto the things which Paul spake.

15 And when shee was baptised, and her household, she besought vs, saying, If ye haue iudged me to bee faithfull to the Lorde, come into mine house & abide there: and she constrained vs.

16 And it came to passe that as we went to prayer, a certaine mayd hauing a spirit of divination, met vs, which gate her master much vantage with diuining.

17 She followed Paul and vs, and cryed, saying, These men are the seruants of the most high God, which shewe vnto you the way of saluation.

18 And this did shee many dayes: but Paul being grieued, turned about, and sayde to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Iesus Christ, that thou come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 Now when her masters sawe that the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the market place vnto the magistrates,

20 And brought them to the gouerners, saying, These men which are Iewes, trouble our citie,

21 And preach ordinances, which are not lawfull for vs to receiue, neither to ob-

serue, seeing we are Romanes.

22 The people also rose vp together against them, and the gouernours rent their clothes and commanded *them* to bee beaten with rods.

23 And when they had beaten them, they cast *them* into prison, commanding the iayler to keepe them surely.

24 Who hauing receiued such commandement, cast them into prison, and made their feete fast in the stocks.

25 Now at midnight Paul & Silas prayed, and sung Psalmes vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundation of the prison was shaken: and by and by all the doores opened, and euery mans bands were loosed.

27 Then the keeper of the prison wakened out of his sleepe, & when he saw the prison doores open, hee drew out his sworde, and would haue killed himselfe, supposing the prisoners had bene fled,

28 But Paul cryed with a loud voyce, saying, Doe thy selfe no harme: for wee are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and leaped in, and came trembling: and fell down before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saued?

31 And they saide, Beleue in the Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued & thine household.

32 And they preached vnto him the word of the Lorde, and to all that were in his house.

33 Afterwarde hee tooke them the same houre of the night, & washed their stripes, and was baptized with all that belonged

CHAP. XVII.

him straight way.

34 And when he had brought the into his house he set meate before them, & reioyced with al his household beleued in God.

35 And whē it was day, the gouerners sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men goe.

36 Then the keeper of the prison tolde these words vnto Paul, saying, The gouerners haue sent to loose you: nowe therefore goe you hence, and goe in peace.

37 Then sayd Paul vnto them. After that they haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs into prison, and nowe would they put vs out priuily: may verely: but let them come & bring vs out.

38 And the sergeants tolde these words vnto the gouerners, who feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 Then came they & prayed them, and brought them out, & desired them to depart out of the city.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entred into the house of Tydia & when they had seene the brethren, they comforted the, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

Paul at Thessalonica; preaching Christ, 6. 7 is entertained of Iason: 10 He is sent to Berea.

NOW as they passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagoge of the Iewes,

2 And Paul, as his maner was, wēt in vnto them and three Sabbath dayes disputed with them by the Scriptures,

3 Opening, and alleaging that Christ must haue suffered, & risen againe from the dead: and this is Iesus Christ, whom said he, preach t^o you.

4 And some of them beleued, and ioy-

Aa ned

THE ACTES.

ned in company with Paul and Silas: also
the Grecians that feared God a great mul-
titude, and of the chiefe women not a few.

5 But the Iewes which beleued not,
moued with enuie, tooke vnto them certain
vagabonds and wicked fellowes, and when
they had assembled the multitude, they made
a tumult in the citie, & made assault ag-
ainst the house of Iason, and sought to bring them
out to the people.

6 But when they found them not, they
drew Iason and certaine brethren vnto the
heads of the citie, crying, These are they
which haue subuerted the state of the world,
and here they are,

7 Whom Iason hath receiued, & these
doe against the decrees of Cesar, saying, that
there is an other King, one Iesus.

8 Then they troubled the people, & the
heads of the citie, when they heard these
things.

9 Notwithstanding, when they had recei-
ued sufficient assurance of Iason, and of the
other, they let them goe.

10 And the brethren immediately
saw Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea,
which when they were come thither, en-
tered into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were also more noble men than
they which were at Thessalonica, which
receiued the word With allreadinesse, &
searched the Scripures daily, whether the
things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleued,
of honest women, which were Grecians,
men not a few.

13 ¶ But when the Iewes of Thessalonica
knew, that the word of God was also pre-
ached of Paul, at Berea, they came thither
so, and moued the people.

CHAP. XVII.

14 But by and by the brethren sent away Paul to goe as it were to the sea : but Silas and Timotheus aboode there still.

15 And they that did conduct Paul, brought him vnto Athens, & whē they had receiued a commandement vnto Silas and Timotheus, that they should come to him at once, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he sawe the citie subiect to idolatry.

17 Therefore he disputed in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with them that were religious, & in the market dayly with whomsoever he met.

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicures, and of the Stoicks disputed with him, & some sayd, What wil this babler say? Others sayd, He seemeth to bee a setter forth of strange gods (because hee preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection.

19 And they tooke him, & brought him into Mars streete, saying, May we not know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certaine things strange vnto our eares, we would know therefore what these things meane.

21 For all the Athenians and strangers that dwelt there gaue themselves to nothing else, but either to tel, or to heare some newes.

22 Then Paul stood in the mids of Mars street, & sayd Ye men of Athens, I perceiue that in al things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your deuotions, I found an altar vwherein was written, VNTO THE VNKNOWN GOD, Whom yee the ignorantly worship, I am shew I vnto you.

24 God that made the world, & al things

THE ACTS

that are therein. seeing γ he is Lord
& earth, dwelleth not in temples made
hands,

25 Neither is worshipped with
hands, as though he needed any thing,
ing he giueth to al life and breath, and
things.

26 And hath made of one blood al
kind to dwell on al the face of the earth,
hath assigned the seasons which were orde-
ned before: and the bounds of their habi-
tion,

27 That they should seeke the Lord, if
be they might haue groped after him, &
found him, though doubtlesse he be not far
from euery one of vs,

28 For in him we liue, & mooue, & haue
our being, as also certaine of your own
Poets haue layd, For we are also his gene-
ration.

29 For as much then as we are the gene-
ration of God, we ought not to thinke that
Godhead is like vnto gold or siluer, or
grauen by arte and the inuention of man.

30 And the time of this ignorance God
regarded not: but now he admonisheth al
euery where to repent,

31 Because he hath appointed a day in
which he wil iudge the world in righte-
nesse, by that man whom he hath appointed
whereof hee hath given an assurance to
men, in γ hee hath raised him from the dead.

32 Now when they heard of the resurrec-
tion from the dead, some mocked, and o-
ther said, We wil heare thee againe of this thing

33 And so Paul departed from among
them.

34 Howbeit certaine men claue vnto Paul
& beleued: among whom was also Damas-
cus a preopagite, and a woman named Dama-
and other with them.

As Paul as he teach & taught the Gentiles,
the Lord comforteth him.

After these things Paul departed from
Athens, & came to Corinthus,

And founde a certaine Iewe named
Aquila, borne in Pontus lately come from I-
taly, and his wife Priscilla, (because that
Claudius had commaunded al Iewes to depart
from Rome) and hee came vnto them.

And because he was of the same craft,
he abode with them, & wtought (for their
craft was to make tents.)

And he disputed in the Synagogue eue-
ry Sabbath day, and exhorted the Iewes, and
the Grecians.

Nowe when Silas and Timotheus were
come fro Macedonia, Paul forced in spirit,
testified to the Iewes that Iesus was the
Christ.

And when they resisted & blasphemed,
hee shooke his raiment, & said vnto them,
Your blood be vpon your owne head: I am
cleane; from hencefoorth wil I goe vnto the
Gentiles.

So he departed thence, and entred into
a certaine mans house named Iustus, a wor-
shipper of God, whose house ioyned hard to
the Synagogue.

And Crispus the chiefe ruler of the
synagogue, belceued in the Lord with all
his household: and many of the Corinthians
hearing it, beleeued and were baptized,

Then said the Lord to Paul in the night
by a vision, Feare not: but speake, and hold
thy peace.

For I am with thee, and no man shall
lay hands on thee to hurt thee: for I haue
much people in this citie.

So he continued there a yere and fix

...the, & taught y word of God
....

12 ¶ Nowe when Gallio was Deputy of Achaia, the Iewes arose with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the iudgement seat,

13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to worship God otherwise then the Law appointeth.

14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio sayd vnto y Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or an euill deed. O Iewes, I would according to reason maintaine you.

15 But if it bee a question of words and names, & of your Law, looke ye to it yourselves: for I will be no iudge of those things.

16 And hee draue them from the iudgement seat.

17 Then tooke al the Grecians Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the iudgement seat: but Gallio cared nothing for those things.

18 But when Paul had taried there yet good while, hee tooke leaue of the brethren, and sayled into Syria (and with him Priscilla and Aquila) after that he had shorne his head at Cenchrea: for he had a vowe.

19 Then he came to Ephesus, and leste there: but he entred into the Synagogue and disputed with the Iewes.

20 Who desired him to tary a longer time with them: but he would not consent,

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must needs keepe this feast that commeth, in Hierusalem: but I will returne againe vnto you, if God wil, So he sailed from Ephesus.

22 ¶ And when he came downe to Cenchrea, hee went vnto Hierusalem: & when he had saluted the Church he went downe

23 Nowe
he depart
Galatia
all the d

24 A
borne a
loquent

25 T
of the L
Spirit, &
Lord, &

26 A
Synagog
had hear

pounded
perfect

27 A
to Acha
to the d

was con
had be

28 F
Iewes,
the Scr

2 Cert
requir
Nam

A
through
and for

3 A
the ho
said v

wheth
3 A
ye e th

baptis

23 Now whē he had taried there a while
he departed, & went through the country of
Galatia and Phrygia by order, strengthening
all the disciples.

24 And a certaine Jew named Apollos
borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an e-
loquent man and mightie in the Scriptures.

25 The same was instructed in the way
of the Lorde, and he spake feruently in the
spirit, & taught diligently the things of the
Lord, & knew but \bar{y} baptisme of Iohn only.

26 And hee began to speake boldly in the
Synagogue, Whom when Aquila & Priscilla
had heard, they tooke him vnto them, & ex-
pounded vnto him the way of God more
perfectly.

27 And when hee was minded to goe in-
to Achaia, the brethen exhorting him, wrote
to the disciples to receiue him: and after hee
was come thither, he holpe the much which
had beleued through grace.

28 For mightily he confuted publikely \bar{y}
Iewes, with great vehemencie, shewing by
the Scriptures, that Iesus was that Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Certaine disciples at Ephesus, 2 hauing onely
receiued Iohns baptisme. 5 are baptized in \bar{y}
Name of Iesus.

AND it came to passe, while Apollos was
at Corinthus, that Paul when he passed
through the vpper coastes, came to Ephesus
and found certaine disciples,

2 And sayde vnto them, Haue ye receiued
the holy Ghost since ye beleued? And they
said vnto him, We haue not so much as heard
whether there be an holy Ghost.

3 And he said vnto the, Vnto what vvere
yee the baptize d? And they said, Vnto Iohns
baptisme,

4 Then said Paul, Iohn verely
with the baptisme of repentance, say-
ing to the people, that they should beleue
in him which should come after him, that is Iesus.

5 And when they heard it, they were
baptized in the Name of the Lord Iesus.

6 So Paul layd his hands vpon them,
and the holy Ghost came on them, & they spake
the tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelue.

8 Moreover he went into the Synagoge,
and spake boldly for the space of three
moneths, disputing & exhorting to the things
which appertain to the kingdom of God.

9 But when certaine were hardened
and disobeyed, speaking euil of the way of God
before the multitude, he departed from
there, & separated the disciples, & disputed daily
in the schoole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this was done by the space of
two yeeres, so that al they which dwelt in
Asia heard the word of the Lord Iesus, both Iewes
and Grecians.

11 And God wrought no small miracles
by the hands of Paul,

12 So that from his body were brought
out the sicke, kerchiefs or handkerchiefs
which he had touched, the diseases departed from them, & the
evil spirits went out of them.

13 The certaine of the vagabond Iewes,
which called themselves the school of
Aristarchus, tooke in hand to name euery one
of them which had euil spirits the Name of the Lord
Iesus, saying, We adiure you by Iesus, whom
Paul preacheth.

14 (And there were certaine sonnes
of Sceua a Iew the Priest, about seuen, which
did this)

15 And the euill spirit answered, & said
unto Paul, I acknowledge, & Paul I know :

16 And the man in whom the euil spirit
was, came on them, and overcame them, and
prevailed against them, so that they fled out
of that house, naked, and wounded.

17 And this was knowen to all the Iewes
and Grecians also, which dwelt at Ephesus,
and feare came on all them, and the Name of
the Lord Iesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleueed, came and
confessed, and shewed their works.

19 Many also of the which vsed curious
artes, brought their bookes, & burned them
before all men and they counted the price
of them, and found it fiftie thousand pieces of
silver.

20 So the word of God grew mightily, &
prevailed.

21 ¶ Now whē these things, were accom-
plished, Paul purposed by the Spirit to passe
through Macedonia and Achaia, and to goe
into Hierusalem, saying, After I have bene
there, I must also see Rome.

22 So sent he into Macedoni two of the
that ministered vnto him, Timotheus and
Erastus, but he remained in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small
trouble about that way.

24 For a certaine mā named Demetrius a
silver smith, which made silver temples of Di-
ona, brought great gaires vnto the craftsmen,

25 Whom hee called together, with the
craftsmen of like things, and said, Sirs, yee
know that by this craft we haue our goods:

26 Moreouer ye see & heare, y not alone
at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia
Paul hath Perswaded, and turned away
much people, saying, That they be not gods
which are made with hands.

27 So that not onely this thing is danger-
ous

unto vs, that this our portion
prooted, but also that the temple of the
goddesse Diana, should bee nothing
med, and that it vould come to passe that her
magnificence vvhich all Asia and the world
worshippeth, should be destroyed.

28 Nowe when they heard it, they were
full of vvrath, and cried out, saying, Great
Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the vvhole citie vvas full of con-
fusion, & they rushed into the common place
with one assent, and caught Gaius, & Aris-
teus, men of Macedonia, and Pauls com-
pansions of his journey.

30 And when Paul vould haue come
in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him
not.

31 Certaine also of the chiefe of Asia
which were his friendes, sent vnto him
saying him that he vould not present himself
into the common place.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, & some
another, for the assembly was out of order,
and the more part knew not wherefore they
were come together.

33 And some of the company drewe for-
ward Alexander, & Iewes thrusting him forward
Alexander then beckened with the hand,
woulde haue excused the matter to the peo-
ple

34 But when they knew that hee was
Iew, there arose a shout almost for the space
of two houres, of all men, crying, Great is
Diana of the Ephesians.

35 Then the towne clarke, when he
saw the people, saide, Yee men of Ephesus,
what man is it that knoweth not how
the citie of the Ephesians is a worshipping
the great goddesse Diana, and of the image
which came downe from Iupiter?

Seeing then that no man can speake
these things, ye ought to be appea-
red, and to doe nothing rashly.

37 For yee haue brought hither these
men, which haue neither committed sacri-
ledge, neither doe blaspheme your goddesse.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius & the crafts-
men which are with him, haue a matter a-
gainst any man, the Lawe is open, & there are
Deputies: let them accuse one another.

39 But if ye inquire any thing concerning
other matters, it may be determined in a
lawfull assemblee.

40 For we are euen in jeopardy to be ac-
cused of this dayes sedition, forasmuch as
there is no cause, whereby we may giue
reason of this concourse of people.

41 And when he had thus spoken, hee let
the assemblee depart.

CHAP. XX.

8 Paul appointeth 10 goe to Macedonia: 7. In
Treas preaching vntill midnight, 9 Eutychus
fell downe dead.

Now after $\frac{5}{6}$ tumult was appeased, Paul
called the disciples vnto him, and em-
braced them, and departed to goe into Mace-
donia.

2 And when he had gone through those
partes and had exhorted them with many
wordes, hee came into Grecia.

3 And hauing taried there three moneths,
because the Jewes laide waite for him, as hee
was about to saile into Syria, hee purposed
to returne through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia
Quartus of Berea, and of them of Thessaloni-
ca, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of
Derbe, and Timotheus, and of them of Asia
Tychicus, and Trophimus.

5 These went before and taried vs at
Treas.

6 And wee sailed forth from
after the daies of vncleaned bread
came vnto them to Troyes in five daies
we abode seven dayes.

7 And in y first day of the weeke
disciples being come together to breake
Paul preached vnto them, ready to depart
the morowe, & continued the preaching
midnight.

8 And there were many lights in
per chamber, where they were gathered
gether.

9 And there sate in a window a cer
yongma, named Euty chus, fallen into
sleep: and as Paul was long preaching,
uercome w sleepe fell downe from the
loft, and was taken vp dead.

10 But Paul went downe, and laide
self vpo him, & embraced him, saying, T
ble not your selues for his life is in him.

11 So when Paul was come vp againe
and had broken bread, and eaten, hee
muned along while till the dawning of
day, and so he departed..

12 And they brought the boy alive, &
they were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ Then we went soorth to ship, &
sailed vnto the ciitie Assos, that we mi
receiue Paul there: for so had he appoin
and woulde him selfe goe a foote.

14 Now when he was come vnto
Assos, and we had receiued him, we came
Mirylenes,

15 And we sailed thence, and came
next day ouer against Chios, & the next
we arrived at Samos, and taried at Trogy
tum: the next day we came to Miletum.

16 For Paul had determined to saile by
phelus, because he would not spend the

for he hasted to be, if he could possi-
 ble, at Hierusalem at the day of Pentecost.

17 Wherefore from Miletum he sent to
 them, & called the Elders of the Church,

18 Who when they were come to him,
 saide vnto them, Ye know from the first
 that I came into Asia, after what manner
 I haue bene wth you at all seasons.

19 Seruing the Lorde with al modestie,
 and with many teares & tentations, which
 came vnto me by the layings awaite of the
 Iewes,

20 And howe I kept backe nothing that
 was profitable, but haue shewed you, and
 taught you opely, & throughout euery house,

21 Witnessing both to the Iewes, and to
 the Grecians the repentance towarde God,
 and faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ.

22 And nowe beholde, I goe bounde in
 the spirit vnto Ierusalem and know not what
 things shall come vnto me there,

23 Saue that ^{the} holy Ghost witnesseth in
 me, saying, that bonds and afflictions
 shall abide me.

24 But I passe not at all, neither is my
 life deare vnto my selfe, so ^{that} I may fulfill my
 course with ioy: and the ministracion which
 I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus, to testifie
 the Gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I knowe that hence-
 forth ye all, through wh^{om} I haue gone prea-
 ching the kingdome of God, shall see my face
 no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day,
 that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but
 haue shewed you all the counsel of God.

28 Take heede therefore vnto your selues,
 and to al the flocke, whereof the holy Ghost
 hath made you Ouerseers, to feed ^{the} Church
 of

THE ACTES

of God, which he hath purchased with
own blood.

29 For I knowe this , that after my de-
parting shall grieuous wolues enter in among
you, not sparing the flocke.

30 Moreouer , of your owne selues shall
men arise speaking peruerse things , to draw
disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch and remember, \bar{y} in
the space of three yeeres I ceased not to warn
euery one, both night and day with teares.

32 And nowe, brethren, I comende you
to God, and to the worde of his grace, which
is able to build further, & to giue you an inhe-
ritance among all them which are sanctified.

33 I haue couered no mā's siluer, nor gold,
nor apparell,

34 Yea, ye knowe, that these handes haue
ministered vnto my necessities, & to them that
are with me.

35 I haue shewed you all thinges, howe
that so labouring , ye ought to support the
weake , and to remember the wordes of the
Lord Iesus, howe that he saide, It is a blessed
thing to giue , rather then to receiue.

36 And whē he had thus spokē, he knee-
led downe, and prayed with them all.

37 Then they wept all abundantlie, & fe-
wed on Pauls necke, and kissed him.

38 Being chiefly sorie for \bar{y} words which
he spake , That they should see his face no
more. And they accompanied him vnto \bar{y} ship.

CHAP. XXI.

1. Paul goeth toward Hierusalē: 8. At Cesarea
hee talketh with Philip the Euangelist: 10.
Agabus foretelleth him of his bond.

AND as we lached forth, & were depart-
ed from them, we came with a straight
course vnto Coos, & the day following vnto
the Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara,

CHAP. XXI.

2 And we founde a ship that went ~~into~~ vnto Phenice, and went aboard, & set forth.

3 And when we had discovered Cyprus, wee left it on the left hand, & sayled toward Syria, and arrived at Tyrus: for there the ship unladed the burden.

4 And when we had found disciples, we taried there seven daies. And they tolde Paul through ^{the} Spirit that he should not go vp to Ierusalem.

5 But when the dayes were ended, we departed, & went our way, and they all accompanied vs with their wiues & children, even out of the city, & we kneeling down on the shore, prayed,

6 Then when wee had embraced one another, wee tooke ship, and they returned home.

7 And when wee had ended the course from Tyrus, we arrived at Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, & abode with them one day.

8 And the next day, Paul and we that were with him, departed, & came vnto Cesarea: and we entred into the house of Philippe the Euangelist, which was one of the seven Deacons, and abode with him.

9 Nowe he had foure daughters virgines, which did prophete.

10 And as we taried there many dayes, there came a certaine prophet from Iudea, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs, hee tooke Pauls girdle & bound his owne hands & feete and saide, Thus saith the holy Ghost. So shall the Iewes at Ierusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shal deliuer him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we had heard these things, both we & other of the same place besought him

13 Then Paul answered and said,
Doe ye weeping, & breaking mine heart,
I am ready not to be bound onely, but
die in Hierusalē for \bar{y} Name of \bar{y} Lord.
14 So when he would not be perswaded,
he ceased, saying, The will of the Lord
be done.

15 And after those dayes, wee trussed
our sargels, and went vp to Hierusalē.

16 There went with vs also cerasus
the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with
one Mnason of Cyprus, an olde disciple,
whome we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Hierusalē,
the brethren receiued vs gladly.

18 And the next day Paul went in
vs ynto Iames; and all the Elders were
assembled.

19 And when he had embraced them,
told by order al things \bar{y} God had wrought
among the Gentiles by his ministratiō.

20 So when they heard it, they glorified
the Lord, and said vnto him, Thou seest
rather, howe many thousand lewes there are
which beleue, & they are all zealous of
Lawe.

21 Now they are enfourmed of thee, that
thou teachest al the lewes, which are among
the Gētiles, to forsake Moses, & sayest, that
they ought not to circumcise their foreskins,
neither to liue after the customes.

22 What is then to be done? the multitude
must needs come together: for they shall
heare that thou art come:

23 Doe therefore this that we say to thee.
We haue foure mē which haue made a vow.

24 Them take, and purifie thy self with
them, and contribute with them, that they
may shauethair their heads: and all shall know
that we haue no contention.

things whereof they have bene
concerning thee, are nothing,
but thou thy selfe also walkest and keepest
the Lawe.

27 For as touching the Gentiles, which
we haue written, and determined
they obserue no such thing, but y they
haue themselues fro things offered to idoles,
from blood, and from that that is strangled,
and from fornication.

28 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next
day was purified with them, and entred into
the temple, declaring the accomplishment
of the dayes of the purification, vntil that an
offering shoulde be offered for euery one of
them.

29 And when the seven daies were almost
ended, the Iewes which were of Asia (when
they sawe him in the Temple) moued all the
people, and laide hands on him.

30 Crying, Men of Israel, help: this is the
man that teacheth all men euery where a-
gainst the people, & the Lawe, & this place:
moreouer, he hath brought Grecians into
the Temple, and hath polluted this holy
place.

31 For they had scene before, Trophimus
an Ephesian with him in y citie, whome they
supposed that Paul had brought into y Tem-
ple.

32 Then all the citie was moued, & the
people ranne together: and they tooke Paul,
and drewe him out of the Temple, & forth-
with the doores were shut.

33 But as they went about to kil him, si-
ngius came vnto the chiefe captaine of the
garrison, that all Hierusalem was on an vpror,

34 Who immediatlie tooke souldiers and
centurions, and ranne downe vnto them:
when they sawe the chiefe captaine and

THE ACTES.

the souldiers, they left beating of paul.

33 Then the chiefe captaine came
and tooke him, and commanded him
bound wth two chaines, and demanded
he was, and what he had done.

34 And one cryed this, another that,
mong the people. So when hee could
know the certaintie for the tumult, he
maunded him to be led into the castell.

35 And when he came vnto ^{the} grieces,
was so that he was borne of the souldiers
the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people
lowed after, crying. Away with him.

37 And as Paul should haue bene led
into the castell, he saide vnto the chiefe
taine, May I speake vnto thee? Who
canst thou *speake* Greeke?

38 Art not thou the Egyptian, who
fore these dayes raised a sedition, & led
into the wildernes 4. thousand me that
murtherers?

39 Then Paul sayd. Doubtlesse I am
which am a lew, and citizen of Tarsus,
mous cite of Cilicia, & I beseech thee
fer me to speake vnto the people.

40 And when hee had given him lie
Paul stood on the grieces, & beckened
the hand vnto the people: and when
was made great silence, he spake vnto
in the Hebrew tongne, saying,

CHAP. XXII.

1 Paul yeeldeth a reason of his faith, and
Iewes heare him a while.

Y Emen, brethren and Fathers, heare
defence now toward you.

2 (And when they heard that he
in the Hebrew tongue to them they kept
more silence, and he sayd)

3 I am verily a mā, which am a Iew

CHAP. XXII.

Tarsus in Cilicia, but brought vp in this
side at the feet of Gamaliel, and instructed
according to the perfect maner of the Law
of the fathers, & was zealous toward God,
as ye all are this day.

4 And I persecuted this vway vnto the
death, binding and deliuering into prisō both
men and women.

5 As also the chiefe Priest doeth beare me
witness, and al the company of the Elders:
of who also I receiued letters vnto the bre-
thren, and went to Damascus to bring them
which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem,
that they might be punished.

6 ¶ And so it was, as I journeyed & was
come nere vnto Damascus about noon, that
suddenly there shone from heauen a great
light round about me.

7 So I fell vnto the earth, and heard a
voice, saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, vvhy perse-
cutest thou me?

8 Then I ansyvered, Who art thou, Lord?
And he sayd to me, I am Iesus of Nazareth,
whom thou persecutest.

9 Moreover they that were with me, saw
indeed a light, and were afrayd: but they
heard not the voice of him that spake vnto
me.

10 Then I sayd, What shall I doe, Lord?
And the Lord sayd vnto me, Arise, and goe
vnto Damascus: and there it shall be tolde
thee of all things which are appointed for
thee to do.

11 Sowhen I could not see for the glory
of that light, I was led by the hand of them
that were with me, and came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias a godly man, as par-
ticiping to the Law, hauing good report of all
the Iewes which dwelt there,

13 Came vnto mee, & stood, & sayd vn-

THE ACTES.

30 mee, Brother Saul receiue thy life
of me house I looked vpon him.

14 And he sayde, The God of our fathers
hath appointed thee y thou shouldest
his will, and shouldest see that iust
shouldest heare the voyce of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witnesse vnto
men of the things which thou hast seen
heard.

16 Now therefore why tariest thou
rise, and be baptized, & wash away thy
in calling on the Name of the Lord.

17 ¶ And it came to passe, that when
was come againe to Hierusalem, and pray
in the Temple, I was in a trance,

18 And saw him saying vnto me, Make
haste, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem
for they wil not receiue thy witnesse con-
cerning me.

19 Then I sayde, Lord, they know
prisoned, and beaten euery Synagogue
that beleued in thee.

20 And when the blood of thy martyrs
was shed, I also stood by and consented
vnto his death, and kept the clothes of
that slew him.

21 Then he sayd vnto me, Depart:
wil send thee farre hence vnto the Gen-
tles.

22 ¶ And they heard him vnto this
but then they lift vp their voyces, and
Away with such a fellow from the earth:
it is not meet that hee should liue.

23 And as they cried, and cast off
clothes, and threw dust into the aire,

24 The chiefe captaine commaunded
to be led into y castle, & bade that he
be scourged, and examined, that they
know wherefore they cried so on him.

25 And as they bound him with the
Paul sayd vnto the Centurion that stood

lawfull for you to scourge one that is a
Romane, and not condemned?

36 Now when the Centurion heard it, he
understand tolde the chiefe captaine, saying,
Take heed what thou doest: for this man is a
Romane.

37 Then the chiefe captaine came, and
sayd to him. Tel me, art thou a Romane? And
he sayd, Yea.

38 And the chiefe captaine answered,
With a great summe obtained I this freedom.
Then Paul sayd, But I was so borne.

39 Then straightway they departed fro
him, which should haue examined him: & the
chiefe captaine also was afrayd, after he knew
that he was a Romane & that he had bound

40 On the next day, because he would
make knowne the certaintie wherefore hee
was accused of the Iewes, he loosed him fro
his bonds, and commanded the high Priest &
their Counsell to come together: and hee
brought Paul, & set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII

At Paul pleadeth his cause, 2 Ananias com-
mandeth them to smite him: 7 Dissention a-
mong his accusers. 11 God encourageth him.

And Paul beheld earnestly the Coun-
cill, & sayd, Men and brethre, I haue in
good conscience serued God vntil this day

12 Then the hie Priest Ananias comman-
ded them that stood by, to smite him on the
cheek.

13 Then sayd Paul to him, God will smite
thee, thou whited wall: for thou sittest to
accuse me according to the law, & transgres-
sest the Lawe, commandest thou me to bee
smitten?

14 And they that stood by, sayde, Reuilest
thou Gods high Priest?

5 Then sayd Paul, I knew not
that he vvas the high Priest: for is it written
Thou shalt not speake euill of the Ruler
thy people.

6 But vwhen Paul perceined that the
part vvere of the Sadduces, and the other
the Pharises. he cried in the Councill, Men
brethren, I am a Pharise, the sonne of
Pharise, I am accused of the hope & resur-
rection of the dead.

7 And vwhen he had sayd this, there
was a dissention betweene the Pharises, and
Sadduces, so that the multitude vvas di-
uided.

8 For the Sadduces say that there is
no resurrection, neither Angel, nor spirit: but
the Pharises confesse both.

9 Then there vvas a great citie: and
the Scribes of the Pharises part rose vp, & stood
saying, We finde none euill in this man:
if a spirit or an Angel hath spoken to him,
let vs not fight against God.

10 And vwhen there vvas a great dissen-
sion, the chiefe captaine, fearing lest Paul should
haue bene pulled in pieces of them, commaunded
the souldiers to goe downe, and to take him
from among them, and to bring him into the
castle.

11 ¶ Nowv the night following, the
Lords stood by him, and said, Be of good courage,
Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Hieru-
salem, so must thou beare vvitness also in
Rome.

12 And vwhen the day vvas come, certain
of the leuues made an assembly, and bound
the selducavvith a curse, saying, ¶ they vvere
neither eate nor drinke til they had killed
Paul.

13 And they vvere more then four hundred
which had made this conspiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe Priest

...had sayd, We must bound
...with a solemne curse, y^e vve vwill cate
...thing, vntill vve haue slaine Paul.

15 Nowe therefore, ye and the Councill
...to the chiefe captaine, that hee bring
...him forth vnto you to morrow, as though
...vould knowe some thing more perfectly
...of him, and vve, or euer he come neere, vwill
...be ready to kill him.

16 But vwhen Pauls sisters sonne heard of
...their laying await, he vvent, and entred into
...the castle, and tolde Paul.

17 And Paul called one of the Centurions
...unto him, & sayd, Take this yong mā hence
...vnto the chiefe Captaine: for hee hath a cer-
...taine thing to shew him.

18 So he tooke him, & brought him to y^e
...chiefe captaine, and sayde, Paul the prisoner
...called me vnto him, and prayed mee to bring
...this yong man vnto thee, vvhich hath some
...thing to say vnto thee.

19 Thē the chiefe captaine tooke him by
...the hand, & vvent apart vwith him alone, and
...asked him, What hast thou to shew me?

20 And he sayde, The Iewes haue con-
...spired to desire thee, y^e thou vwouldest bring
...forth Paul to morrow into the Councill, as
...though they vwould inquire somevwhat of
...him more perfectly.

21 But let them not persvade thee: for
...here lie in vwaite for him of them, more thē
...fortiemen, vvhich haue bound themselves
...with a curse, that they vvil neither eat nor
...drinke, till they haue killed him: and nowe
...they vwait they readie, and vwaite for thy promise.

22 The chiefe captaine then let the yong
...man depart, after hee had charged him to
...shew it to no man, that he had shewed him
...these things.

23 And he called vnto him two certaine

24. And let them make ready an horse,
that they may goe to Celsus,
and when threescore and ten, and ten
with darts, at the third house of
the street.

25. And let them make ready an horse,
that being set on, may be brought safe
to the Gouvernour.

26. And he wrote an Epistle in this maner
to Claudius Lyfias vnto the most noble
Gouvernour Felix sendeth greeting.

27. As this man was taken of the Jewes,
that should haue bene killed of them, I came
upon them with the garison, & rescued him,
perceiuing that he was a Romane.

28. And when I would haue knowen the
cause, wherefore they accused him, I brought
him forth into their Council.

29. There I perceiued that he was accused
of questions of their Lawe, but had no crime
worthy of death, or of bonds,

30. And when it was shewed me how
the Jewes layde wait for the man, I sent him
by the way to thee, and commanded him
to speake before thee the things
that had against him. Farewell.

31. Then the souldiers, as it was com-
manded them, tooke Paul and brought him
by Antipatris.

32. And the next day they left the horse
with him, and returned vnto the
council.

33. Now when they came to Celsus,
they shewed the Epistle to the Gouvernour,
and presented Paul also vnto him.

34. So when the Gouvernour had read it,
he asked of what province he was: and when
he understood that he was of Cilicia,

35. I will heare thee, said he, when the
Iudges also are come, and commanded him

to be kept in
Tertullus
for himselfe
Gouvernour

N Owe
Priest

with Tertullus
prepared before

And when
began to accuse
that many
this nation

3. We aske
places, most

4. But y
sheet that the
cause a few

5. Certain
pestilent fel
mong all the
and a chiefe

rarities:
6. And he
ple: therefor
judged him

7. But the
on vs, & w
of our hand

8. Comma
thee: of wh
quire) know

case him.
9. And the
ing, that is

10. Then
had becken
answered,

my selfe, f

kept in Herods judgement hall.

CHAP. XXIII.

Tertullus accuseth Paul. 10 Hee answereth
for himselfe. 25 He preacheth Christ so, the
Gouernour and his wife.

NOwe after five dayes, Ananias the
Priest came down with the Elders,
with Tertullus a certaine Oratour, which ap-
peared before the Gouernour against Paul.

1 And whē he was called forth, Tertullus
began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that wee
haue obtained great quietnes through thee,
& that many worthy things are done vnto
this nation through thy prouidence,

2 We acknowledge it wholly, and in all
places, most noble Felix, with all thanks.

3 But y I be not tedious vnto thee, I pray
thee that thou wouldst heare vs of thy con-
science a few words.

4 Certainly wee haue found this man a
pestilent fellow, and a moouer of sedition a-
mong all the Iewes throughout the worlde,
and a chiefe maintainer of the sect of the Na-
zarites:

5 And hath gone about to pollute the Te-
mple: therefore we tooke him, & would haue
iudged him according to our Law:

6 But the chiefe captaine Lyfias came vpon
vs, & with great violence tooke him out
of our hands,

7 Commanding his accusers to come to
thee: of whom thou mayest (if thou wilt in-
quire) know all these things whereof we ac-
cuse him.

8 And the Iewes likewise affirmed, say-
ing, that it was so.

9 Then Paul, after that the Gouernour
had beckened vnto him that he should an-
swered, I doe he more gladly answer for
my selfe, forasmuch as I know that thou hast

11 Seeing that thou mayest haue
the butt twelve dayes since I came vnto
Ierusalem.

12 And they neither found me in the
Temple disputing with any man, neither making
uproare among the people, neither in the
Synagogues, nor in the city.

13 Neither can they prooue the things
whereof they now accuſe me.

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that
I am not the way (which they call heresie) so
worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing
all things which are written in the Law and the
Prophets:

15 And haue hope toward's God, that he
will shew the resurrection of the dead, vvhich they them-
selves looke for also, shall be both of iustice
and vniust.

16 And herein I endeavour my selfe to haue
alway a cleare conscience toward God, and
toward men.

17 Nowe after many yeres, I came
and brought almes to my nation and ouerbringe.

18 At what time, certaine Iewes of Asia
found me puriued in the Temple, Neither
with multitude, nor with tumult,

19 Who ought to haue bene present
before thee, and accuse me, if they had ought
against me.

20 Or let these themselues say, if they
haue founde any vniust thing in me, while
I stood in the Council.

21 Except it be for this one voyce, that
I stood standing among them, Of the resur-
rection of the dead am I accused of you this
day.

22 Now when Felix heard these things,
he deferred them, and saide, When I haue
more perfectly knowe the things which
concerne thee, I will call thee.

23 Then
keeps Paul, a
hee should
to minister v
24 And
with his wife
and be called
the faith in C
25 And as
a temperanc
Felix tremble
for this time
time, I wil ca
26 Hee
haue bene gi
loose him :
offer, and co
27 When
Felix can
willing to go
bound.

28 Felix succed
be brought f
When Felix
Wunce,
from Cesarea
2 Then th
Jewes app
they besou
3 And desir
would send f
ayde waite t
4 But Felix
he kept at C
would shortly
5 Let them
ing you are

...way by the coming of Lyfias
the Captaine I wil decide your matter.

13 Then he commanded a Centurion to
keepe Paul, and that hee should haue ease, &
hee should forbid none of his acquaintance
to minister vnto him, or to come vnto him.

14 And after certaine dayes, came Felix
with his wife Drucilla, which was a Iewelle,
and he called forth Paul, and heard him of
the faith in Christ,

15 And as hee disputed of righteoufnesse
& temperance, & of the iudgement to come,
Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way
for this time, and when I haue conuenient
time, I wil cal for thee,

16 Hee hoped also that money shoulde
haue bene giuen him of Paul, that he might
loose him: wherefore hee sent for him the
ofener, and communed with him.

17 When two yeres were expired, Por-
cius Festus came into Felix roome: and Felix
willing to get fauour of the Iewes, left Paul
bound.

GHAP. XXV.

Festus succeeding Felix, 6. commandeth Paul to
be brought forth. 11. Paul appealeth to Cesar.

When Festus was then come into the pro-
uince, after three dayes hee went vp
from Cesarea vnto Ierusalem,

2 Then the hie Priest, and the chiefe of
Iewes appeared before him against Paul,
they besought him,

3 And desired fauour against him, that hee
would send for him to Hierusalem: and they
saide waite to kil him by the way.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should
be kept at Cesarea, and that he himselfe
should shortly depart thither,

5 Let them therefore, said he, which as-
ke you are able, come down with vs: & if
they

There be any wickednes in the man, he
accuse him.

¶ Now when he had taried among
no more then tenne dayes, he went downe
to Cefarea, & the next daye late in the iudg-
ment seate, and commaunded Paul to be
brought.

7 And when hee was come, the Iewes
which were come from Hierusalem, stood
about him, and layde many & grievous com-
plaints against Paul, whereof they could
make no plaine prooffe.

¶ Forasmuch as he answered, that he had
neither offended any thing against the Law
of the Iewes neither against the Temple,
nor against Cesar,

¶ Yet Festus willing to get fauour of the
Iewes, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou
goe to Hierusalem, & there be iudged of these
things before me?

¶ Then said Paul, I stand at Cefars in iudg-
ment seate, where I ought to be iudged: to the
Iewes I haue done no wrong as thou very
well knowest,

¶ For if I haue done wrong, or committed
any thing worthy of death, I refuse not
to die: but if there be none of these things
whereof they accuse me, no man maye ple-
sure the king to deliuer me to them: I appeale vnto Cesar.

¶ Then when Festus had spoken with
the Council, he answered, Hast thou ap-
pealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou
goe.

¶ And after certaine dayes, King A-
grippa and Bernice came downe to Cefars
to salute Festus.

¶ And when they had remained there
many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto
the king saying, There is a certaine man
set in prison by Felix,

25 Of whose
high Priest
tormented me,
against him.

16 To whose
master of the
my man to de-
fended, haue
have place to
come.

17 There
ther, witho-
fare on the iu-
the man to be

18 Against
by they brow-
supposed,

19 But ha-
of their own
which was d-
done,

20 And b-
of questions,
to Hierusa-
things.

21 But be-
ued to the ex-
minded him
to Cesar.

22 Ther-
would also
now, said he

23 And
was come a-
were entred
chiefe Capt-
at Festus co-
forth.

24 And
which

CHAP. XXV.

15 Of whome whē I came to Hierusalem, the high Priestes & Elders of the Iewes in-
 jourmed me, and desired to haue iudgement
 against him.

16 To whome I answered, that it is not y^e
 manner of the Romanes for fauour to condemne
 any man to death, before that hee which is
 accused, haue the accusers before him, and
 haue place to defend himselfe, concerning the
 crime.

17 Therefore when they were come hi-
 ther, without delaye the day following I
 sat on the iudgement seare, & commanded
 the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom whē the accusers stood
 by, they brought no crime of such thinges as I
 supposed,

19 But had certaine questiōs against him
 of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus
 which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be
 aliue,

20 And because I doubted of such manner
 of questions, I asked him whether hee would
 go to Hierusalem, & there be iudged of these
 thinges.

21 But because he appealed to be referred
 to the examination of Augustus, I com-
 manded him to be kept, till I might send him
 to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I
 would also heare the man my selfe. To mo-
 row, said he, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morowe when Agrippa
 was come and Bernice with great pompe, &
 were entred into the Common hall with the
 chiefe Captaines & chiefe men of the citie,
 at Festus commandement Paul was brought
 forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and al
 which are present with vs, ye see this

THE ACTES.

man, about whome al the multitude of the Iewes haue called vpon me, both at Hierusalem, and heere, crying that he ought not to liue any longer.

25 Yet haue I founde nothing worthy of death that he hath committed: neuertheles, seeing y he hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.

26 Of whome I haue no certaine thing to write to my lorde: wherefore I haue brought him forth vnto you, and specially vnto thee, King Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write,

27 For mee thinketh it vnreasonable to sende a prisoner, and not to shewe the causes which are layde against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

3. *Paul in the presence of Agrippa 4 declareth his life from his childhood, 16 and his calling.*

Then Agrippa saide vnto Paul. Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. So Paul stretched forth the hand, & answered for himselfe.

2 I thinke my selfe happie, king Agrippa, because I shall answere this day before thee of al the things whereof I am accused, of the Iewes:

3 Chiefly, because thou hast knowledge of al customes, and questions which are among the Iewes: wherefore, I beseech thee, to heare mee patiently.

4 As touching my life from my child-hood & what it was from the beginning among mine owne nation at Hierusalem, know all the Iewes,

5 Which knewe me heretofore euen from mine Elders (if they woulde testifie) that after the most strait secte of our religion I liued a Pharise.

6 And now I stand & am accused for

CHAP. XXVI.

hope of the promes made of God vnto our fathers.

7 Whereunto our twelue tribes instantly seruing God day and night, hope to come: for the which hopes sake, O king Agrippa, I am accused of the Iewes.

8 Why shoulde it be thought a thing incredible vnto you. y^e God should raise againe the dead?

9 I also verily thought in my selfe, that I ought to do many contrary things against the Name of Iesus of Nazaret

10 Which thing I also did in Hierusalem: for many of y^e Saints I shut vp in prison, hauing receiued authoritie of the high Priestes, and when they were put to death, I gaue my sentence.

11 And I punished them throughout all y^e Synagogues, & compelled them to blaspheme, and being more madde against them, I persecuted them, euen vnto strange cities.

12 At which time, euen as I went to Damascus with authoritie, & commission from the hie Priestes,

13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heauen, passing the brightness of the sunne, shine rounde about mee, and them which went with me.

14 So when we were all fallen to y^e earth, I heard a voyce speaking vnto me, & saying in the hebrew tongue, Saul Saul why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kicke against prickles.

15 Then I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Iesus whome thou persecutest.

16 But rise and stande vpon thy feet: for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpose to appoint thee a minister and a witness both of the things which thou hast seene, & of the things in the which I wil appeare vnto thee.

17 Deliu

THE ACTES.

17 Deliuering thee from the people
from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I
thee.

18 To opē their eyes, that they may
from darkenes to light, & from the power
Satan vnto God, that they may receive
giuenes of sinnes, & inheritance among
which are sanctified by faith in me.

19 Wherefore, King Agrippa, I was not
obedient vnto the heavenly vision.

20 But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and at Hierusalem, & throughout all
coastes of Iudea, & then to the Gentiles,
they should repent, and turne to God, and
workes worthy amendement of life,

21 For this cause the Iewes caught me in
the Temple, and went about to kil me,

22 Neuerthelesse, I obtained helpe of God
& continue vnto this day, witnessing
to small & to great saying none other thing
then those which the Prophetes and Moses
did say should come.

23 To wit that Christ shoulde suffer, and
that hee shoulde be the first that should rise
from the dead, and shoulde shew light vnto
this people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus answered for himselfe,
Festus said with a loude voyce, Paul, thou art
besides thy selfe: much learning doeth make
thee madde,

25 But he saide, I am not madde, O noble
Festus, but I speake the wordes of truth and
subernes.

26 For the king knoweth of these things
before whom also I speake boldly, for I am
perswaded y none of these thinges are hid
from him for this thing was not done in
corner.

27 O king Agrippa, beleueest thou the
Prophetes? I knowe that thou beleueest.

Then Agrippa saide vnto Paul, Almost
perswadedst me to become a Christian.
Then Paul saide, I would to God that
only thou, but also all that heare mee to
were both almost, and altogether such as
I am, except these bonds.

And when hee had thus spoken, the
king rose vp, and the gouernour, and Bernice,
and they that sate with them,

And when they were gone apart they
talked betweene themselves, saying, This
man doth nothing worthy of death, nor of

Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This
man might haue bene loosed, if hee had not
appealed vnto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

*Paul 7.9. foretelleth the perill of the voyage,
11. But he is not beleued.*

Now when it was concluded, that we
should saile into Italie, they deliuered
Paul, and certaine other prisoners vnto
Centurio named Iulius, of the band of Au-

And we entred into a ship of Adramyt.
purposing to saile by the coastes of A-
sia, and launched forth, and had Aristarchus
a Macedonian, a Thessalonian with vs.

And the next day we arriued at Sidon:
Iulius courteously entreated Paul, and
gave him libertie to goe vnto his friendes,
that they might refresh him.

And from thence we lanchted, & sailed
by Cyprus, because the windes were
contrary.

Then sailed we ouer the sea by Cilicia, &
Phylia & came to Myra, a citie in Lycia.
And there the Centurion found a shippe
of Alexandria, sayling into Italy, and put vs

7 And when we had sailed flow
dayes, & scarce were come againe
because the winde suffered vs not, wee
hard by Candie neere to Salmone.

8 And with much a doe sailed beyond
& came vnto a certaine place called the
hauens, neere vnto the which was the
Laka.

9 So when much time was spent, and
ling was now ieopardous, because also
was nowe Past, Paule exhorted them,

10 And said vnto the, Sirs, I see that
voyage wilbe with hurt and much damage
not of the lading and ship only, but also
our liues.

11 Neuerthelesse the Centurion beleued
rather the Gouvernour and the master of the
shippe, then those things which were spoken
of Paul.

12 And because the haven was not com
modious to winter in, many tooke counsell
depart thence, if by any meanes they might
attaine to Phenice thereto winter, which
an haven of Candie, and lieth towards
Southwest and by West, & Northwest, &
West.

13 And when the Southerne wind blew
softly, they supposing to obtaine their purpose
loosed neerer, and sailed by Candy.

14 But anon after, there arose by it a
my wind called Euroclydon.

15 And when the shippe was caught, it
could not resist the winde, wee let her go
and were caried away.

16 And wee ran vnder a litle yle named
Clauda, and had much a doe to get the boat

17 Which they tooke vp & vsed al be
vndergirding the shippe, fearing least they
should haue fallen into Syrtis, and

CHAP. XXVII.

Make saile and so were caried.

18 The next day, when we vvere tossed with an exceeding tempest, they lightned the ship.

19 And the third day vvee cast out vvide our ovvne hands the tackling of the ship.

20 And vvhenn neither sunne nor starres in manie dayes appeared, and no smal tempest lay vpon vs, all hope that vve should be saved vvas then taken avvay.

21 But after long abstinence Paul stood forth in the mids of them, and said, Sirs, yee should haue hearkened to mee, and not haue loosd from Candie: so should ye haue gained this hurt and losse.

22 But novv I exhort you to bee of good courage: for there shalbe no losse of any mans life among you, saue of the ship only.

23 For there stood by me this night the angel of God, vvwhose I am, and vvho I serue,

24 Saying, Feare not, Paul: for thou must bee brought before Cesar, and loe, God hath giuen vnto thee freely al y saile vvith thee.

25 Wherefore, sirs, be of good courage: for I beleene God, y it shalbe so as it hath bene tolde me.

26 Howbeit, vve must bee cast into a certaine Iland.

27 And vvhenn the fourteenth night vvas come, as vvee vvere caried to and fro in the Adriaticall sea about midnight, the shipmen deemed that some countrey approached vnto them,

28 And sounded, and founde it twentie fathoms: and vvhenn they had gone a litle further, they sounded againe, and founde fifteene fathoms.

29 Then fearing least they shoulde hane fallen into some rough places, they cast foure anchors out of the Akerne, and vvished that

THE ACTES.

the day were come.

30 Now as the mariners were about to
out of the ship, and had let downe the
into the sea vnder a colour as though
would haue cast ancre out of the fore

31 Paul said vnto the Centurion and
souldiers, Except these abide in the ship,
cannot be safe.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes
the boate, and let it fall away.

33 And when it began to bee day, Paul
exhorted them all to take meate, saying
This is the fourteenth day that ye haue fasted,
and continued fasting, receiuing nothing:

34 Wherefore I exhort you to take meate
for this is for your safegard: for there shall
not an haire fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken,
tooke bread, and gaue thanks to God in
presence of them all, & brake it, and began
to eate.

36 Then were they all of good courage,
they also tooke meate.

37 Now we were in the ship in altho
hundredth, there scote and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten ynough, the
lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat
into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not
the countrey, but they spied a certaine creek
with a bāke, into the which they were minded
(if it were possible) to thrust in the ship.

40 So when they had takē vp the anchors,
they committed the ship vnto the sea. & loosed
the rudder bonds, and hoisted vp the main
saile to the wind, and drew to the shore.

41 And when they fel into a place, where
two seas met, they thrust in the shippe, and
the forepart stuck fast, and could not
move, but the hinder part was broken.

CHAP. XXVIII.

with the violence of the waves.

42 Then the souldiers counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them, when he had swonne out, should flee away.

43 But the Centurion willing to save Paul, called them from *this* counsel, & commanded that they that could swim, should cast themselves first into the sea, & goe out to land:

44 And the other some on boardes, & some on certaine pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe that they came all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

¶ The Barbarians courtesie towards Paul and his companie. 8 Publius 9 and others are by him healed.

ANd when they were come safe, the they knew that the yle was called Melita.

1 And the Barbarians shewed vs no litle kindenesse: for they kindled a fire, and receiued vs euery one, because of y^e present showre and because of the colde.

2 And whē Paul had gathered a number of sticks, and laide them on y^e fire, there came a viper out of the heate, & leapt on his hand.

3 Now whē the Barbarians saw y^e worne hang on his hande they saide among themselves, This mā surely is a murtherer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet Vengeance hath not suffered to liue.

4 But he shooke off the worne into the fire, and felt no harme.

5 Howbeit they waited whē he should be swolne, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and sawe no inconueniēce come to him they changed their mindes and sayde. That he was a God.

6 In the same quarters the chiefe man of the yle (whose name was Publius) had possesse

THE ACTES

18 **¶** Thus : the same receiued vs , and lodged vs
three dayes courteously.

19 **¶** And so it was y^e the father of Publius
lay sick of the feuer, and of a bloody fluxe, to
whome Paul entred in, and when he prayed
he laid his hands on him, and healed him.

20 **¶** When this then was done, other also in
the yle, which had diseases, came to him, &
were healed,

21 **¶** Which also did vs great honour: and
whē we departed, they laded vs with things
necessary.

22 **¶** Now after three moneths we departed
in a ship of Alexandria, which had win-
tered in the yle whose badge was Castor &
Pollux.

23 **¶** And when we arriued at Syracuse, we
taried there three dayes,

24 **¶** And from thence we set a compass, &
came to Rhegium : and after one day the
Southwinde blew, and we came the second
day to Puteoli:

25 **¶** Where wee found brethren, and were
desired to tarie with them seuen dayes, & so
we went toward Rome.

26 **¶** And from thence, when the brethren
hearde of vs, they came to meete vs at the
Market of Appius, and at the three Taverns,
whom when Paul saw, hee thanked God, &
was bold.

27 **¶** So when we came to Rome, the Cen-
turiō deliuered the prisoners to the generall
captain, but Paul was suffered to dwell by him
selfe with a souldier that kept him.

28 **¶** And the third day after, Paul called
the chiefe of the Iewes together and when
they were come, he said vnto them, Men
brethren, though I haue committed nothing
against the people, or lawes of the fathers,
yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusa-

unto the
18
would
cause of
19
I was
because
20
for you,
for that
this chain
21
receiued
neither
or spake
22
thinkest
knowe
23
day then
ging, to
kingdom
things th
liue of m
morning
24
which v
25
these h
spoke on
Ghost by
26
By heari
land, &
27
far, and t
with the
should se
fire care
I should

into the hands of the Romanes,

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me go because there yvas no cause of death in me.

19 But vwhen the Iewes spake contrary, I vvas constrained to appeale vnto Cesar, not because I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore haue I called for you, to see *you* and to speake vwith *you*: for that hope of Israels sake, I am bound with this chaine.

21 The they saide vnto him, Wee neither receiued letter out of Iudea, concerning thee, neither came any of the brethre, that shewed or spake any euil of thee.

22 But vve vvil heare of thee, vwhat thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, vve knowe that euerie vwhere it is spokē against.

23 And vwhen they had appointed him a day there came many vnto him into, *his* lodging, to vvhom he expounded testifying the kingdome of God, and persvading the those things that concerne Iesus both out of the luy of Moses, and out of the Prophets from morning to night.

24 And some vvere perswaded wth the things vvhich vvere spokē, & some beleueed not.

25 Therefore vwhen they agreed not among theselues, they departed, after that Paul had spokē one vword *to wit*, Wel spake y^e holy Ghost by Esaias the Prophet to the Fathers,

26 Saying, Goe vnto this people, & say, By hearing ye shall heare, & shal not vnderstand, & seeing, ye shall see, & not perceiue.

27 For the heart of this people is vvixed sit, and their eares, are dull of hearing, and vwith their eies haue they vvinked, lest they should see vwith *their* eies, and heare vwith *their* eares, and vnderstand vwith *their* hearts, & shoulde returne that I might heale them.

TO THE ROMANES.

28 Bee it knowen therefore vnto you, that his saluation of God is sent vnto the Gentiles, and they shal heare it.

29 And when he had said these things, the Jewes departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

30 And Paul remained two yeeres full in a house hired for himselfe, and receiued all that came in vnto him,

31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching those things, which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with al boldnes of speech without let.

THE EPISTLE OF THE Apostle Paul to the Romanes.

CHAP. I.

1 He first sheweth on what authoritie his Apostleship standeth, &c. Then he commendeth the Gospel.

PAUL a servant of IESVS CHRIST, called to be an Apostle, put apart to preach the Gospel of God,

2 (Which he had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy Scriptures)

3 Concerning his sonne Iesus Christ our Lord (which was made of the seede of David, according to the flesh,

4 And declared mightily to be the Sonne of God, touching the Spirit of Sanctification by the resurrection from the dead)

5 By whom we haue receiued grace and Apostleship (that obedience might be giuen vnto the faith) for his name among all the Gentiles,

6 Among whome yee bee also the called of Iesus Christ:

7 To all you that be at Rome beloued of God, called to be Saints; Grace be with you.

CHAP. I.

and peace from God our Father, & from the Lord Iesus Christ.

8 First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for youall, because your faith is published throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnesse, (whom I serue in my spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne) that without ceasing I make mention of you

10 Alwayes in my prayers, beseeching by some meanes, one time or other, I might see a prosperous iourney, by his wil of God, to come vnto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I might bestowe among you some spirittuall gift, that you might be strengthened,

12 That is, that I might bee comforted together with you, through our mutuall faith, both yours and mine.

13 Nowe my brethren, I woulde that ye should not be ignorant, howe I have often times purposed to come vnto you (but haue bene let hitherto) that I might haue some fruite also among you, as I haue among the other Gentiles.

14 I am detter both to the Grecians, and to Barbarians, both to the wise men and to the vnwise.

15 Therefore, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the Gospel to you also that are at Rome.

16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God vnto salvation to euery one that beleeueth, to the Iewe, & also to the Grecian.

17 For by it the righteousness of God is reueiled, from faith to faith: as it is written, the iust shall line by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is reueiled from heauen against all vngodlines, & vnrighteousnes, which withhold the truth in vnrigh-

TO THE ROMANS
righteousnes,

19 For asmuch as γ , which may be knowne
of God, is manifest in them : for God hath
shewed it vnto them,

20 For the inuisible things of him, that is
his eternall power and Godhead, are shewed
by the creation of the worlde, being con-
sidered in *his* woorkes, to the intent that they
should be without excuse.

21 Because that when they knewe God,
they glorified him not as God, neither were
thankful, but became vaine in their thought,
and their foolish heart was full of darkness.

22 When they professed themselves
wise, they became fooles.

23 For they turned the glory of the
corruptible God to the similitude of γ image
of a corruptible man, and of birdes, & four
footed beastes, and of creeping things.

24 Wherefore also God gaue them
their hearts lustes, vnto vncleannesse, to
file their owne bodies betweene themselves.

25 Which turned the trueth of God
into a lie, & worshipped & serued the crea-
ture, forsaking the Creator, which is blessed for-
uer, Amen,

26 For this cause God gaue them vp
vnto vile affections : for euen their women
change the naturall vse into that which is
gainst nature,

27 And likewise also the men left the
naturall vse of the woman, and burned in
their lust one toward another, and man with
man wrought filthinesse, and receiued in their
selues such recompence of their error, as
meete.

28 For as they regarded not to know God,
therefore God deliuered them vp vnto a reprobate
mind, to doe those things which are not

CHAP. II.

29 Being full of al vnrightheousnes, fornication, wickednes, couetousnes, maliciousnes, full of enmie, of murther, of debate, of deceit, taking al things in the euill part: whisperers, 30 Backbiters, haters of God, doers of euill, proude, boasters, inuencers of euill things, disobedient to parents, without vnderstanding, couenant breakers, without natural affection, such as can neuer be appeased, mercilesse.

31 Which men, though they knewe the Law of God, howe that they which commit such things are worthy of death, yet not onely doo the same, but also fauour them that doe them.

CHAP. II.

He bringeth all before the iudgement seate of God, 17. He urgeth the Iewes with the written Law, 23 in which they boasted.

T Herefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art & condemnest: for that thou comdest another, thou condemnest thy self for thou & condemnest, doest the same things.

2 But we knowe that the iudgement of God is according to truthe, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O thou man, that condemnest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

Or despisest thou the riches of his bountifullnesse, and patience, and long sufferance, not knowing that the bountifullnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

But thou, after thine hardnes, and heart cannot repent, heapest vp as a treasure thy self wrath, against the day of wrath, and declaration of the iudgement of God,

6 Wha

TO THE ROMANES.

6 Who will rewarde euery man
according to his woorkes:

7 *That is*, to them which through
well doing, seeke glory, and honour,
immortalitie, euerlasting life:

8 But vnto them that are contentious,
disobey the trueth, & obey vnrighteousnes,
shalbe indignation and wrath.

9 Tribulation and anguish shalbe vnto
the soule of euery man that doeth euill:
Iewe first, and also of the Grecian.

10 But to euery man that doeth good
shalbe glorie, and honour, and peace, to
Iewe first, and also to the Grecian.

11 For there is no respect of persons
with God.

12 For as many as haue sinned without
the Lawe shall perish also without the Lawe,
and as many as haue sinned in the Lawe,
shall be iudged by the Lawe.

13 (For the hearers of the Lawe are
righteous before God: but the doers of
the Lawe shalbe iustified.

14 For when the Gentiles which haue
not the Lawe, doe by nature the things contained
in the Lawe, they hauing not the Lawe,
are a Law vnto themselves,

15 Which shewe the effect of the Law
written in their hearts, their conscience
bearing witness, and their thoughts
accusing one another, or excusing)

16 At the day when God shall iudge
the secretes of men by Iesus Christ, according
to my Gospel.

17 Beholde, thou art called a Iewe,
and seest in the Lawe, and gloriest in God,

18 And knowest his will, and triest
the things that dissent from it in that thou
art instructed by the Lawe:

19 And perswadest thy selfe y^e thou

CHAP. II.

side of the blinde, a light of them which
are indarkenelle,

10 An instructor of them which lacke dis-
cretion, a teacher of the vblearned, which
teacheth the forme of knowledge, and of the
lawe in the Lawe.

11 Thou therefore, which teachest another,
teachest thou not thy selfe? thou that prea-
chest, A man shoulde not steale, doest thou
steale?

12 Thou y^e saiest, A man shoulde not com-
mit adulterie, doest thou commit adultery?
thou that abhorrest idoles, committest thou
idolatrie?

13 Thou y^e gloriest in the Lawe, through
breaking the Lawe, dishonourest thou God?

14 For y^e Name of God is blasphemed a-
mong the Gentilest through you, as it is writ-
ten.

15 For circumcision verely is profitable, if
thou doe y^e Law: but if thou be a transgressor
of the Lawe, thy circumcision is made vncir-
cumcision.

16 Therefore if the vncircumcision keepe
the ordinances of the Lawe, shall not his vn-
circumcision be counted for circumcision?

17 And shal not vncircumcision which is
by nature (if it keepe the Lawe) condemne
thee, which by y^e letter & circumcision art a
transgressor of the Lawe?

18 For he is not a Jew, which is one out-
ward: neither is that circumcision, which is
outward in the flesh:

19 But he is a Jewe which is one with-
in, and the circumcision is of the heart, in the
sincerite, not in the letter, whose praise is not of
men, but of God. — —

CHAP. III

y^e thou
givesh the Jewes some 2. preferment, for

TO THE ROMANES.

*the covenants sake, 4. but yet such, as what
dependeth on Gods mercie.*

What is then the preferment of the Jew?
Or what is the profite of circumcision?

1 Much enery maner of way: for chiefly
because vnto them were of credit commens
the oracles of God.

2 For what, though some did not beleue
shall their vnbeliefe make the faith of
without effect

3 God forbid: yea, let God bee true, &
every man a liar, as it is written, That
mightest be iustified in thy wordes, and
percome, when thou art iudged.

4 Nowe if our vnrighteousnes commens
the righteousness of God, what shall we say
is God vnrighteous, which punisheth?
(speake as a man)

5 God forbid: els howe shall God iudge
the worlde?

6 For if the veritie of God hath more
bounded through my lie vnto his glorie
why am I yet condemned as a sinner?

7 And (as we are blamed, and as some
firme & we say) why doe we not euil, &
may come thereof? whose damnation is not

8 What then? are we more excellent
in nowise: for we haue already proued,
both Iewes and Gentiles are vnder sinne.

9 As it is written, There is none righte-
ous, no not one,

10 There is none that vnderstandeth: there
is none that seeketh God.

11 They haue all gone out of the way:
they haue become made altogether vnprofi-
ble: there is none y doeth good, no not one.

12 Their throte is an open sepulchre:
haue vsed their tongues to deceit: the poise
of aspes is vnder their lippes.

13 Whose mouth is full of cursing

15 Their feete are swift to shed blood.

16 Destruction and calamity are in their waies.

17 And the way of peace they haue not knowne,

18 The feare of God is not before their eyes.

19 Now we knowe that whatsoeuer the Lawe sayeth, it sayeth it to them which are vnder the Lawe, that euery mouth may be stopped, and all the world bee subiect to the iudgement of God.

20 Therefore by the woorkes of the Lawe shall no flesh be iustified in his sight: for by the Lawe commeth the knowledge of sinne.

21 But nowe is the righteousnesse of God made manifest without the Lawe, having witnes of the Lawe & of the Prophets,

22 To wit, the righteousnes of God by the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto al, & vpon all that beleue.

23 For there is no difference: for all haue sinned, & are deprived of the glorie of God,

24 And are iustified frely by his grace, through his redemption that is in Christ Iesus,

25 Whom God hath set forth to be a redemption through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousnes, by the forgiveness of sinnes that are passed,

26 Through the patience of God, to shewe at this time his righteousnesse, that he might be iust, and a iustifier of him which is of the faith of Iesus,

27 Where is then the reioycing? it is exalted, By what Lawe? of woorkes? Nay: but of the Lawe of faith.

28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith wout the works of the lawe.

29 God, is hee the, God of his Iewes onely, and

and not of the Gentiles also? Yes, even of the Gentiles also.

30 For it is one God who shall iustifie the circumcision of faith, and vncircumcision through faith.

31 Doe wee then make the Lawe of none effect through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the Lawe.

CHAP. III.

1. He proueth that which he sayde before of faith, by the example of Abraham.

What shal we say then, that Abraham our father hath found concerning the flesh.

2 For if Abraham were iustified by woorkes, he hath wherein to reioyce, but not wth God.

3 For what sayeth the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, and it was counted vnto him for righteousness.

4 Nowe to him that woorketh, y^e wages is not counted by fauour, but by dette;

5 But to him that woorketh not, but beleeueth in him that iustifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.

6 Euen as Dauid declareth the blessednes of the mā, vnto whome God imputeth righteousness without woorkes, saying,

7 Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sinnes are covered.

8 Blessed is the man, to whome the Lord imputeth not sinne.

9 Came this blessednes then vpon the circumcision only. or vpon y^e vncircumcision also? For wee say, that faith was imputed vnto Abraham for righteousness.

10 How was it then imputed? when he was circumcised, or vncircumcised? not when he was circumcised, but when he was vncircumcised.

11 After hee receiued the signe of circumcision, as the scale of the righteousness of the faith.

which he had, when he was vncircum-
cised, that he should be the father of all them
that beleeue, not being circumcised, that
circumcission might be imputed to them

And the father of circumcision, not
of them only which are of the circumci-
sion, but vnto them also that walke in the
truth of the faith of our father Abraham,
before he had when he was vncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the
father of the world, was not giuen to Abraham
in his seed through γ Law, but through γ
the righteousness of faith.

14 For if they which are of the Law, be-
lieue, faith is made void, and the promise is
made of none effect,

15 For the Law causeth wrath: for where
the Law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore, it is by faith, that it might
be by grace, and the promise might be sure
to all γ seede, not to that only which is of the
Law: but also to that which is of the faith of
Abraham, who is the father of vs all,

17 (As it is written, I haue made thee a
father of many nations) *even* before God
thou wast beleeued, who quickenest the dead,
and tellest those things which be not, as
though they were.

18 Which Abraham, above hope, beleeued
that he should be the father of
many nations: according to that which was
promised to him, So shall thy seede be.

19 And he not weake in γ faith, conside-
ring not his own body, which was now dead,
nor when he was almost an hundred yeres old, neither
the deadnes of Saraes wombe.

20 Neither did he doubt of the promise of
God through vnbeliefe, but was strengthened
in the faith, and gaue glory to God.

faith

De

21 Being

TO THE ROMANES.

21 Being fully assured that he which
promised, was also able to doe it.

22 And therefore it was imputed to
for righteousness.

23 Now it is not written for him
that it was imputed to him for righteousnes.

24 But also for vs, to whom it shall be
puted for righteousness, which beleue in
that raised vp Iesus our Lord from the dead.

25 Who was deliuered to death for
sins, and is risen againe for our iustification.

CHAP. V

1 He amplifieth. 2 Christs righteousness, which
is layd holde on by faith.

Then being iustified by faith, wee haue
peace toward God through our Lord
Iesus Christ.

3 By whom also through faith we haue
this access into this grace, wherein we stand
& reioyce vnder the hope of the glory of God.

4 Neither that only, but also we reioyce
in tribulations, knowing that tribulation be-
geth forth patience,

5 And patience experience, & experience
hope maketh not ashamed, because

the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts
by the holy Ghost, which is giuen vnto vs.

6 For Christ, when wee were yet of
weaknesse, at his time, dyed for the vngodly.

7 Doubtles, one wil scarce die for a
righteous man: but yet for a good man it may
that one dare die.

8 But God setteth out his loue toward vs,
seeing that while we were yet sinners,
Christ died for vs.

9 Much more then, being nowe iustified
by his blood wee shall be saued from wrath
through him.

10 For if while we were enemies, we were
reconciled to God by the death of his Sonne,

which more being reconciled, we shalbe saved
by his life.

11 And not onely so, but we also reioyce
in God through our Lorde Iesus Christ, by
whom we haue now receiued the attonemēt

12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred
into the worlde, and death by sinne, and so
death went ouer al men: in whom all men
haue sinned.

13 For vnto the time of the Lawe was
sinne in the world, but sinne is not imputed
while there is no Law.

14 But death reigned frō Adam to Mo-
ses, euen ouer them also that sinned not af-
ter y^e like maner of the transgression of A^dā,
which was the figure of him y^e was to come.

15 But yet the gift is not so, as is the of-
fence: for if through the offence of that one,
many be dead, much more y^e grace of god, &
the gift by grace, which is by one man Iesus
Christ, hath abounded vnto many.

16 Neither is the gift so, as *that which en-
tered* is by one that sinned: for the fault *came*
of one offence vnto condemnation: but the
gift is of many offences to iustification.

17 For if by y^e offence of one, death reig-
ned through one, much more shal they which
were yet alive receiue that aboundance of grace, and of that
the vngodly fruits of y^e righteousness, reigne in life through
one, that is Iesus Christ.

18 Likewise then as by the offence of
one, the fault *came* on al mē to condemnatiō,
by the iustifying of one the benefite aboun-
deth toward al men to the iustification of life

19 For as by one mans disobedience ma-
ny were made sinners, so by that obedience
of that one shal many be made righteous.

20 Moreover y^e law entred therewpō that y^e
offence should abound: neuerthelesse, where sin
abounded, there grace abounded much more:

TO THE ROMANES.

31 That as sinne had reigned vpon vs
so might grace also reigne by righte-
ousnes into eternall life, through Iesus Christ
our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 *Hee commeth to sanctification, vnto
which, that no man putteth on Christ
withoutnes, he proueth. 4 by an argument
of Baptisme.*

WHAT shal we say then? Shal we con-
tinue in sin, y grace may abound? God forbid.

2 How shal we that are dead to sinne
yet therein?

3 Knowe ye not, that al wee which
bin baptized into Iesus Christ, haue
bin baptized into his death?

4 We are buried then with him by
baptisme into his death, y like as Christ was
raised fro y dead to the glory of the Father,
we also should walke in newnesse of life.

5 For if we be planted with him to the
similitude of his death, euen so shall we be
to the similitude of his resurrection,

6 Knowing this, that our old man is
crucified with him, that the body of sinne
be destroyed, that hencefoorth wee should
not serue sinne.

7 For he that is dead, is freed from sinne.

8 Wherefore, if we be dead with Christ,
we beleue that we shal live also with him.

9 Knowing that Christ being, raised
fro y dead, dieth no more, death hath no
dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, hee died once
to sinne: but in that he liueth, he liueth to God.

11 Likewise thinke ye also, that ye
are dead to sinne. but are alieue to God in
Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sinne therefore reigne in
your mortall body, that ye should obey it in
the desires thereof.

Neither giue ye your members as weapons of vnrightheousnes vnto sinne: but giue your selues vnto God, as they that are alieue from the dead, and giue your members as weapons of rightheousnes vnto God.

14 For sinne shall not haue dominion ouer you: for ye are not vnder the Lawe, but vnder grace.

15 What then? shal we sinne, because we are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whomsoever ye giue your selues as seruaunts to obey, his seruants ye are to vvhom ye obey, vvhether be it of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto rightheousnes?

17 But God be thanked, that ye haue bene seruaunts of sinne, but ye haue obeyed from the heart vnto the forme of the doctrine wherunto ye were deliuered.

18 Being then made free from sinne, ye are made the seruants of rightheousnes.

19 I speake after the maner of man, because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye haue giuen your members seruants to vncleanness, and to iniquitie, to commit iniquity: so now giue your members seruants vnto rightheousnes in holines.

20 For vvhether ye were the seruants of sinne, ye were freed from rightheousnes.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things wherof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being freed from sinne, and made seruants vnto God, ye haue your fruit in holinesse, and the end, euerlasting life.

23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God is eternal life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

He declareth what it is, to bee no more
der the Law. by an example taken of the
Law of marriage.

K Now ye not brethren, (for I speake to
them that know the Law) that the Law
hath dominion ouer a man as long as he liueth.

2 For the woman which is in subiection
to a man, is bound by the Lawe to the man,
while he liueth: but if the man be dead,
she is deliuered from the Law of the man,

3 So then, if while the man liueth, she
taketh another man, shee shalbee called an
adulteresse: but if the man be dead, she is free
from the Law, so y she is not an adulteresse,
though she take another man.

4 So ye, my brethren, are dead also to the
Lawe by the body of Christ, that ye should
be vnto another, euen vnto him that is raised
vp from y dead, that we should bring forth
fruit vnto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the
passions of sinnes which were by the Law
had force in our members, to bring forth fruit
vnto death,

6 But now we are deliuered from y Law,
he being dead in whom we were holden, that
wee should serue in newnesse of Spirit, and
not in the oldnesse of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? Is the Law
sinne? God forbid. Nay, I knew not sinne
but by the Lawe: for I had not knowne
except y Law had saide, Thou shalt not
lust.

8 But sinne tooke an occasion by the com-
mandement & wrought in me al manner of con-
cupiscence for without y Law sinne is dead.

9 For I once was aliue, without y Law, but
when the commandement came, sinne was
increased.

10 But I died: and the same commandement

...into me vnto death.

11 For sinne tooke an occasion by the commandement, and deceitied me, and thereby slew me,

12 Wherefore the Lawe is holy, & that commandement is holy, & iust, & good,

13 Was then that which is good, made death vnto me? God forbid, but sinne, that it might appeare sinne, wrought death in me by that which is good, that sin might be our measure sinnesfull by the commandement.

14 For we know that the Law is spirituall, but I am carnall, sold vnder sinne.

15 For I allow not that which I doe? for what I would, that doe I not: but what I hate, that doe I.

16 If I doe then that which I would not, I consent to the Law that is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I, that doe it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

18 For I knowe, that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwell:th no good thing: for to will is present with me: but I finde no meanes to performe that which is good,

19 For I doe not the good thing, which I would, but the euill which I would not, that I doe.

20 Now if I doe that I would not, it is not I that doe it, but the sin that dwelleth in me.

21 I finde then that when I would do good, I am thus yoked, that euill is present with me.

22 For I delight in the Law of God, concerning the inner man:

23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the lawe of my minde, and bringing me captiue vnto the lawe of sin, which is in my members.

1. O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from the body of this sin?
 2. I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord. Then I my selfe in my minde服
 Law of God, but in my flesh the Law of

CHAP. VIII.

3. He cōcludeth & there is no condemnation to them who are grafted in Christ through his blood.

NOWE then there is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Iesus, who walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

1. For the Lawe of the Spirit of life, which is in Christ Iesus, hath freed me from the Lawe of sinne and of death.

2. For (that that vvas impossible to the Lawe) inasmuch as it vvas yveake (because of the flesh) God sending his ovvne Sonne, in the similitude of sinful flesh, and for sinne, condemned sinne in the flesh.

3. That & righteousnesse of the Lawe might be fulfilled in vs, vvhich vvalke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

4. For they that are after the flesh, love the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

5. For the vvildome of the flesh is death: but the vvildome of & Spirit is life & peace.

6. Because the vvildome of the flesh is enmity against God for it is not subject to the Lawe of God, neither indeede can be.

7. So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.

8. Nowe ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit because the Spirit of God dwelleth in you: but if any man hath not the Spirit of Christ, the same is not his.

9. And if Christ be in you, the body is dead, because of sinne: but & Spirit is life, because of righteousnes sake.

10. But if the spirit of him that raised up

from the
 Chr
 mort
 in you
 There
 the flesh
 23 For
 but if y
 in the Spi
 24 For
 God, they
 25 For
 bondage to
 the Spirit o
 in father
 26 The
 Spirit, t
 27 If m
 men the be
 with Chris
 we ma
 28 For
 present tim
 which shall
 29 For
 ureth wh
 uiled.
 30 Becau
 die, not o
 him, which
 31 Becau
 ered from
 glorious lib
 32 For w
 eth with v
 ether ynto
 33 And
 lo which
 we doe
 eption, ex

from the dead, dwell in you, he that raised Christ from the dead, shall also quicken our mortall bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

12. Therefore brethren, we are debtors not to the flesh, to live after the flesh:

13. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye mortifie the deedes of the body by the Spirit, ye shall live.

14. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.

15. For ye have not received the Spirit of bondage to feare againe: but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba father.

16. The same Spirit beareth witness with us, that we are the children of God.

17. If we be children, we are also heires, even the heires of God, and heires annexed with Christ: if so be that we suffer with him, we may also be glorified with him.

18. For I count that the afflictions of this present time are not worthy of the glory, which shall be shewed vnto vs.

19. For the fervent desire of the creature waiteth when the sonnes of God shall be revealed.

20. Because the creature is subiect to vanitie, not of it owne will, but by reason of him, which hath subdued it vnder hope,

21. Because the creature also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into glorious libertie of the sonnes of God.

22. For we know that every creature groaneth with vs also, and travaileth in paine together vnto this present.

23. And not onely the creature, but wee also which have the first fruites of the Spirit, we doe sigh in our selues, waiting for the redemption, even the redemption of our body.

For wee are sustained by hope:
Is scene, is not hope: for how can
hope for that which he seeth?

25 But if wee hope for that wee see,
wee doe with patience abide for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our
infirmities: for wee knowe not what to pray
as we ought: but the Spirit it selfe maketh
request for vs, with sighes, which cannot be
expressed,

27 But he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth
what is the meaning of the Spirit: for he
maketh request for the Saints, according to
the wil of God.

28 Also wee knowe that all things worke
together for the best vnto them that love
God, euen to thē y are called of his purpose.

29 For those which he knew before, he
also predestinate to be made like to the image
of his Sonne, that he might be the first borne
among many brethren.

30 Moreouer whome he predestinated,
them also he called, & whom he called, them
also he iustificed, & whome he iustificed, them
also he glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things?
If God be on our side, who can be against vs?

32 Who spared not his owne sonne, but
gave him for vs al to death, howe shall he not
with him giue vs al things also?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge
of Gods chosen? it is God that iustificeth,

34 Who shall condemne? it is Christ,
which is dead, yea or rather, which is risen
again, who is also at the right hand of God,
and maketh request also for vs.

35 Who shall separate vs from the love
of Christ? shall tribulation, or anguish, or per-
secution, or famine, or nakednes, or perill, or
sword?

It is written, For thy sake are we
all day long : we are counted as sheep
for the slaughter.

7 Neuertheles, in al these things wee are
more then conquerours through him that lo-

8 For I am perswaded that neither death,
nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor
powers, nor thinges present, nor thinges to

9 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other
creature shall be able to-separate vs from
the love of God, which is in Christ Iesus
our Lord.

CHAP. IX

He answereth an obiection that might bee
brought on the Iewes behalfe.

1 Say the truth, I lie not, my conscience
bearing me witnes in γ holy ghost

2 That I haue great heavines, and conti-
nuall sorowe in mine heart.

3 For I would wish my self to be separate
from Christ, for my brethren that are my
kinsmen according to the flesh,

4 Which are the Israelites to whome per-
tained the adoption, and the glory, and the
covenants, and the giuing of the Lawe, and
the seruice of God, and the promises.

5 Of whom are the fathers, & of whome
pertaining the fleshe, Christ came, who is
God over all blessed for ever, Amen.

6 Notwithstanding it cannot bee that γ
word of God should take none effect: for all
they are not Israel, which are of Israel:

7 Neither are they all children, because
they are the seede of Abraham, but, in Isaac
thy seede be called.

8 That is, they which are the children of
the fleshe, are not the children of God: but the
children of the promise are counted for γ seede.

9 For

TO THE ROMANES

9 For this is a woorde of promes, In the same time will I come, and Sara shal haue a sonne.

10 Neither be onely false this, but also Rebecca when shee had conceiued by one, surn by our father Isaac.

11 For yer the children were borne, and when they had neither done good nor euill (that the purpose of God might remaine according to election not by workes, but by him that calleth)

12 It was saide vnto her, The elder shall serue the yonger.

13 As it is written, I haue loued Iacob, & haue hated Esau.

14 What shal wee say then? Is there righteousness with God? God forbid.

15 For he saith to Moses, I will haue mercy on him, to whom I will shewe mercy: & will haue compassion on him, on whome I will haue compassion.

16 So then it is not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that sheweth mercie.

17 For the Scripture saierh vnto Pharao, For this same purpose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might shew my power in thee, & that my Name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore he hath mercy, on whome hee will, and whom he will he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then vnto mee, Why doth he yet complaine? for who hath resisted his wil?

20 But, O man, who art thou, that pleadest against God? shal the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

21 Hath not the potter power of the clay, to make of the same lump one vessell to ho-

his w
suffer
wrath
23
ches o
which
24
the Ie
25
them,
and he
26
was sa
that th
of the
27
Thoug
rael, we
a reme
28
ther it i
for the
earth.
29
the Lon
had ben
to Gom
30
tiles wh
attained
ousnes v
31
of right
Law of
32
by faith
law: for
stone,

honour, and another vnto dishonour?

22 What and if God would, to shewe his wrath, and to make his power knowne, suffer with long patience the vessels of wrath, prepared to destruction?

23 And that hee might declare the riches of his glory vpon the vessels of mercy, which he hath prepared vnto glory?

24 Euen vs, whom he hath called, not of the Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles,

25 As hee saith also in Osee, I will call them, My people, which were not my people, and her, Beloued, which was not beloued.

26 And it shall be in the place where it was sayd vnto them, Ye are not my people, that there they shall be called, The children of the liuing God.

27 Also Esaias cryeth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel were as the sande of the sea, yet shall ~~but~~ a remnant be saued.

28 For hee will make his account, and gather it into a short summe with righteousnes for the Lorde wil make a short count in the earth.

29 And as Esaias saide before, Except the Lorde of hostes had left vs a seede, wee had bene made as Sodom, and had bene like to Gomorrha:

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not righteousnes, have attained vnto righteousness, euen the righteousness which is of faith.

31 But Israel which followed the Law of righteousness, coulde not attaine vnto the Law of righteousness.

32 Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the workes of the law: for they haue stumbled at the stumbling stone,

TO THE ROMANES

As it is written, Beholde: They shall be as a stumbling stone, and a rock to which they shall fall: and euery one that believeth in him, shall not be ashamed.

CHAP. X

1. He handleth the effect of election, 2. Some refuse, & some embrace 4. Christ is the ende of the Law.

Brethren, mine hearts desire & prayer for God for Israel is, y they might be saved.

2 For I beare them record, that they have the zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they, being ignorant of y righteousness of God, & going about to stablish their owne righteousness, haue not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God.

4 For Christ is the ende of the Law for righteousness vnto euery one that believeth.

5 For Moses thus describeth the righteousness which is of the Lawe, That the man that doth these things, shall liue thereby.

6 But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heauen? (that is to bring Christ againe from aboue)

7 Or, Who shall descend into the deepe (that is to bring Christ againe from y dead)

8 But what saith it? The worde is nigh thee, *euon* in thy mouth, and in thine heart. This is the word of faith which we preach.

9 For if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lorde Iesus, and shalt beleue in thine heart, that God raised him vp from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man beleaueth vnto righteousness, and with the mouth man confesseth to saluation:

11 For the Scripture saith, Whosoever be-

CHAP. XI.

in him, shal not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference between the Iewe & the Grecian: for hee that is Lord over all, is riche vnto all, that call on him.

13 For whosoeuer shal call vpon the Name of the Lord, shalbe saved.

14 But howe shal they call on him, in whome they haue not beleeued? and howe shal they beleue in him, of whom they haue not heard? and how shal they heare without a preacher?

15 And how shal they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, Howe beautiful are the feete of the which bring glad tidings of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things?

16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gospel: for Esaias saith, Lord, who hath beleued our report?

17 Then faith is by hearing, & hearing by the worde of God.

18 But I demaund, Haue they not heard? No doubt their sound went out through all the earth, and their wordes into the endes of the world.

19 But I demand, Did not Israel knowe God? First Moses saith, I will prouoke you to ennie by a nation that is not my nation, & by a foolish nation I will anger you.

20 And Esaias is bolde, and saith, I was found of them that sought mee not, & haue bene made manifest to them that aske not after me.

21 And vnto Israel he saith, All the dayes long haue I stretched forth mine hand vnto a disobedient, and gaine saying people.

CHAP. XI.

22.24. He exhorteth the Gentiles to be humble, and crieth out, that Gods iudgements are vnsearchable,

1 Demand then, Hath God cast away
people? God forbid: for I also am
Israelite, of the seede of Abraham, of the
tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people
which he knewe before. Know ye not what
the Scripture saith of Elias, howe he
contendeth with God against Israel, saying,

3 Lorde, they have killed the prophets,
and digged downe thine altars: and I am
alone, & they seeke my life?

4 But what saith the answer of God
him? I haue reserved vnto my selfe
thousande men, which haue not bowed
knee to Baal.

5 Even so then at this present time
there a remnant according to the election
of grace.

6 And if it bee of grace, it is no more
of works: or els were grace no more grace: but
if it be of works, it is no more grace: or
were worke no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained
that he sought: but the election hath
obtained it, and the rest hath bene hardened,

8 According as it is written, God
hath given them a spirit of slumber, eyes that they
should not see, and eares that they should
heare vnto this day.

9 And David saith, Let their table be
made a snare, & a net, and a stumbling blocke,
for a recompence vnto them.

10 Let their eyes bee darkened that they
see not, and bowe downe their backs alway.

11 I demand then, Haue they stumbled
that they should fall? God forbid: but through
their fall, saluation commeth vnto the Gentiles
to prouoke them to followe them.

12 Wherefore if the fall of them be the
saluation of the worlde, and the diminishing

of the Gentiles, howe much shall their abundance be?

For in that I speake to you Gentiles, in much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I praise mine office.

To try if by any meanes I might procure them of my flesh to followe them, and become some of them.

For if the casting away of the tree the rooting of the world, what shall the result be, but life from the dead?

For if the first fruits be holy, so is the lump: and if the roote be holy, so are the branches.

And though some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde Olive tree, wast grafted in for the, & made partaker of the roote, and fatnesse of the Olive tree:

Boast not thy self against the branches: and if thou boast thy selfe, thou bearest not the roote, but the roote thee.

Thou wilt say then, The branches are broken off, that I may be grafted in.

Well: through vnbeliefe they are broken off, & thou standest by faith: be not high minded, but feare.

For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed also lest he spare not thee.

Behold therefore the bountifullnesse and clemency of God: toward them which have fallen, severity: but toward thee, bountifullnesse, if thou continue in his bountifullnes: or else thou shalt also be cut off.

And they also, if they abide not still in vnbeliefe, shall be grafted in, for God is able to graffe them in againe.

For if thou wast cut out of the Olive tree, which was wilde by nature, and was grafted contrary to nature in a right Olive tree, howe much more shall they that are

TO THE ROMANES.

by nature, be grafted in their own Olive.

25 For I would not brethren, that you should be ignorant of this secret, (least you should be arrogant in your selves) that by the obstinacie is come to Israel, until the fullnesse of the Gentiles be come in.

26 And so all Israel shall be saved, as it is written. The deliuerer shall come out of Sion, and shall turne away the vngodlinesse of Jacob.

27 And this is my couenant to them. When I shall take away their sinnes.

28 And concerning the Gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God without repentance.

30 For euen as yee in time past haue not beleued God yet haue now obtained mercie through their vnbeliefe:

31 Euen so now haue they not beleued by the mercy shewed vnto you, that they also may obtaine mercie.

32 For God hath shut vp all in vnbeliefe, that he might haue mercie on all.

33 O the deepnesse of the riches, both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how vnsearchable are his iudgements, and how he waits past finding out!

34 For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord? or who was his counsellour?

35 Or who hath giuen vnto him first, that he should be recompensed?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are all things: to him be glory for ever. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1. He exhorteth 2. to that worship which is acceptable to God: 9. To lone, vnfeignedly 20. euen to our enemies.

1 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God that ye giue vp your bodies as a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, which is your reasonable seruing of God.
2 And fashion not your selues like vnto this worlde, but bee ye changed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may proue what that good, and acceptable and perfect will of God is.

3 For I say through the grace that is giuen vnto me, to euery one that is among you, that he maie presume to vnderstande, about that which is meete to vnderstande, but that he vnderstande according to sobriety, as God hath dealt to euery man the measure of faith.

4 For as we haue many members in one body, & all members haue not one office.

5 So wee being many are one body in Christ, & euery one, one anothers members.

6 Seeing then that we haue gifts that are diuers, according to the grace that is giuen vnto vs, whether we haue prophecie, let vs prophecie according to the proportion of faith:

7 Or an office, let vs waite on the office: or he that teacheth, on teaching.

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that distributeth, let him do it with simplicity: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that sheweth mercy, with cheerefulnesse.

9 Let loue be without dissimulation. Abhorre that which is euill, and cleaue vnto that which is good.

10 Bee affectioned to loue one another with brotherly loue. In giuing honour goe one before another.

11 Not slothful to do seruice: feruent in spirit: seruing the Lord.

12 Reioycing in hope, patient in tribulation, continuing in prayer:

TO THE ROMANES.

13 Distributing vnto \bar{y} necessitous
Saints: giuing your selues to hospitalitie.

14 Blesse the which persecute you:
I say, and curse not.

15 Reioyce with them that reioyce,
weepe with them that weepe.

16 Be of like affection one towards
ther: be not hie minded: but make your selues
equal to them of the lower sort: be not
in your selues.

17 Recompence to no man euil for euil:
procure things honest in the sight of al men.

18 If it be possible, as much as in you
lieth, peace with all men.

19 Dearly beloued, auenge not your selues:
but giue place vnto wrath: for it is written,
Vengeance is mine: I will repay, saith
the Lord.

20 Therefore, if thine enemy hunger,
feed him: if he thirst, giue him drinke, for in
so doing, thou shalt heape coales of fire on
his head.

21 Be not overcome of euil, but overcome
euil with goodnes.

CHAP. XIII.

*Hee willeth that we submit our selues
to magistrates: 8 To loue our neighbours: To
obey mightily, 14 and to put on Christ.*

Let euery soule be subiect vnto \bar{y} high
powers: for there is no power but
of God: the powers \bar{y} be, are ordeined of God.

1 Whofoeuer therefore resisteth the power,
resisteth the ordinance of God: and they
that resist, shall receiue to themselves
condemnation.

2 For Magistrates are not to be feared
for good workes, but for euil. Wilt thou then
without feare of \bar{y} power? doe wel: so
shalt thou haue praise of the same.

3 For hee is the minister of God for

But if thou do euill, feare: for he bea-
re not the sworde for nought: for he is the
minister of God to take vengeance on him
that doth euill.

Wherefore ye must be subiect, not be-
cause of wrath onely, but also for conscience
sake.

For, for this cause ye pay also tribute: for
they are Gods ministers, applying them-
selves for the same thing.

Give to all men therefore their duties
as they are, to whom ye owe tribute: custome, to
whom custome: feare, to whom feare, honour
to whom yee owe honour.

Owe nothing to any man, but to loue
one another: for he that loueth another, hath
fulfilled the Law.

For this, Thou shalt not commit adul-
terie, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not
steale, Thou shalt not beare false witness,
Thou shalt not couet, and if there be any o-
ther commandement, it is briefly comprehen-
ded in this saying, *even in this*, Thou shalt
loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

Loue doeth not euill to his neighbour:
therefore is loue the fulfilling of the Law.

And that, considering the season that
is now time that wee should arise from
sleep: for now is our saluation neerer, then
when we beleened it.

The night is past, and the day is at
hand: let vs therefore cast away the works of
darknesse, & let vs put on γ armour of light

So that wee walke honestly, as in the
day: not in gluttonie, and drunkennesse, nei-
ther in chambering and vvantonnesse, nor in
life and enuying:

But put ye on γ Lord Iesus Christ, &
make no thought for the flesh, to fulfil γ lusts

God for

He will not that we so deale
weake in faith: as that through our
they be offended.

But he is weake in the faith, let
you, but not for controuersing
him.

One believeth that he may eat of
strong and another which is weake, the
same.

Let not him that eateth, despise
that eateth not: and let not him which
eateth not, condemne him that eateth: for
God hath receiued him.

Who art thou that condemnest another
mans seruant? he standeth or falleth to
his owne master: yea, he shall be established.
God is able to make him stand.

This man esteemeth one day above
another day, and another man counteth
all alike: let euery man be fully perswaded
in his minde.

He that obserueth the day, obserueth
it to the Lord: & he that obserueth not
it, obserueth it not to the Lord. He
that eateth to the Lord: for he giueth
God thanks: and he that eateth not, eateth
not to the Lord and giueth God thanks
not. For none of vs liueth to himselfe, all
this doth any die to himselfe.

For whether we liue we liue vnto
the Lord: or whether we die, we die vnto
the Lord: whether we liue therefore or die,
we are the Lords.

For Christ therefore died and rose
again, and reuiued: that hee might be Lord
both of the dead and the quicke.

But why dost thou condemne thy
brother? or why dost thou despise thy
brother? for we shall all appeare before
the iudgement seate of christ.

10 I will write this, saith the Lord,
every knee shall bow to me, & al tongues
shall confesse vnto God.

11 So then every one of vs shall giue ac-
count of himselfe to God.

12 Let vs not therefore iudge one ano-
ther any more: but vse your iudgement rather
in this that no man put an occasion to fall,
a stumbling blocke before his brother.

13 I knowe, and am perswaded, through
the Lord Iesus, that there is nothing vn-
cleane in himselfe: but vnto him that iudgeth
me to be vn- cleane to him it is vn- cleane.

14 But if thy brother bee grieved for the
meate, now walkest thou not charitably: do-
not nor him with thy meate, for whom
Christ died.

15 Cause not your commoditie to be evil
spoken of.

16 For the kingdome of God is not
meate nor drinke, but righteousness, and
peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost.

17 For whosoener in these things ser-
ueth Christ, is acceptable vnto God, and is
approved of men.

18 Let vs then follow those things which
concerne peace, and wherewith one may
reioyce another.

19 Destroy not the worke of God for
meates sake: all things in deed are pure: but
it is euill for yman which eateth with offence

20 It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to
drinke wine, nor any thing whereby thy
brother stumbleth, or is offended, or made weak

21 Hast thou faith? haue it with thy self
before God: blessed is hee that condemneth
not himselfe in that which he alloweth.

22 For he that doubteth is condemned,
if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: and
that which is not of faith, is sinne.

1 The stronger must imploy their strength to strengthen the weaker, 2 by Christes example who receiued & not only the Iewes, 10 but also the Gentiles. 15 The cause why he wrote this Epistle.

WEe which are strong ought to beate the infirmities of the weake, & not to please our selues.

2 Therefore let every man please his neighbour in that that is good to edification.

3 For Christ also would not please himselfe, but as it is written, The rebukes of them which rebuke thee, fell on me.

4 For whatsoeuer things are writtē aforetime, are written for our learning, that we through patience, and comfort of the Scriptures might haue hope.

5 Now the God of patience & consolation gaue you that ye be like minded one towards another according to Christ Iesus,

6 That ye with one minde, & with one mouth may praise God, euen the Father of our Lorde Iesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receiue ye one another, as Christ also receiued vs to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Iesus Christ was a minister of γ circumcisiō. for the truth of God to confirme the promises made vnto the fathers.

9 And let the Gentiles praise God for his mercie: as it is written, For this cause I will confesse thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name.

10 And againe he saith. Reioyce ye Gentiles with his people.

11 And againe, Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, & laud him, al ye people together.

12 And againe Esaias saith, There shall be a root of Iesse, and hee that shall rise

signe of
Gentiles

13 Now
loy, and pe
abound in
holy Gho

14 And
you my br
selfe, and
able to ad

15 Neue
boldly af
that putte
the grace

16 That
christ tow
pel of Go
might be
holy Gho

17 I ha
in Christ
to God.

18 For
which Ch
make the
19 W

by the po
ffo Hieru
I haue ca
10 Ye

the Gosp
least I sh
foundatio

21 Br
was not
they tha

22 Th
come vn
23 Bu
these qu

rele

signe over the Gentiles, in him shall the
Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all
joy, and peace in beleeuing, that yee may
abound in hope through the power of the
holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of
you, my brethren, that ye also are full of good-
ness, and filled with all knowledge, and are
able to admonish one another.

15 Neuerthelesse, brethre, I haue somewhat
boldly after a sort written vnto you, as one
that putteth you in remembrance, through
the grace that is giuen me of God,

16 That I should bee the minister of Iesus
christ toward the Gentiles ministering the Gos-
pel of God, that the offering vpon of the Gentiles
might be acceptable, being sanctified by the
holy Ghost.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may reioyce
in Christ Iesus in those things which pertaine
to God.

18 For I dare not speake of any thinge
which Christ hath not wrought by me, to
make the Gentiles obediēt in word & dede.

19 With the power of signes & wonders
by the power of the Spirit of God: so that
from Hierusalem, & round about vnto Illyricū,
I haue caused to abound the Gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so I enforced my selfe to preach
the Gospel, not where Christ was named,
least I should haue built on another mans
foundation.

21 But as it is written. To whome hee
was not spoken of, they shall see him, and
they that heard not, shall vnderstand him.

22 Therefore also I haue beene oft let to
come vnto you:

23 But now seeing I haue no more place in
these quarters, and also haue bene desirous
many

many yeeres gone to come vnto you.
24 When I shall take my iourney
Spaine, I will come to you. for I must see
you in my iourney, and to bee brought
my way thitherward by you, after I haue
bene somewhat filled with your company.
25 But now go I to Hierusalem, to
see vnto the Saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Mac-
cedonia & Achaia, to make a certaine dis-
tribution vnto y^e poore Saints which are at Hierusalem.

27 For it hath pleased them, & their
ministers are they: for if y^e Gentiles be made par-
takers of their spiritual things, their duty is
also to minister vnto them in carnal things.

28 When I haue therefore performed this
and haue sealed them this fruit, I will passe
by you into Spaine.

29 And I know when I come, that I shall
come to you with abundance of the blessing
of the Gospel of Christ.

30 Also brethren, I beseech you for
the Lords Iesus Christs sake, & for the love of
the Spirit, that ye would strue with me by
prayers to God for me.

31 That I may bee deliuered from them
which are disobedient in Iudea, and that my
service which I haue to doe at Hierusalem
may be accepted of the Saints.

32 That I may come vnto you with joy
by the wil of God, and may with you be re-
freshed.

33 Thus the God of peace be with you
all, Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

1. He commendeth Phoebe. 3. Hee sendeth greet-
ing to many, 17. and warneth to beware
of them which are the causes of diuision.

I Commende vnto you Phoebe your sister,
which is a seruant of the Church of Cenchrea.

That ye
beseech Sa-
loures busi-
ness hath
to me also.

Greete
helpers in C-

(Which
their own ne-
cessities thanks
Gentiles)

likewi-
their house.
which is the

Greete
labour on vs

Salute A-
and fellow p-
among the Ap-
fore me.

Greete

Salute V-
Christ, and S-

Salute

the them wh-

Salute

them which

which are in

Salute

women Labo-

Perlis, which

the Lord.

Salute

his mother and

Greet

trobas Men-

with ther-

Salute

after, a n-

That ye receiue her in the Lorde, as if
 I were with Saints & y^e ye assise her in what
 businesse she needeth of your aides
 for she hath given hospitalitie vnto many, &
 to me also.

Greete Priscilla, & Aquila my fellowe
 helpers in Christ Iesus,

(Which haue for my life laide downe
 their own necke. Vnto whome not I onely
 giue thanks but also all the Churches of the
 Gentiles)

Likewise greete the Church that is in
 their house. Salute my beloued Epenetus,
 which is the first fruite of Achaia in Christ

Greete Marie which bestowed much
 labour on vs.

Salute Andronicus & Iunia my cousins
 and fellow prisoners, which are notable a-
 mong the Apostles, and were in Christ be-
 fore me.

Greete Amplias my beloued in y^e Lord

Salute Vrbani our fellowe helper in
 Christ, and Stachys, my beloued.

Salute Apelles approued in Christ, Sa-
 lute them which are of Aristobulus friends.

Salute Herodian my kinseman. Greete
 them which are of the friends of Narcissus
 which are in the Lord.

Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa which
 women labour in y^e Lord. Salute the beloued
 Persis, which woman hath laboured much in
 the Lord.

Salute Rufus chosen in the Lorde, and
 his mother and mine.

Greete Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas,
 Patrobas Mercurius, and the brethren which
 are with them.

Salute Philologus, & Iulias, Nereus, &
 his sister, and Olympas, and all the Saints
 which

TO THE ROMANES.

which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse.
The Churches of Christ salute you.

17 ¶ Now I beseech you, brethren, mark
them diligently which cause diuision and of-
fences, contrary to the doctrine which ye
haue learned, and auoid them.

18 For they *ſ* are ſuch, ſerue not *ſ* Lord
Ieſus Chriſt, but their owne bellics, and with
faire ſpeech and flattering deceiue the hearts
of the ſimple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad a-
mong al: I am glad therefore of you: but yet
I woulde haue you wiſe vnto that which is
good, and ſimple concerning euil.

20 The God of peace ſhal tread Satan vnder
your feete ſhortly. The grace of our Lord
Ieſus Chriſt be with you.

21 Timotheus my helper, & Lucius, and
Iſon, & Soſipater my kinſemen, ſalute you.

22 I Tertius, which wrote out this Epistle
ſalute you in the Lord,

23 Gaius mine hoſte, and of the whole
Church ſaluteth you. Eraſtus the ſteward of
the citie ſaluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, be
with you all. Amen.

25 To him now that is of power to eſta-
bliſh you according to my Goſpel and prea-
ching of Ieſus Chriſte, by the reuelation of
the myſterie which was kept ſecret ſince the
world began:

26 (But now is opened and publiſhed a-
mong al nations by *ſ* Scriptures of the Pro-
phets, at the commandement of the euertla-
ſting God for the obedience of faith)

27 To God, *I ſay*, onely wiſe, bee praiſe
through Ieſus Chriſt for euer. Amen.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinth.

and
whic

3 Affe
an ex
vinthi
them

P S
o

ſat Cor
in Chriſt
call on t
every pl

3 Gr
our Fac

4 I th
halfe of
you in I

5 Th
him, in a

6 As
bene con

7 So c
waiting
Chriſt.

8 Wh
nde, tha
of our L

9 God
into the
ut Lord.

10 No
of

CHAP. I.

and sent by Phebe, servant of the Church,
which is at Cenchrea.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF Paul to the Corinthians

CHAP. I.

1 After the salutation, 10 which in effect is
an exhortation, 12 hee reprehendeth the Co-
rinthians sects and diuisions, 17 and calleth
them from pride to humilitie.

PAUL called to be an Apostle of I E-
SVS CHRIST, through the wil
of God, and our brother Sosthenes,

2 Vnto the Church of God which
is at Corinthus, to them, that are sanctified
in Christ Iesus, Saints by calling with al that
call on the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, in
every place both their Lord and ours:

3 Grace be with you, and peace frō God
our Father, and from the Lorde Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God alwayes on your be-
halfe for the grace of God, which is given
you in Iesus Christ,

5 That in all things ye are made rich in
him, in al kind of speech & in al knowledges:

6 As the testimonie of Iesus Christ hath
bene confirmed in you:

7 So that ye are not destitute of any gift:
waiting for the appearing of our Lord Iesus
Christ.

8 Who shall also confirme you vnto the
ende, that ye may bee blamelesse in the day
of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 God is faithfull, by whom ye are called
into the felowship of his Sonne Iesus Christ
our Lord.

10 Nowe I beseech you, brethren, by the
name of our Lord: Iesus Christ, that yee all
speake

1 CORINTHIANS

make anything, and that there be no dissentings among you: but be ye knit together in one minde, and in one iudgement.

11 For it hath bene declared unto my brethren of you, by them that are of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say; that euery one of you saith, I am Pauls, and I am Apollos, & I am Cephas, and I am Christs.

13 Is Christ diuided? was Paul crucified for you? either were ye baptized into the Name of Paul?

14 I thanke God, that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius.

15 Least any should say, that I had baptized into mine owne name.

16 I baptized also the household of Stephanas: furthermore know I not, whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sent mee not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel, not with wisdom of words, least the crosse of Christ should bee made of none effect.

18 For that preaching of the crosse is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but unto us which are saved, it is the power of God.

19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and wil cast away the vnderstanding of the prudent.

20 Where is the wise? where is the Scrib? where is the disputer of this world? hath God made the wisdom of this world foolishnesse.

21 For seeing the world by wisdom knew not God in the wisdom of God, pleased God by the foolishnes of preaching to save them that beleeue:

22 Seeing also that the Iewes require signe, and the Grecians seeke after wisdom,

23 But we preach Christ crucified:

CHAP. I.

...men a stumbling block, and to the
Grecian foolishness:

14 But vnto them which are called, both
of the Jewes and Grecians we preach Christ,
the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

15 For the foolishnesse of God is wiser
then men, & the weaknes of God is stronger
then men.

16 For brethren you see your calling how
that not many wise men after the flesh, nor
many mighty, nor many noble are called.

17 But God hath chosen \bar{y} foolish things
of the world to confound the wise, and God
hath chosen the weake things of the world to
confound the mightie things.

18 And vile things of the world, and
things which are despised, hath God chose,
& things which are not, to bring to nought
things that are.

19 That no flesh should reioyce in his
presence.

20 But ye are of him in Christ Iesus, where
God is made vnto vs wisdom and right-
eousnesse, & sanctification, and redemption.

21 That according as it is written, He
that reioyceth, let him reioyce in the Lord.

CHAP. II.

He setteth downe a plaforme of his prea-
ching. 4 which was base in respect of mans
wisdom. 7. 1 3 but noble in respect of the spi-
ritual power and efficacy. 1 4 & so conclu-
deth, that flesh and blood cannot rightly
iudge thereof.

And I, brethren, where I came to you, came
not with excellencie of words, or of
wisdom, shewing to you \bar{y} testimonie of God.

2 For I esteemed not to know any thing
among you, save Iesus Christ, & him crucified.

3 And I was among you in weakenesse,
in feare, and in much trembling.

1 CORINTHIANS

Neither stood my word & my
in the enticing speech of mans
in plaine evidence of the Spirit &

5 That your faith should not
wisdom of men, but in the power of

6 And we speake wisdom among
that are perfect: not γ wisdom of this
neither of the princes of this world,
come to nought.

7 But we speake the wisdom of God
mysterie, *even* the hid γ wisdom which
had determined before the world, to
glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this
hath knowen: for had they knowen it,
would not have crucified the Lord of

9 But as it is written, The things
eye hath not seene, neither eare, hath
neither came into mans heart, *are* which
hath prepared for them that loue him.

10 But God hath reueiled *them* vnto
by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth
things, yea, the deep things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things
a mā, saue the spirit of a mā, which is in
euen so the things of God knoweth as
but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we haue receiued not the Spirit
of the world, but γ Spirit, which is of
that we might know the things that
pen to vs of God.

13 Which things also we speake not
words which mans wisdom taughteth
which the holy Ghost teacheth, comparing
spiritual things with spiritual things.

14 But the naturall man perceiueth
 γ things of the Spirit of God: for they are
foolishnesse vnto him: neither can he
them because they are spiritually discerned.

15 But he that is spirituall, discerneth

himselfe is iudged of no man:
who hath knowen the minde of
that he might instruct him? But we
of Christ.

CHAP. III.

gilded a reason why hee preached
unto them. 4. He sheyeth
they ought to esteeme of ministers.
I could not speake vnto you, bre-
of Galatia, as vnto spiritual men, but as vnto
which are as vnto babes in Christ.
I gave you milke to drinke, and not
for yee were not yet able to beare it.
f this yet now are ye able.

ven ye are yet carnal: for where as there
ord of enuying and strife, and diuisi-
ings are ye not carnall, and walke as men?

hamen when one saith, I am Pauls, and
e which, I am Apollos, are ye not carnal?
him. Who is Paul then? and who is Apollos

re ministers by whom ye beleued, & as
arches, and gave to euery man?

od. I have planted, Apollos watered, but
he thing is the increase.

h is in us: then neither is he that planteth any
eth as he that watereth, but God that
the increase.

e the Spirit and he that planteth, and hee that wa-
h is of God: we are one, and euery man shal receiue his
that is according to his labour.

For we together are Gods labourers: ye
akenot Gods husbandry, & Gods building.

eacheth. According to the grace of God given
compared as a skilful master builder, I have laid
ings. Foundation, and another buildeth thereo
ceineth: euery man take heed how he buildeth
for this.

an he knowe. For other foundation can no man lay
discometh: that which is laide, which is Iesuo
cement.

12 And if any man build on
silver, gold, siluer, precious stones,
or stubble,

13 Every mans worke shall be
manifest: for the day shal declare it,
it shal be reueiled by the fire: & the
try every mans worke of what sort

14 If any mans worke that he hath
vpon, abide, he shal receiue vvaies.

15 If any mans vvorke burne, he
but he shal be saued him selfe: nauyng
yet as it were by the fire.

16 Know ye not that ye are the
of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth
in you?

17 If any man destroy the Temple of
him, shall God destroy, for the Temple
God is holy, vvhich ye are.

18 Let no man de. ceive himselfe: If
man among you seeme to be vyse in
world, let him be a foole, y he may be

19 For the wysedome of this world
foolishnesse with God: for it is written,
catcheth the vyse in their owne craftings.

20 And againe, The Lorde knoweth
the thoughts of the vyse be vaine.

21 Therefore let no man reioyce in
for all things are yours.

22 Whether it bee Paul, or Apollos,
Cephas, or y world, or life, or death:
ther they be things present, or things
come, euen al are yours.

23 And ye Christs, and Christ God.
C H A P. IIII.

3 Bringing in the definition of a true
7 hee sheweth that humilitie ought
to be an honour: sheweth a shame

I Euen a man to thinke of vs, as of the
ministers of Christ, and disposers
of the secrets of God.

...therein, it is required of me
that every man be founde faith-

As touching mee, I passe very litle to
of you, or of mans iudgement: no,
not mine owne selfe.

I knowe nothing by my selfe, yet
thereby iustified: but hee that iud-
ge me, is the Lord.

Therefore iudge nothing before y^e time
the Lord come, who wil lighten things
hid in darkenesse, and make the coun-
tels of the hearts manifest: and then shall e-
very man have prayse of God.

Nowe these things brethren, I have fi-
rmly applied vnto mine owne selfe and
all of you, for your sakes, that ye might learne
that no man presume aboue that which
is written, that one swel not against another
in any mans cause.

For who separateth thee? & what hast
thou that thou hast not receiued? if thou hast
receiued it, why reioycest thou, as though thou
had not receiued it?

Now ye are full, now ye are made rich:
ye reigne as Kings without vs, and woulde
God ye did reigne, that we also might
reigne with you.

For I thinke that God hath set foorth
the last Apostles, as men appointed to
death: for we are made a gazing stocke vnto
the world, and to the Angels, and to men.

We are fooles for Christes sake, & ye
are wise in Christ, we are weake, and ye are
strong, ye are honorable, & we are despised.

Vnto this houre wee both hunger, &
thirst, and are naked, & are buffeted, & haue
no certaine dwelling place,

And labour, working with our owne
hands we are sciled, & yet we blesse: wee

CORINTHIANS

not persecuted, and suffer it.

13 Wee are euil spoken of, and we are made as the filth of the world, by our knowring of all things vnto this time.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloued children I admonish you.

15 For though ye haue ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet haue ye not many fathers: for in Christ Iesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel:

16 Wherefore, I pray you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sente vnto you Timotheus, which is my beloued sonne, and faithful in the Lorde, which shal put your remembrance of my waies in Christ, and teach euery where in euery Church.

18 Some are puffed vp, as though I would not come to you.

19 But I wil come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and wil know, not the words of them which are puffed vp, but the power.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power.

21 What wil ye? shal I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, & in the Spirit of meeknes?

CHAP. V

1. That they haue vniked at him, vho admitted Incest vwith his mother in law: he sheweth should rather cause them to be ashamed, then to reioyce. 10. Such kind of vrickednes is to bee punished with excommunication. 12. lest other be infected vwith the same.

IT is heard certainly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not once named among the Gentiles: that one should haue his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed vp, and haue not sorrowed, that he which hath done thus, might be put from among you.

For I verily as absent in body, but present in spirit, haue determined already as though I were present, that he that hath thus done this thing,

When ye are gathered together, & my name in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, curse each one, I say, by the power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

Be deliuered vnto Satan, for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Iesus.

Your reioycing is not good. Know ye that a little leauen leaueneth the whole lump?

Purge out therefore the olde leauen, & ye may be a newe lump, as ye are unleavened: for Christ our Pasche is sacrificed for us.

Therefore let vs keepe the feast, not with old leauen, neither in the leauen of malitiousnesse and wickednesse: but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, that ye should not company together with fornicators,

And not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the couetous, or with extortioners, or with idolaters: for then ye must go out of the world.

But now I haue written vnto you, that ye company not together: if any that is called a brother be a fornicatour, or couetous, or an idolater, or a rayler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such one eate not.

For what haue I to do, to iudge them which are without? do ye not iudge them that are within?

But God iudgeth them that are within. Put away therefore from among you that wicked man.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He that is against their contentions in the matters, 6 vvhether with they were under iudges that were infidel, in the reproch of the Gospel. 9 and then paye to threateneth fornicators.*

Dare any of you, hauing business against another, be iudged vnder the vvaile, and not vnder the Saints?

2 Doe yee not knowe, that the Saints shall iudge the vworld? If the vworld then shall be iudged by you, are ye vvvould ye iudge the smallest matters?

3 Knowv yee not that vve shall iudge the Angels? howe much more, thinges that pertaine to this life?

4 If then yee haue iudgements of thinges pertaining to this life, set vp them vvhich are least esteemed in the Church.

5 I speake it to your shame, Is it so y then is not a vvise man among you? no not one, that can iudge betwene his brethren?

6 Doe a brother goeth to lawe vwith a brother, and that vnder the infidels.

7 Nerve therefore there is altogether in sinne in you, in that yee goe to lawe one vwith another, vwhy rather suffer ye not wrong? vwhy rather sustaine ye not harme?

8 Nay, ye your selues do vvrong, and do harme, and that to your brethren.

9 Knowv yee not that the vnrighteous shall not inherite the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor wantons, nor buggers,

10 Nor thieues, nor couetous, nor drunkards, nor railers, nor extortioners, shall inherite the kingdom of God. —

11 And such were some of you, but ye are washed, but yee are sanctified, but ye are iustificed in the name of the Lord Iesu,

all things are done, but I knowe of any
11 Meates
shelly for
they both is
for fornicatio
for the body.
14 And Ge
and shall raise
15 Know y
members of C
best of Christ
of an harlot? C
16 Doe y n
dash himse
for two, saith
17 But he y
spirit.
18 Flee for
doth is vvisho
vvith fornicat
body.
19 Knowv ye
of the holy
ye haue of God
20 For yce
for glorie G
spirit; for they
increasing he
medy against
broken, 18. 20
contaminat vv
Now conce
ye wrote
can not to cou
11 month the

the will of our God.

12 All things are lawfull vnto mee, but all things are not profitable, I may do all things, but I will not bee brought vnder the power of any thing.

13 Meates are ~~delivered~~ *delivered* for the belly, and the belly for the meates: but God shall destroy both it, & them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for \bar{y} Lord, and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath also raised vp \bar{y} Lord, and shall raise vs vp by his power.

15 Know ye not, that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take \bar{y} member of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 Doye not know, that he which con-
joineth himselfe with an harlot, is one body? for two, saith he, shalbe one flesh.

17 But he \bar{y} is ioyned vnto the Lord, is one spirit.

18 Flee fornication: every sin that a man doth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.

19 Know ye not, that your body is \bar{y} temple of the holy Ghost, which is in you, who ye haue of God? & you are not your owne.

20 For ye are bought for a price: therefore glorifie God in your body, and in your spirit; for they are Gods,

CHAP. VII.

Exhortation here of marriage, & which is a remedy against fornication, 10 & may not be broken, 18. 20 he willeth every man to be contented wth his lot.

Now concerning the things whereof I wrote vnto me it were good for you not to touch a woman.

1 Nevertheless to auoyd fornication, let

IN THE NAME OF THE LORD
the wife, and let every one
love his owne husband.

2. Let the husband giue vnto the wife
as himselfe, and likewise also the wife

3. The wife hath not the power of her
owne body, but the husband; and likewise
the husband hath not the power of his
owne body, but the wife.

4. Delaude not one another, except with
consent for a time, that yet may put
your selues to fasting and prayer, and agree
ment, that Satan tempt you not in
your incontinencie.

5. But I speake this by permission, not by
commandement.

6. For I would that all men were even as
I my selfe, but every man hath his pro-
per gift of God, one after this maner, and a-
nother after that.

7. Therefore I say vnto the vnmarried,
and vnto the widowers, it is good for them
that they abide euen as I do.

8. But if they cannot absteine, let them
marry: for it is better to marry then to burne.

9. And vnto the married I command,
as the Lord, let not the wife depart from
her husband.

10. But and if she depart, let her remaine
vnmarried, or be reconciled vnto her husband,
but let not the husband put away his wife.

11. But as the testament I speake, and as
the Lord, if a man haue a wife, let him
love her as himselfe, as he content to dwell
with her, and not forsake her.

12. And the woman which hath an husband
that beleueeth not, if he be content
to dwell with her, let her not forsake him.

13. For the vnbeleueing husband is
not the wife, & the vnbeleueing wife

the wife, and let every one
love his owne husband.
25 But if
departe from
in such th
26 For w
ther thou sh
knowest tho
thy wife
17 But as
as the
let him wal
18 Is any
let him not
called vncir
19 Circu
mancion, is
commander
20 Let e
man wher
21 Art th
not for it: b
rather.
22 For h
servant, is
that is c
23 Ye
servants of
24 Breth
and called
25 Now
commande
wife, as o
the Lord to
26 I sup
that no
in a man
27 Art
the wife

14 For as the husband, els were your chil-
dren vncircumcised: but now are they holy.

15 But if the vncircumcising depart, let him
as your brother or a sister is not in subiecti-
on in such things: but God hath called vs in

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whe-
ther thou shalt saue thine husband? Or what
knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt
saue thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to every
man, as the Lord hath called every one, so
let him walk: & so ordaine I in all churches

18 Is any man called being circumcised?
let him not gather his *uncircumcision*: is any
called vncircumcised: let him not be circumcised

19 Circumcision is nothing, and vncir-
cumcision, is nothing, but the keeping of the
commandements of God.

20 Let every man abide in the same vo-
cation wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called *being a servant*? care
not for it: but if yet thou mayest be free, use
it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, *being
a servant*, is the Lords free man: likewise he
that is called *being free*, is Christs seruant.

23 Ye are bought with a price: be not ye
seruants of men.

24 Brethren, let every man, wherein he
is called, therein abide with God.

25 Nowe concerning virgins, I have no
commandment of the Lord: but I giue mine
iudgement, as one that hath obtained mercy of
the Lord to be faithful.

26 I suppose then this to be good for the
present necessity: I meane that it is good
for you so to be.

27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not
to be loosed: art thou loosed frō a wife? seeke
not

his wife.

28 But if thou takest a wife, thou shalt sinne: and if a virgin marry, she sinne: neuerthelesse I thinke that haue troublen both: but I spare you.

29 And this I say, brethren, because the time is short, hereafter, y both they that haue wives be as though they had none.

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: & they that buy, as though they possessed not.

31 And they that vse this worlde, as though they used it not: for the fashion of this worlde goeth away.

32 And I would haue you without care. The ynnmarried careth for the things of the Lord, how he may please the Lord.

33 But he that is married, careth for the things of this world, howe he may please his wife.

34 There is difference also between a virgin and a wife: the ynnmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may bee holy both in body and spirit: but he that is married, careth for the things of the world, how he may please her husband.

35 And this I speake for your own comfort, not to tangle you in a snare, but to followe that which is honest, and that ye may cleaue fast vnto the Lord without separation.

36 But if any man thinke that it is good for his virgin, if she passe the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he wil, he sinneth not: let them be married.

37 Neuertheles, he that standeth firme in his heart, that he hath no need, but hath power over his own wil, & hath so decreed in his heart that hee will keepe his virgin, he doth well.

to knowe that giueth her to mar-
ry well, but he that giueth her not to
marry, doth better.

The wife is bound by the Lawe, as
long as her husband liueth: but if her hus-
band bee dead, shee is at liberty to marry
whome she will, only in the Lord. —

But shee is more blessed, if she so a-
gree to my iudgement: and I thinke that I
haue also the Spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

*From this place vnto the ends of the tenth
chapter, hee telleth them not to be at the
banquets prophane breakes.*

And as touching things sacrificed vnto
idoles, wee knowe that we all haue
knowledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue
edifieth.

Now, if any man thinke that he know-
eth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as
he ought to know.

But if any man loue God, the same is
knowne of him,

Concerning therefore the eating of
things sacrificed vnto idoles, we know that
the idol is nothing in the world, and that
there is none other God but one.

For though there bee that are called
gods, whether in heaven or in earth (as
there be many gods, and many lords)

yet vnto vs there is but one God, which
is the Father, of whom are all things, & we
by him: and one Lord Iesus Christ, by whom
all things, and we by him.

But euerie man hath not that know-
ledge: for many hauing conscience of the i-
dill this houre, eate as a thing sacri-
ficed to the idole, and so their conscience
is defiled.

But meate maketh not vs acceptable

to God, for neither if we eate, haue we more: neither if we eat not, haue we less.
9 But take heed least by any means the power of yours be an occasion of falling to them that are weake.

10 For if any man see thee which hath knowledge, sit at table in the idoles: shall not the conscience of him which is weake bee boldened to eate those things which are sacrificed to idoles?

11 And through thy knowledge shall the weake brother perish, for whom Christ died.

12 Nowe when yee sinne so against the brethren, and wound their weake consciences, ye sinne against Christ.

13 Wherefore if meat offend my brother, I will eate no flesh while the worlde standeth, that I may not offend my brother.

CHAP. IX.

1. Hee declareth, that from the libertie which the Lord gaue him, he willingly abstaineth, least in things indifferent hee should offend any.

AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? am I not seene Iesus Christ, our Lord? am I not my worke in the Lord?

2 If I be not an Apostle vnto other, yet doubtlesse I am vnto you: for ye are the fruit of mine Apostleship in the Lorde.

3 My defence to them that examine me is this,

4 Haue we not power to eate & to drinke?

5 Or haue wee not power to leade a wife, being a sister, as wel as the rest of the Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lorde? phas?

6 Or I onely and Barnabas, haue not power not to worke?

7 Who goeth a warrefare any time, who costeth who planteth a vineyard,

of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth
 & eateth not, of the milk of γ flock?
 I these things according to man?
 or the Law the same also?

It is written in the Law of Moses,
 Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox,
 that treadeth out the corne: doth God take
 care for oxen.

10 Either sayth he not altogether for our
 sakes? For our sakes no doubt it is written,
 that he which eareth, should eare in hope, &
 that he that thresheth in hope, should be par-
 taker of his hope.

11 If wee haue sowed vnto you spirituall
 things, is it a great thing if we reape your
 carnall things?

12 If others with you be partakers of *this*
 power, are not we rather? neuertheless, wee
 haue not vsed this power: but suffer all things
 that we should not hinder the Gospel of Christ.

13 Doe ye not know, that they which
 minister about the holy things, eate of the
 things of the Temple? and they which waite
 on the altar, are partakers with the altar?

14 So also hath the Lord ordeined, γ they
 which preach γ gospel, should liue of γ gospel.

15 But I haue vsed none of these things:
 as I haue written I these things, γ it should be
 done vnto me: for it were better for me to
 neuer see, then that any should make my reioysing
 mine.

16 For though I preach the Gospel, I
 haue nothing to reioyce of: for necessitie is
 layde vpon me, & wo is vnto me if I preach
 not the Gospel.

17 For if I doe it willingly, I haue a re-
 ward, but if I do it against my wil, *notwith-*
standing γ dispensatio is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? verely that
 when I preach the Gospel, I make γ Gospel
 of

try the Gospel,

19 For though I be free from
yet haue I made my selfe seruant
men, that I might win the more.

20 And to ^y Iewes I become as a Iewe
I may winne the Iewes : to them that
vnder the Law, as though I were vnder
Law, that I may win the that are vnder
Law:

21 To them that are without Law, as
though I were without Law (when I am
without Law as pertaining to God, being
in the Law through Christ) that I may win
them that are without Law:

22 To the weak I become as weak, that
I may win ^y weak: I am made all things
all men, ^y I might by all means save some.

23 And this I do for the Gospel sake,
that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know ye not, that they which run
in a race, run all, yet one receiveth ^y price:
run that ye may obtaine.

25 And every man that prooueth his
abstaineth from all things, and they do
it to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but we
for an vncorruptible.

26 I therefore so run, not as vncertainly:
so fight I not as one that beareth the aire.

27 But I beat downe my body, & bring
it into subiection, lest by any means after
that I have preached to other, I my selfe
should be reprov'd.

CHAP. X.

1 If God spared not the Iewes, neither will he
spare those which are of like condition, 3.
touching the outward signes of his grace,

Moreouer, let there I would note that ye
should be ignorant that al our fathers
were vnder that cloud, & al passed thorow
that sea,

2 And

And did all eat the same spirituall
meat, and did all drinke the same spirituall
drinke (for they drake of the spirituall Roocke
which followed them : and the Roocke was
Christ.)

But with many of them God was not
pleased : for they were ouerthrowen in the
wildernesse.

Now these things are our ensamples to
the intent that wee shoulde not lust after euill
things as they also lusted.

Neither be ye idolaters, as were some
of them, as it is written, The people sate
down to eat and drinke and rose vp to play,

Neither let vs commit fornication as
some of them committed fornication, & fell
about day three and twenty thousand.

Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of
them also tempted him, and were destroyed
of serpents.

Neither murmure ye, as some of them
did murmure, and were destroyed of the
destroyer,

Now all these things came vnto the
for ensamples, & were written to admonish
vs, vpon whom the ends of the world are come.

Wherefore, let him that thinketh he
standeth, take heed lest he fall.

There hath no temptation taken you
but such as apperteineth to man: and God is
faithful, which will not suffer you to be tem-
pted aboue that you be able, but will euē giue
the issue with the temptation, that ye may be
able to beare it.

Wherefore, my beloved, flee from i-
dolatry.

I speake as vnto them which haue vn-
derstanding: Iudge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we
it not \bar{y} communion of the blood
The bread which wee breake, is
communion of the body of Christ?

17 For we that are many, are one
and one body, because we are all partakers
one bread.

18 Behold Israel *which is* after the
are not they which eat of the sacrifices
takers of the altar.

19 What say I then? that the idol is
thing? or that that is sacrificed to idoles,
any thing?

20 Nay, but that these things which
Geniules sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, &
not vnto God: and I would not that ye
should haue fellowship with the devils.

21 Ye cannot drinke the cup of the Lord
& the cup of the devils. Ye cannot be part
kers of \bar{y} Lords table, & of \bar{y} table of devils

22 Doe we prouoke the Lorde to anger
are we stronger then he?

23 All things are lawfull for me, but
things are not expedient: all things are law
ful for me, but all things edifie not.

24 Let no man seeke his owne, but eue
man anothers wealth.

25 Whatsoever is solde in the shambles
eat ye, & aske no questio for conscience

26 For the earth is the Lords, and al that
therein is.

27 If any of them which beleene
cal you to a feast, and if ye wil go, whatso
uer is set before you, eate, asking no ques
on for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say vnto you, this is
sacrificed vnto idoles, eate it not, because
him that shewed it, & for the conscience
the earth is the Lords, & al that therein is

29 There

CHAP. XI.

of the conscience, I say, nor thing, but
for why should my liberty be
of another mans conscience?

For if it through Gods benefit be par-
why am I euil spoken of, for that
I give thanks?

Whether therefore ye eate, or drinke
in soeuer ye do, do all to the glory of

Give none offence, neither to the Iewes,
nor to the Grecians, nor to the Church of

Even as I please al men in al things, not
mine ouvne profit, but the profit of
that they might be saved.

CHAP. XI.

He blameth the Corinthians for that in their
assemblies 4 when doe pray, hauing their
heads covered, 6 & women bare headed, &
because their meetings tided to euil: as who
mingled prophane banquetts with the holy
supper of the Lord, 23 which he requireth to
celebrated according to Christes institu-

O ye followers of me, euen as I am of
Christ.

Now brethren, I commend you, that ye
remember all my things, and keepe the or-
dances, as I deliuered them to you.

But I will that ye know that Christ is
head of every man: and the man is the
Churchs head: and God Christs head.

Every man praying or prophesying ha-
ving any thing on his head, dishonoureth his

as every womā & prayeth or prophesieth
uncovered, dishonoureth her head: for it is
as every thing, as though she were sha-

Therefore if the woman be not covered

I CORINTHIANS

let her also be shorne: & if it be shaven, let her be covered.

7 For a man ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as hee is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman, as the church is the woman of the man.

9 For the man was not created for himselfe: but the woman for the man.

10 Therefore ought the woman to have power on her head, because of the Angel.

11 Neuerthelesse, neither is the man the head of the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man, so the church is of the man: but all things are of God.

13 Iudge in your selues, is it comely for a woman pray vnto God vncouered?

14 Doeth not nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long haire, it is a shame vnto him?

15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a praise vnto her: for her haire is given her as a couering.

16 But if a man lust to bee contemned, we haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 ¶ Now in this that I declare, I pray you not that ye come together, not with strife, but with hurt.

18 For first of all when yee come together in the Church, I heare that there are dissentions among you: and I beleuee it to be true in some part.

19 For there must bee heresies among you, that they which are approved among you, might be knowne.

20 When yee come together therefore

CHAP. XI.

place, this is not to eat the Lords

For every man when they should eat,
his owne supper afore, & one is hau-
and another is drunken.

Have ye not houses to eat & to drinke
for ye the Church of God, & shame
that haue not? what shall I say to you?

I prayse you in this? I prayse you not,

For I haue receiued of the Lord that
I also haue deliuered vnto you, so was
the Lord Iesus in the night that he was
trayed, tooke bread:

And when hee had given thanks, hee
broke it, and said, Take, eate: this is my body
which is broken for you: this doe ye in re-
membrance of me.

After the same maner also he tooke the
cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup
is the New Testament in my blood: this doe
as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me.

For as often as ye shall eate this bread,
and drinke this cup, ye shew the Lords death
till he come.

Wherefore, whosoever shall eate this
bread, and drinke the cup of the Lord un-
worthily, shall be guilty of the body & blood
of the Lord,

Let euery man therefore examine him-
self, and so let him eate of this bread and
drinke of this cup.

For hee that eateth and drinketh un-
worthily, eateth and drinketh his owne dam-
nation, because he discerneth not the Lords body

For this cause many are weake, and
many sleepe.

For if we would iudge our selues, we
should not be iudged.

But when we are iudged, we are cha-
rished of the Lord, because we should not be

I. CORINTHIANS.

condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye
together to eat tary one for another.

34 And if any man bee hungry, let
eat at home, that ye come not together
condemnation. Other things will I set
der when I come.

CHAP. XII.

1 To draw away the Corinthians from
sention and pride, he sheweth that
all gifts are therefore diuersly bestowed
that, the same being ioynly to each other
ployed, 12 vve may grow v up together
one body of Christ, in such equal proportion
measure, 20 as the members of mans body.

NOW concerning spiritual gifts, brethren
I would not haue you ignorant.

2 Yee knowe that yee were Gentiles
were caried away vnto the dumbe idola
ye were led.

3 Wherefore, I declare vnto you, that
man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth
Iesus execrable: also no man can say that
is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

4 Nowe there are diuersities of gifts,
the same Spirit.

5 And there are diuersities of adminis-
trations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diuersities of operations,
but God is the same which worketh all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit
giuen to euery man to profit withall.

8 For to one is giuen by the Spirit
word of wisdom: and to another the word
of knowledge, by the same Spirit:

9 And to another is giuen faith by
same Spirit: and to another, the gifts of
ling, by the same Spirit:

10 And to another the operations of
works: & to another: prophetic: and to

of tongues: and to soothe, the
of tongues.

And all these things worketh one, &
the same Spirit, distributing to every
as he wil. —

For as the body is one, and hath
members, and all the members of y body
which is one, though they be many, yet are
one body: euen so is Christ.

For by one Spirit are we all baptized
one body, whether we be fewes or Gre-
whether we be bond or free, and haue
all made to drinke into one Spirit.

For the body also is not one member,
many.

If the foot woulde say, because I am
of the hād, I am not of the body, is it ther-
fore not of the body?

And if the eare woulde say, Because I
am not the eye, I am not of the body, is it,
therefore not of the body?

If the whole body were an eye, where
the hearing? if the whole were hearing
where were the smelling?

But now hath God disposed the mē-
every one of them in the body, at his
pleasure.

For if they were al one mēber, where
the body?

But now we are there many members,
but one bodie.

And the eye cannot say vnto the hād
I haue no neede of thee: nor the head againe
the feete. I haue no neede of you.

Yea, much rather those members of y
body, which seeme to be more feeble, are ne-
cessary.

And vpon those members of the body,
which we thinke most vn honest, put we more

G g 3 honesty

the loveliness on.

24 For our comely parts neede not: but God hath tempered the body together, and hath given the more honour to the weaker parts, which lacked.

25 Lest there should be any disunity in the body: but that the members should have the same care one for another.

26 Therefore if one member suffer, suffer with it: if one member be had in honour, all the members reioyce with it.

27 Now yee are the body of Christ, members for your part.

28 And God hath ordeined some in the Church: as first, Apostles, secondly Prophets, thirdly teachers, then them that doe miracles: after that, the gifts of healing, helpers, governours, diversitie of tongues.

29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all teachers?

30 Are all doers of miracles? have all the gifts of healing? do all speake with tongues? do all interpret?

31 But desire you the best gifts, and I will shew you a more excellent way.

CHAP. xiiij

3 He sheweth that there are no gifts so excellent, which in Gods sight are not corrupted, if Charity be away: 4 and therefore he digresseth unto the commendation of it.

THough I speake with the tongues of men and Angels, and have not love, I am as sounding brasie, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I had the gifts of prophesie, and knew all secrets and all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so that I could remove mountaines, & had not love, I were nothing.

3 And though I feed the poore with all my goods, & though I give my body, that I

burne

1056 **Exalteth** long: it is bountifull: lone
 1057 **low** doeth not boast it selfe: it is
 1058 **up**:

doeth no vncomely thing: it seeketh
owne things: it is not prouoked to
thinketh not euill:

reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioy-
the truth:

It suffereth all things : it beleeueth all
it hopeth all things : it endureth all

Love doeth neuer fall away, though
prophecies be abolished, or $\frac{1}{2}$ tongues
or knowledge vanish away.

For we knowe in part, and we proph-

But when $\frac{1}{2}$ which is perfect, is come
that which is in part, shalbe abolished.

When I was a childe, I spake as a
I vnderstood as a childe, I thought as
a childe, but when I became a man, I put a
childish things.

For nowe wee see through a glasse
ely: but then shal we see face to face.

I know in part: but then shall I knowe
as I am knowen.

And now abide faith, hope, and love
these three: but the chiefest of these is

СНАР. xiiij.

commendeth the gift of prophesying: 7. & a small similitude taken of musick instruments, 12. he teacheth the true use of interpreting the Scriptures. 17. he taketh away the abuse; 34. & forbiddeth women to sing in the Congregation.

lowe after loue, and couet spiritual
for, and rather that yee may prophesie

2 For hee that speaketh a *strange* language, speaketh not vnto men, but vnto God: no man heareth him: howbeit in the spirit he speaketh secret things.

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh vnto men to edifying, and to exhortation, and to comfort.

4 He that speaketh *strange* language, edifieth him selfe: but he that prophesieth, edifieth the Church.

5 I woulde y^e al spake *strange* languages, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth, then he that speaketh diuers tongues except he expound it, that the Church may receiue edification.

6 And now, brethren, if I come vnto you speaking diuers tongues, what shall I proue to you, except I speake to you, either by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?

7 Moreouer things without life which giue a sound, whether it be a pipe or an harp, except they make a distinctio in the sonne, how shal it be knowen what is piped or harped?

8 Also if the trumpet giue an vncertaine sound, who shall prepare himselfe to battell?

9 So likewise you, by the tongue, except ye vtter words that haue signification, how shal it be vnderstood what is spoken? for ye shal speake in the aire.

10 There are so many kinds of voyces (as it commeth to passe) in the worlde, and none of them is dumbe.

11 Except I know then the power of the voyce, I shall be vnto him y^e speaketh a barbarian, and he that speaketh, shall be a barbarian vnto me.

12 Euen so, forasmuch as ye couet spiritual gifts, seeke that yee may excell vnto edifying

of the Church.

Wherefore, let him *ŷ* speaketh a *ŷ* strange
pray, that he may interpret.

For if I pray in a *ŷ* strange tongue, *ŷ*
prayeth : but mine vnderstanding
fruite.

What is it then ? I wil pray with the
ŷ, but I wil pray with the vnderstanding
ŷ, I will sing with the spirit, but I will
with the vnderstanding also.

Els when thou blestest with the spirit
ŷ shall he that occupieth the roome of
ŷ, Amē, at thy giuing of thākt,
ŷ he knoweth not what thou sayest ?

For thou verely giuest thanks wel, but
other is not edified.

I thanke my God, I speake languages
ŷ then ye al.

Yet had I rather in the Church to
ŷ fine wordes with mine vnderstanding,
ŷ I might also instruct others, then ten
ŷ words in a *ŷ* strange tongue.

Ye Brethren, bee not children in vnder-
standing, but as concerning maliciousnesse be
ŷ, but in vnderstanding, be of a ripe age.

In the Lawe it is written, By men of
ŷ, & by other languages will I
ŷ vnto this people: yet so shal they not
ŷ, saith the Lord.

Wherefore *ŷ* strange tongues are for a signe
ŷ to them that beleue, but to them that
ŷ beleue not: but prophesying *ŷ* serueth not for
ŷ that beleue not, but for them which
beleue.

If therefore when the whole Church
ŷ together in one, and al speake *ŷ* strange
ŷ, there come in they that are vnlearn-
ed, or they which beleue not, wil they not
ŷ that ye are out of your wittes ?

But if al prophecie, and there come in
one

25 And so are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so he will fall down on his face, and worship God, and say plainly that God is in you indeede.

26 What is to be done then brethren when ye come together, according as every one of you hath a Psalme, or hath doctrine, or hath a tongue, or hath reuelation, or hath interpretation, let all things be done edifying.

27 If any man speake a *strange tongue*, let it be by two, or at the most by three, & that by course, and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, which speaketh *languages*, & let him speake to himselfe and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two, or three, and let the other Iudge.

30 And if any thing bee reueiled to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learne, & all may haue comfort.

32 And the spirites of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets.

33 For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as we see in all the churches of the Saints.

34 Let your women keepe silence in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto them to speake: but they ought to be subiect, as also the Law sayeth.

35 And if they will learne any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: for it is as thame for women to speake in the church.

36 Came the word of God out from you? or hath it come vnto you onely?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to bee a Prophet,

Pro-

that I write vnto you, see the
of the Lord.

And if any man be ignorant, let him
inquire.

Wherefore brethren, couet to pro-
hibe and forbid not to speake languages.

Let all things be done honestly, and by

CHAP. XV.

The Gospel that Paul preached. 3. The death
and resurrection of Christ. 8 Paul sayv christ

1 O comer brethren, I declare vnto you
the Gospel which I preached vnto you, which
ye also receiued: & wherewith ye continue.

2 And whereby ye are saved, if ye keepe
the memory, after what manner I preached it
vnto you, except ye haue beleeued in vaine.

3 For first of all I deliuered vnto you that
which I receiued, howe that christ dyed for
our finnes, according to the Scriptures,

4 And that he was buried, & that he rose
again the third day according to the Scriptures.

5 And that he was seene of Cephas, then
of the twelue.

6 After that, hee was seene of more then
fiftie brethren at once: whereof ma-
ny remaine vnto this present, and some also
asleepe.

7 After that, hee was seene of Iames: then
of all the Apostles.

8 And last of all he was seene also of mee,
and of one borne out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the Apostles, which
am not meet to be called an Apostle, because
I persecuted the Church of God.

10 But by the grace of God, I am that I
am: and his grace which is in me, was not in
vain: but I laboured more abundantly then
they all, yet not I, but by the grace of god which is
with

11 Wherefore, whether it were
so we preach, and so haue ye beleue.

12 ¶ Now if it be preached, that Christ
risen from the dead, how say some
you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 For if there be no resurrection of the
dead, then is Christ not risen;

14 And if Christ be not risen, then is
preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine.

15 And we are found also false witnesses
of God: for we haue testified of God, that
he hath raised vp Christ: whom hee hath
not raised vp, if so be the dead be not raised.

16 For if the dead be not raised, then
Christ not raised.

17 And if Christ be not raised, your
faith is vaine ye are yet in your sinnes.

18 And so they which are asleepe
in Christ, are perished,

19 If in this life onely we haue hope
in Christ, we are of all men the most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead,
& was made the first frutes of them that
shall be.

21 For since by man came death, by
man shall also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, euen so in Christ
shall all be made aliue.

23 But euery man in his owne order:
the first frutes is Christ, afterward, they that
are of Christ, at his coming shall rise againe.

24 Then shall be the end, when he
shall deliuered vp the kingdome to God, euen
the Father, when he hath put downe all
rulers, al authoritie and power.

25 For he must reigne, til he hath put
downe his enemies vnder his feete.

26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed
is death.

27 For he hath put downe all things

CHAP. XV.

And when he saith that all things are subdued vnto him, it is manifest that he is God, which did put downe all things vnto him.)

31 And when all things shalbe subdued vnto him, then shal the Sonne also himselfe be subiect vnto him, that did subdue all things vnto him, that God may be al in all.

Elle what shall they doe which are buried for dead? if the dead rise not, at all, are they then baptizied for dead?

32 Why are we also in ieopardy euery

33 By our reioycing which I haue in Christ our Lord, I dye dayly.

34 If I haue fought with beasts at Ephesus after the manner of men, what aduantage it me, if the dead be not raised vp? let me eat & drinke: for to morow we shal die.

35 Be not deceiued: euil speakings corrupt good manners.

36 A wake to *live* righteously, and sinne not: for some haue not $\bar{\gamma}$ knowledge of God, I speake this to y our shame.

37 But some man will say, How are the dead raysted vp? and with what body come they forth?

38 O foole. that which thou sowest, is not quickened, except it die:

39 And that which thou sowest, thou knowest not that body that shalbe ~~but~~ bare as it falleth, of wheat, or of some other

40 But God giueth it a body at his pleasure, even to euery seede his owne body.

41 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one flesh of men, & another flesh of beasts, and another of fishes, and another of birds.

42 There are also heavenly bodies, and earthly bodies: but the glory of $\bar{\gamma}$ heavenly is one, and the glory of the earthly is another.

Th

1. CORINTHIANS

41 There is another glory of the sun,
and another glory of the moon, and
another glory of the starres: for one starre
differeth from another starre in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead.
The body is sown in corruption, & is raised
in incorruption.

43 It is sown in dishonour, & is raised
in glory: it is sown in weaknesse, & is
raised in power.

44 It is sown a natural body, & is raised
a spiritual body, there is a natural body,
and there is a spiritual body.

45 As it is also written, The first man
Adam was made a living soule: and the
Adam was made a quickening Spirit.

46 Howbeit that was not first which
is spirituall, but that which is natural, and
afterward that which is spirituall,

47 The first man is of the earth, earthly,
the second man is the Lord from heaven.

48 As is the earthly, such are they
that are earthly: and as is the heavenly, such
are they also that are heavenly.

49 And as wee have borne the image
of the earthly, so shall wee beare the image
of the heavenly.

50 This saye I, brethren, that flesh
and blood cannot inherit the kingdome of
God: neither doeth corruption inherite incorruption.

51 Beholde, I shew you a secret thing,
which wee shall not all sleepe, but wee shall all
be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of
an eye, at the last trumpet: for the trumpet
shall sound, and the dead shall be raised up
immortall, and we shall be changed.

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption,
& this mortal must put on immortality.

1. He exhorts
them of I
deth. Im
exhortati
the Epistle.

Once
as I h
Galatia, so

1. Every
one of you
God hat
be so gath

And
shall allow
ing your

4. And
shall go w

5. Now
one thore
erow M

6. And
winter

any wa
For I

So when this corruptible, hath put on immortality, and this mortall hath put on immortality, then shall be brought to passe that is written, Death is swallowed vp into victory.

55 O death where is thy sting? O grave where is thy victory?

56 The sting of death is sinne: and the strength of sinne is the Law.

57 Thus thanks be vnto God, which hath giue vs victory through our lord Iesus christ.

58 Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, vnmoueable, abundant alwaies in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vaine in γ Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

1 He exhorteth them to helpe the poore brethren of Hierusalem: 10 Then he commendeth Timothy. 13. and so with a friendly exhortation. 19 and commendations, endeth the Epistle.

Concerning the gathering forthe Sain-
as I haue ordeined in the churches of Galatia, so do ye also.

1. Euery first day of the weeke, let euery one of you put aside by himselfe, and lay up his offering: he hath prospered him, that then there be no gathering when I come.

2 And when I am come, whomsoever ye shall allow by letters, them will I sende to bring your liberality vnto Hierusalem.

3 And if it be meete that I go also, they shall go with me.

4 Now I wil come vnto you, after I haue gone thorowe Macedonia (for I will passe thorow Macedonia)

5 And it may be that I will abide, yea, winter with you, that yee may bring me on my way whither soeuer I goe.

6 For I wil not see you now in my passage but

that I trust to abide a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 And I will tary at Ephesus until the harvest.

9 For a great doore and effectual is opened vnto me: & there are many adversaries.

10 ¶ Now if Timotheus come, see that he be without feare with you: for he worketh the works of the Lord, euen as I doe.

11 Let no man therefore despise him, but conuey him forth in peace, & he may come to me: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 Astouching our brother Apollos greatly desired him to come vnto you with the brethren: but his minde was not at all to come at this time: howbeit hee will come when hee shall haue conuenient time.

13 ¶ Watch ye: stand fast in the faith, quite you like men, and be strong.

14 Let all your things be done in loue.

15 Now brethren, I beseech you, (ye knowe y^e house of Stephanas, that is the first fruite of Achaia, & that they haue giuen themselves to minister vnto the Saints)

16 That ye be obedient euen vnto such, as to all that helpe with vs and labour.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you.

18 For they haue comforted my spirit by yours: acknowledge therefore such men.

19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla, with the Church that is in their house. Salute you greatly in the Lord.

20 Al the brathren greete you, Greeete one another with an holy kisse.

21 The salutation of me Paul with mine owne hande.

22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him be had in execration among the

of our Lorde Iesus Christ

My loue be with you all in Christ Ie-

the first Epistle to the Corinthians, writ-
ten from Philippi, and sent by Stepianus,
Fortunatus, & Achaicus & Timotheus.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF

Paul to the Corinthians.

CHAP. I.

He beginneth with the praise of afflicti-
on, declaring what he hath suffered in
it, & how happily God assisted him.

And an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by
the will of God, and our brother Ti-
motheus, to the church of God which
is at Corinthus with all the Saints,
which are in all Achaia:

Grace be with you, & peace from God
Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

Blessed be God, even the Father of our
Lord Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies, &
God of all comfort,

Which comforteth vs in all our tribula-
tions, that we may be able to comfort them
which are in any affliction by the comfort
wherewith wee our selues are comforted of

For as the sufferings of Christ abound
to our consolation, aboundeth through

And whether we be afflicted, it is for
our consolation and saluation, which is
brought in the induring of the same suffer-
ings, which we also suffer; or whether we be
comforted, it is for your consolation and sal-

And our hope is stedfast concerning you.

Hh

in

It is as much as we know that
takers of the sufferings, so that
the consolation.

8 For brethren, we would not be
ignorant of our affliction, which came
in. As it is, how we were pressed out of
passing strength so that we altogether
red even of life.

9 Yea, we received the sentence of
in our selves, because we should not
our selves, but in God, which raiseth

10 Who delivered vs from so great
and doeth deliver vs: in whom we trust
yet he hereafter he wil deliver vs.

11 So that ye labour together in
for vs, that for the gift bestowed upon
many, thanks may be given by many
sons for vs.

12 For our reioycing is this, the testi-
mony of our conscience, that in simplicity
godly purenesse, and not in fleshly wisdom
but by the grace of God, wee have had
conversion in the worlde; and most of
youwards.

13 For we write none other thing
you, then that yee reade, or else that
knowledge & I trust ye shal acknow-
unto the end.

14 Even as yee have acknowledged
partly, that we are your reioycing,
ye are ours, in the day of our Lord Iesus.

15 And in this confidence was I
first to come vnto you, that ye might
double grace.

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia
& to come again out of Macedonia
& to be led forth toward Iudea of you.

17 When I therefore was thus
did I vse lightnesse? or mind I those
which I mind, according, to the flesh,

CHAP. II.

Yea, yea, and Nay, nay?

God is faithfull, that our words
you was not, Yea, and Nay.

For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ,
preached among you by vs, *that is,*
Siluanns, and Timotheus, was not
Nay: but in him it was yea.

For all the promises of God in him
& are in him, Amen, vnto the glory
through vs.

And it is God which stablisheth vs
in Christ, and hath anoynted vs.

Whohath also sealed vs, and hath gi-
uen the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

Now, I cal God for a record vnto my
to spare you, I came not as yet vn-
to Corinthus.

Nor that we haue dominion ouer you
but we are helpers of your ioy: for by
we stand.

CHAP. II.

He excuseth his not coming vnto them
& prouly reprehendeth them: & he shew-
eth that such is his affection towards them
that he neuer reioyceth but when they are
well.

As I determine thus in my selfe, that I
would not come again to you in heauines
For if I make you sorie, who is he then
should make mee glad, but the same
is made fure by me?

And I wrote this same thing to you, least
I came, I should take heauines of the,

For I ought to reioyce: this confidence

in you al, & my ioy is & ioy of you al
for in great affliction, and anguish of

I wrote vnto you with many teares,

that ye should be made fure, but that ye

receiue the loue, which I haue, speci-

ally you.

It was much as wee know that as ye were
wakers of the sufferings, so shal ye be
the consolation.

8 For brethren, we woulde not haue
ignorant of our afflictio, which came vnto
vs. A fit, how we were pressed out of maner
passing strength so that we altogether des-
troyed euery of life.

9 Yea, we receiued the sentence of death
in our selues, because we should not trust
our selues, but in God, which raiseth the dead.

10 Who deliuered vs fro so great a death
and doeth deliuer vs: in whom we trust, that
yet hereafter he wil deliuer vs.

11 So that ye labour together in pray-
er vs, that for the gift bestowed vpon vs by
many, thanks may be giuen by many per-
sons for vs.

12 For our reioycing is this, the testi-
monie of our conscience, that in simplicitie
godly purenesse, and not in fleshly wisdom
but by the grace of God, wee haue had
conuersation in the worlde; and most of al
youwards.

13 For we write none other things vnto
you, then that yee reade, or else that yee
knowledge & I trust ye shal acknowlege
vnto the end.

14 Euen as yee haue acknowledged
partly, that we are your reioycing, euen
ye are ours, in the day of our Lord Iesus.

15 And in this confidence was I first
first to come vnto you, that ye might haue
double grace.

16 And to passe by you into Macedo-
& to come again out of Macedonia vnto
& to be led forth toward Iudea of you.

17 When I therefore was thus minded
did I vse lightnesse? or mind I those things
which I mind, according to the flesh, & not
vnto you.

CHAP. I.

Yea, yea, and Nay, nay?

God is faithfull, that our words
you was not, Yea, and Nay.

For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ,
was preached among you by vs, *that is,*
and Silvanus, and Timotheus, was not
and Nay: but in him it was yea.

For all the promises of God in him
& are in him, Amen, vnto the glory
through vs.

And it is God which stablisheth vs
in Christ, and hath anoynted vs.

Who hath also sealed vs, and hath gi-
ue the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

Now, I cal God for a record vnto my
to spare you, I came not as yet vn-
to Corinthus.

Not that we haue dominion ouer your
soules, but we are helpers of your ioy: for by
we stand.

CHAP. II.

*He excuseth his not coming vnto them
& prouly reprehendeth them: & he shew-
eth that such is his affection towards them
that he neuer reioyceth but when they are
well.*

Yet I determine thus in my selfe, that I
would not come again to you in heauines
For if I make you sorie, who is he then
I should make mee glad, but the same
is made fory by me?

And I wrote this same thing to you, least
when I came, I should take heauines of the,
whom I ought to reioyce: this confidence
I in you al, & my ioy is & ioy of you al
For in great affliction, and anguish of
I wrote vnto you with many teares,
that ye should be made fory. but that ye
perceiue the loue, which I haue, speci-
ally vnto you.

5 And if any haue caused ~~some~~
 same hath not made mee sorry, but
 (least I should more charge him) you all.

6 It is sufficient vnto the same man, that
 he was rebuked of many.

7 So that now contrariwise ye ought
 ether to forgieue him, and comfort him, lest
 the same should bee swallowed vp with
 vermuch heauinesse.

8 Wherefore, I pray you, that ye would
 confirme your loue towards him.

9 For this cause also did I write, that
 might knowe the prooffe of you, whether
 you would be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgieue any thing, I
 giue also: for verely if I forgane any thing,
 whom I forgane it, for your sakes forgane
 it in the sight of christ.

11 Least Satan should circumuent vs, for
 we are not ignorant of his enterprises.

12 Furthermore, when I come to you
 as to preach christes Gospel, and a doore
 opened vnto me of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirite, because
 founde not Titus my brother, but tooke
 leaue of the, & went away into Macedon.

14 Nowe thanks be vnto God which
 waies maketh vs to triumph in christ, &
 keth manifest the fauour of his knowledge
 by vs in euery place.

15 For wee are vnto God the sweet
 iour of christ in them that are saued, and
 them that perish: —

16 To the one we are the sauiour
 death, vnto death, & to the other the
 of life, vnto life: & who is sufficient for
 things? —

17 For we are not as many, which
 marchandise of the worde of God: but
 sincerity, but as of God in the sight of God

CHAP. III.

CHAP. III.

*And fresh no other commendation, 3. then
their continuing in the faith.*

O we begin to praise our selues again?

Do we neede we, as some other, Epistles of
commendation vnto you, or letters of re-
commendation from you?

Ye are our Epistle written in our hearts,
which is vnderstood, and read of all men,

In that yee are manifest, to be the Epi-
stle of christ, ministred by vs, and written,
not with ynke, but with the Spirit of the li-
ving God not in tables of stone, but in fleshy
tables of the heart.

And such trust haue we through christ
to God,

Not that we are sufficient of our selues
to thinke any thing as of our selues, but our
sufficiency is of God.

Who also hath made vs able ministers
of the new Testament, not of the letter, but
of the Spirit: for the letter killeth, but the
Spirit giueth life.

If then the ministration of death & writ-
ten with letters and ingrauen in stones, was
glorious, so that the children of Israel could
not behold the face of Moses, for the glory of
his countenance (which glory is done away)

Howe shall not the ministration of the
Spirit be more glorious?

For if the ministry of condemnation
was glorious, much more doeth the mini-
stration of righteousness exceed in glory.

For euen that which was glorified,
was not glorified in this point, that is, as
touching the exceeding glory:

For if that which should be abolished,
was glorious, much more shall that which
remaineth be glorious.

12 Seeing then that wee haue
wee vse great boldnes of speech.

13 And we are not as Moses, which
vaile vpon his face, that the children of
Israel shoulde not looke vnto the end of
which shoulde be aboli shed.

14 Therefore their mindes are hardened
for vntil this day remaineth the same
ring vntaken away in the reading of the
Testamēt, which vaile in Christ is put away.

15 But euen vnto this day, when
is read, the vaile is laid ouer their hearts.

16 Neuerthelesse, when their hearts
be turned to the Lord, the vaile shall be
away.

17 Now the Lord is the Spirit, & where
the Spirit of the Lord is, there is libertie.

18 But we al behold as in a mirrour
the glorie of the Lorde with open face, and
changed into the same image, from glorie
glorie, as by the Spirit of the Lord.

CHAP. IIII

3 He sheweth that he hath so laboured in
aching the Gospel, 4 that such are euen blind
of Satan, who do not perceiue the brightness
thereof, 7 that the same is caried in earthen
vessels, 10 who are subiect to many
vies, 16 and therefore he exhorteth the
owne example to be couragions. 17 and
genuine this present life.

Therefore seeing y we haue this ministration
as we haue receiued mercy, we faint not.

2 But haue cast fro vs the clokes of shame
and walke not in craftines, neither haue
we the word of God deceitfully: but in
claratiō of the trueth we approue our selues
to euery mans consciēce in the sight of God.

3 If our Gospel bee then hidde, it is
to them that are lost.

4 In whom the God of this world

that is, of the infidels,
of the glorious Gospell of Christ,
the image of God, should not shine

For wee preach not our selues but Christ
the Lord, and our selues your seruants
for his sake.

For God that commaunded the light to
shin out of darkenesse, is hee which hath
sent in our hearts, to gine the light of the
knowledge of the glory of God in the face
of Iesus Christ.

But wee haue this treasure in earthen
vessels, that the excellencie of that power
might be of God, and not of vs.

We are afflicted on euery side, yet are
not in distresse: we are in doubt, but yet
we despayre not.

We are persecuted, but not forsaken:
we are down but we perish not.

Every where wee beare about in our
body the dying of the Lorde Iesus, that the
life of Iesus might also be made manifest in
our bodies.

For we which liue are alwaies deli-
uered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life
of Iesus might also be made manifest in our
mortal flesh.

So then death worketh in vs, and life
in you.

And because wee haue the same spirit
of faith, according as it is written, I belee-
ued, and therefore haue I spoken, we also be-
lieue, and therefore speake.

Knowing that hee which hath raised
the Lorde Iesus, shal raise vs vp also by Ie-
sus, and shall set vs with you.

For all things are for your sakes, that
most plenteous grace by the than ksgiving
of many, may redound to the praise of God.

H h 4 16 There-

one wald man perish, yet the
renewed daily.

17 For our light affliction which is
moment, causeth vnto vs a farre
excellent, and an eternall weight of glory.

18 Whiles wee looke not on the things
which are seene, but on the things which
are not seene: for the things which are seene
are temporal: but the things which are not
are eternal.

CHAP. V

2 He continueth in the same argument, 6 touching the certaine hope of salvation, 1 through faith, 12 not to praise himselfe, 14 seeing he hath God and his Church before his eyes, 17, and esteemeth nothing but newnesse of life in Christ.

FOR wee know that if our earthly body
of this tabernacle be destroyed, we have
a building giuen of God, that is, a house
made with handes, but eternall in the
heavens.

2 For therefore we sigh, desiring to be
clothed with our house, which is from hea-
uen:

3 Because that if we be clothed, we shall
not be found naked.

4 For indeed we that are in this tabernacle,
sigh and are burdened, because we would
not bee vnclodhed, but would bee clothed
vpon, that mortallitie might be swallowed
vpon of life.

5 And hee that hath created vs for this
thing, is God, who also hath giuen vnto
vs the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore wee are alway bold, though
wee know that whiles wee are at home
in the body, we are absent from the Lorde.

7 (For we walk by faith, & not by sight)

...we are bold, and some
out of the body and to dwell
with the Lord.

Wherefore also wee couet, that both
at home, and remouing from home
wee be acceptable to him.

For wee must all appeare before the
iudgement seate of christ, that euery man
receiue the things which are done
in his body, according to that hee hath done,
whether it be good or euill.

11 Knowing therefore that terror of the
Lord, wee perswade men, and wee are made
manifest vnto God, and I trust also that we
are made manifest in your consciences.

12 For wee praise not our selues againe
vnto you, but giue you an occasion to reioyce
of vs, that yee may haue to answer against
them, which reioyce in the face, and not in
the heart.

13 For whether wee bee out of our wit,
or whether wee be in our wits, it is to God,
whether wee bee in our right minde, we are it vnto you.

14 For that loue of Christ constraineth vs.

15 Because we thus iudge, that if one bee
dead for all, then were all dead, and he dy-
ed for all, that they which liue, should not
henceforth liue vnto themselves, but vnto
him which died for them, and rose againe.

16 Wherefore, henceforth know wee no
man after the flesh, yea, though wee had
known Christ after the flesh, yet nowe
henceforth know we him no more.

17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, let
him be a new creature. Old things are passed
away: behold all things are become new.

18 And all things are of God, which hath
reconciled vs vnto himselfe by Iesus Christ,
and hath giuen vnto vs the ministry of re-
conciliation.

19 For God was in Christ, and we
the world to himselfe; not imputing
sinnes vnto them, and hath committed
the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then are we ambassadours for
Christ: as though God did beseech you
through vs, we pray you in Christs stead, that
ye be reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be sinne for
vs, which knew no sinne, that we should be
made the righteousness of God in him.

CHAP. VI,

1 He exhorteth them to leade their liues, as
becometh Christians, neither to be discou-
ered in tribulation, 9 nor puffed up with
glory, 14 to auoide all uncleannes, 16 con-
sidering that they are the temples of y living
God.

SO we therefore as workers together be-
seech you that ye receiue not the grace
of God in vaine.

2 For he saith, I haue heard thee in
time accepted, and in the day of saluation
haue I succoured thee: behold now the ac-
cepted time behold now the day of saluation.

3 We giue no occasiō of offence in any thing,
that our ministerie should not be reprehended.

4 But in all things we approue our selves
as the ministers of God, in much patience, in
afflictions, in necessities, in distresses.

5 In stripes, in prisons, in tumults, in labours,

6 By watchings, by fastings, by purities,
by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindness,
by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of
God, by the armour of righteousness on the
right hand, and on the left.

8 By honour & dishonour, by euil report
and good report, as deceiuers, and yet true

As for
your
O C
your
Ye are
the
13 Now
my chil
Be no
for v
with v
hath
And
or wh
infidel
16 And
of God
the living
among
their God
17 Where
separate
none
And I
be my
Lord Almi
least by
discre
al that
will be
Being th
ly below
filthinesse
sanctific

... & yet knowe, as dying,
... we live: as chastened, and yet not

10 As sorowing, and yet alwayes reioy-
cing in poore, and yet make many rich: as ha-
ving nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O Corinthians, our mouth is opene vo-
yke: our heart it made large.

12 Ye are not kept strait in vs, but yee are
loose in your owne bowels.

13 Now for $\frac{1}{2}$ same recompence, I speake
unto my children, Be you also enlarged.

14 Be not vnequally yoked with the in-
fidel: for what fellowship hath righteous-
nesse with vnrightheousnesse: and what com-
munion hath light with darkenes.

15 And what concord hath Christ with
Belial: or what part hath the beleuer with
the infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the Tem-
ple of God with idols: for ye are the temple
of the liuing God, as God hath said, I will
dwell among them, & walke there & I will
be their God, and they shall be my people.

17 Wherefore come out from among the,
and separate your selues saith the Lord: and
touch none vncleane thing, and I will receive

18 And I will be a Father vnto you, and ye
shall be my sonnes and daughters, saith the
Lord Almighty.

CHAP. VII.

Least by ouermuch urging them, he should
discomfite their tender minds, 2 he prometh what
as that he sayd, 4 proceeded of the great good
will he bare vnto them,

Seeing the we haue these promises, deare-
ly beloued, let vs cleanse our selues from
filthinesse of the flesh & spirit, and finish
sanctification in the feare of God.

2 Receive

2 Receive vs: we haue done wronge
man: we haue corrupted no man: we haue
defrauded no man.

3 I speake it not to your condemnation:
for I haue saide before that, yee are in our
hearts, to die and liue together.

4 I vse great boldnes of speach towards
you: I reioyce greatly in you: I am filled
with comfort, and am exceedingly ioyous in
all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedo-
nia our flesh had no rest, but we were trou-
bled on every side, fighting without, & ter-
rors within.

6 But God, that comforteth the abject,
comforted vs at the comming of Titus.

7 And not by his comming onely, but also
by the consolation wherewith he was com-
forted of you, when he tolde vs your grei-
vous desire, your mourning, your seruent minde to-
wards me, so that I reioyced much more.

8 For though I made you sory with
letter, I repent not, though I did repent: for
I perceiue that the same Epistle made you
sory, though it were but for a season.

9 I now reioyce not that yee were sory,
but y^e ye sorowed to repentance: for ye sorow-
ed godly, so y^e in nothing ye were hurt by

10 For godly sorowe causeth repentance
unto saluation, not to bee repented of: but
the worldly sorow causeth death.

11 For beholde, this thing that yee haue
bene godly sory, what great care it haue
wrought in you: yea, what clearing of your
selues: yea, what indignation: what feare: yea,
what great desire: yea, what a zeale: yea,
what reuenge? in al things ye haue shewed
your selues, y^e ye are pure in this matter.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote vnto you
that I did it not for his cause that had done

of God

13 There
and ye were
loved much

and has sp
14 For if y^e
of you, I ha
haue spoken
to our boast

15 And l
dant to
the obedi
and trembli

16 I reio
confidence i

He exhort
admonish

14. 20 be
We doe
grace of

of Mac

2 Becau
of abound

3 For to
and beyon

4 And p
we would

of the mini

5 And th
but gaue th

6 That v
had beg

7 Theref
faith, &

either for his cause that had the interest that our care towarde you in the sight of God might appeare vnto you.

13 Therefore wee were comforted, because ye were comforted: but rather wee reioyced much more for the ioye of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I haue not bene ashamed: but as I haue spoken vnto you all things in truth, end to our boasting vnto Titus was true.

15 And his inwarde affection is more abundant towarde you, when he remembreth the obedience of you all, & how with feare and trembling ye receiued him.

16 I reioyce therefore that I may put my confidence in you in al things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 He exhorteth them, by the exāple of the Macedonians, & also euen of Christ himselfe, to be liberal towards the Saints.

WE doe you also to wit, brethren, of the grace of God bestowed vpon the church of Macedonia,

2 Because in great trial of affliction their joy abounded, and their most extreame poverty abounded vnto their rich liberality.

3 For to their power (I beare record) yea and beyond their power they were willing.

4 And prayed vs with great instance that we would receiue the grace and fellowship of the ministring which is toward y Saints.

5 And this they did, not as we looked for: but gaue their owne selues, first to the Lord and after vnto vs by the wil of God,

6 That wee shoulde exhort Titus, that as he had begun, so hee woulde accomplish the same grace among you also.

7 Therefore, as ye abound in euery thing, in faith, & worde, & knowledge, and in all

diligence, and in your lone covetousness
 that ye abound in this grace.

8 This say I not by commandment
 because of the diligence of others: there-
 fore I the naturalnes of your lone.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord
 in Christ that he being rich, for your sake
 became poore, that ye through his poore-
 ness might be made rich.

10 And I shew my minde herein; for
 it is expedient for you, which have begun
 to doe onely, but also to will, a yete ago.

11 Now therefore performe to doe it
 that as there was a readines to will, even
 ye may performe it of that which ye have.

12 For if there be first a willing minde,
 it is accepted according to that a man hath
 and not according to that he hath not.

13 Neither is it that other men should
 be envied, & you grieved? but vpon like con-
 sideration, at this time your abundāce supplieth
 their lackes?

14 That also their abundāce may bee
 your lacke: that there may be equalitie.

15 As it is writen He that gathered much
 had nothing over, and he that gathered little
 had not the lesse.

16 And thanks be vnto God, which
 put in the heart of Titus, the same care for
 you.

17 Because he accepted the exhortation
 yea, he was so careful that of his own accord
 he went vnto you.

18 And wee have sent also with him
 brother, whose praise is in y^e Gospel through
 out all the Churches.

19 (And not so only, but is also chosen
 of y^e churches to be a fellow in our journey
 concerning this grace y^e is ministered by
 vnto y^e glory of y^e same Lord, & declaration

(and.)

...ing this, y^e no mā shold blame
abundancethatis ministered by vs,
...ing for honest things, not only
the Lord, but also before men.

And wee haue sent with them one
whom we haue oft times proued to
be in many things, but now much
more, for the great confidence, which
we haue in you.

Whether any doe inquire of Titus, he is
a fellow & helper to youward: or of our
messengers, they are messengers of the Chur-
che, & of the glory of Christ.

Wherefore shew toward them, and
toward the Churches the prooue of your loue,
in the reioycing that we haue of you.

CHAP. IX.

¶ *¶* Albeit he thinke v^ell of their ready
wills, yet earnestly exhorteth the. 4 he yeeld
eth a reason, 6 He compareth almes to seeds
sowne, to which God doth repay v^erich
and gaine.

Or as touching y^e ministering to y^e Saints it
is superfluous for me to write vnto you.

For I know your readinesse of mind,
whereof I boast my selfe of you vnto the of
Macedonia & say, y^e Achaia was prepared a
long time, & y^e our zeale hath prouoked many.
Now haue I sent the brethren, lest our
boasting ouer you should be in vaine in this
half, that ye (as I haue said) be ready.

Lest if they of Macedonia come with
you, and finde you vnprepared, we (that wee
say not so, you) should be ashamed in this
constant boasting.

Wherefore I thought it necessary, to ex-
hort y^e brethren to come before vnto you, &
with your beneuolence appointed afore, y^e
might bee ready, and come of beneuo-
lence

6. This yet remember, that he who sows sparingly, shall reap also sparingly; but he who sows liberally, shall reap also liberally.

7. As every man wisheth in his heart, so he should give not grudgingly, or of necessity. God loveth a cheerful giver.

8. And God is able to make all grace abound in you, that ye always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound in every good worke.

9. (As it is written, Hee hath spared the poor; and hath given to the poore: his benevolence remaineth for ever.)

10. Also he that findeth seed to the sower, will minister likewise bread for food: multiply your seede, and encrease the fruit of your beneuolence)

11. That on all parts ye may be made perfect unto all liberalitie, which causeth through vs thanksgiving unto God.

12. For the ministration of this service not onely supplieth the necessities of the Saints, but also abundantly causeth many to give thanks to God.

13. (Which by the experience of this ministration, prayse God for your voluntary contribution to the Gospel of christ, and for your liberal distribution to them and to all men.)

14. And in their prayer for you, to praise God after you greatly, for the abundant grace which God in you.

15. Thanks therefore be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

CHAP. X.

1. He sheweth with what confidence, and with what weapons, & with what revenue, he is armed against the cavillations of the wicked. 2. & that, when he is present, his power is not lesse, when his word is absent, than when he is present.

I Paul my selfe beseech you by the
meeknesse, and gentlenesse of Christ,
when I am present among you, am
bold toward you being absent.
And this I require you, that I neede not
be bold whē I am present, with that same
meeknesse, wherewith I think to be bold against
you, which esteeme vs as though we wal-
ked according to the flesh.

Neuertheles though we walke in the
flesh, yet we doe not warre after the flesh.

(For the weapons of our warfare are not
of the flesh, but mighty through God, to cast
down strong holds)

Casting downe the imaginations, and
every high thing that is exalted against the
knowledge of God & bringing into captivity
every thought to the obedience of Christ.

And hauing ready ye vengeance against al
that disobey, when your obedience is fulfilled

Look ye on things after the apperance?

Any man trust in himself that he is Christs

him consider this againe of himself, that

is Christs, euen so are we Christs.

For though I should boast somewhat

of our authority, which the Lord hath

gauen vs for edification, and not for your de-

struction, I should haue no shame,

This I say, that I may not seeme as if

I were to feare you with letters.

For the letters, saith hee, are fore and

strong, but his bodily presence is weake, and

his speech is of no value.

Let such one thinke this, that such as

are in word by letters when we are ab-

sent, such will we be also in deede, when we

are present.

For we dare not make our selues of ye

equall, or to cōpare our selues to the, which

are themselves; but they vnderstand

not that they measure themselves
selves, and compare themselves
selves.

13 But wee will not reioyce of things
which are not within our measure, but
according to the measure of the line, where
God hath distributed vnto vs a measure
attaine euen vnto you.

14 For we stretch not our selves bey-
ond our measure, as though we had not attained
vnto you for euen to you also have we come
in preaching the Gospell of christ.

15 Not boasting of things which are
without our measure: *that is*, of other mens
labours: & we hope, when your faith shall
increase, to bee magnified by you according
to our line abundantly.

16 And to preach the Gospel in those re-
gions which are beyond you: not to reioyce
in another mans line, *that is*, in the things
are prepared already.

17 But let him that reioyceth, reioyce
in the Lord,

18 For he that praiseth himselfe, is
allowed, but he whome the Lord praiseth.

CHAP. Xi.

2. He testifieth that for the great loves sake
beareth to the Corinthians, he is compelled
5 to utter his own praises, 9 & that he
slew his labor on the, without any reward.

Would to God ye could suffer a little
foolishnesse, and indeede, ye suffer me.

3 For I am ielous ouer you, with god-
lious ielousie: for I haue prepared for you
a husband, to present you as a pure virgin
to christ.

3 But I feare least as the serpent beguiled
Eue through his subtilty, so your minds
should bee corrupted from the simplicity
that is to christ.

...when we haue not preached: of
...another spirit whome ye haue
...either another gospel which ye
...not receiued, yemight haue suffred him.
Verely I suppose that I was not inferi-
to the very chiefe Apostles.

And though I be rude in speaking, yet I
am not so in knowledge, but among you we
haue bene made manifest to the vtmost in al

Haue I committed an offence because
I flattered my selfe, that ye might be exalted
because I preached to you the Gospel of
freely?

I robbed other churches, and took wa-
res of them to doe your seruice.

And when I was present with you, &
in neede, I was not shewfull to the hin-
drance of any man. for that which was
lacking vnto me, the brethren which came
from Macedonia, supplied, and in al things
I will keepe my selfe, that I shoulde
not be gregarious to you.

The truth of Christ is in me, that this
reioicing shal not be shut vp against me in
the regions of Achaja;

Wherefore? because I loue you not?
God knoweth.

But what I do, that will I doe: that I
may cut away occasion from them, which
are occasion, that they might bee founde
vnto vs in that wherein they reioyce.

For such false apostles are deceitfull
workers, and transforme themselves into
the Apostles of Christ.

And no maruile: for Satan himselfe is
transformed into an Angel of light.

Therefore it is no great thing, though
ministers transforme themselves, as though

...were the ministers of the
whose end shalbe according to their

16 I say againe: let no man thinke
am foolish, or elsake me euen as a foole,
I may also boast my self a little.

17 That I speake, I speake it not after
Lorde: but as it were foolishly in that
great boasting,

18 Seeing that manye reioyce after
flesh, I wil reioyce also.

19 For yee suffer fooles gladlye, because
that ye are wise.

20 For ye suffer, euen if a man bringe
into bondage, if a man deuoure you, if a man
take your goods, if a man exalt himself, if
smite you on the face.

21 I speake as concerning the reproche
though that we had bene weake: but wile
in any man is bolde (I speake foolishly) I
bolde also.

22 They are Hebrewes, so am I: they
Israelites, so am I: they are the seede of
braham, so am I.

23 They are the ministers of Christ,
speake as a foole) I am more: in labours
abundant: in stripes aboue measure: in
more plenteouslie: in death oft.

24 Of the Iewes fve times receiued
fourtie stripes saue one.

25 I was thrise beaten with rods: I
once stoned: I suffered thrise shipwracke
night and day haue I bene in the deepe sea

26 In iourneying I was often, in perils
waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of
owne nation, in perils among the Gentiles,
perils in the citie, in perils in wildernesse,
perils in the sea, in perils among false
thren,

27 In wearines and painefulnesse, in
chug often, in hunger and thirst, in falli-

...
...
... Who
... who is offic
... If I
... of mine i
... The
... Iohas Chri
... knoweth
... 32 In
... people vnde
... care of
... me.
... 33 But
... a basket the
... hands.
... He does
... 3 of the
... sealed
... might in
... priue of
... drine him
... they giue
... few, who
... It is not
... Ioyce: fo
... lions of
... I know
... teene ycer
... body, I can
... not tell: G
... into the th
... 3 And
... body, or o
... knoweth)
... How

the things which are conuersed
daily, & haue the care of al y
things.

29 Who is weake, and I am not weaker
who is offended, and I burne not?

30 If I must needs reioyce, I wil reioyce
of mine infirmities.

31 The God, euē the Father of our Lord
Iesus Christ, which is blessed for euermore,
knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damascus the gouernour of the
people vnder King Aretas, layde watch in y
cite of Damascus, & would haue caught
me.

33 But at a window was I let downe in
a basket thorow the wall, and escaped his
hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 He doeth euen unwillingly make rehearsal
3 of the heauenly visions, 4 that were re-
ueiled vnto him: 6 for which though he
might indeede glory, yet he wil not, 10 being
pride of his owne infirmities: 11 but they
driue him to this kinde of follie, 20 in that
they giue eare to certaine vain glorious per-
sons, who draue them from Christ.

¶ It is not expedient for me no doubt to re-
ioyce: for I wil come to visions and reue-
lations of the Lord.

2 I knowe a man in Christ aboue foure-
tene yeres agone, (whether he were in the
body, I cannot tel, or out of the body, I can-
not tell: God knoweth) which was taken vp
into the thirde heauen.

3 And I know such a man (whether in y
body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God
knoweth)

4 How that he was take vp into Para-

5 O I such a man will I reioyce, if I should not reioyce, except it be of my infirmities.
6 For though I would reioyce, I should not be a foole: for I will say the truth: lest I reframe, lest any man should thinke of me above that he seeth in me, or that he heareth of me.

7 And least I should be exalted on of treasure through the abundance of revelations, there was giue vnto me a pricke in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, because I should not bee exalted out of measure.

8 For this thing I besought y Lord that it might depart from me.

9 And he sayd vnto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my power is made perfect through weaknesse. Very gladly therefore will I reioyce rather in mine infirmities, that the power of Christ may dwell in me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguish for Christs sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.

11 I was a foole to boast my selfe: ye haue compelled me: for I ought to haue bene commended of you: for nothing was I inferior to y very chief apostles, though I be nothing.

12 The signes of an Apostle, were wrought among you with all patience, with signes, wonders, and great workes.

13 For what is it, wherein yee were inferior vnto other Churches, except that I haue not bene slouthfull to your hinderance: forgiue mee this wrong.

14 Beholde, the third time I am ready to come vnto you, & yet wil I not be slouthfull to your hinderance: for I seeke not your

...ought not to lay vpon
...the fathers for the children:
...I will most gladly bestow, & will
...for your soules: though I more
...you the lesse I am loued.

...But see it that I charged you not: yet
...much as I was craftie, I took you with

...Did I pil you by any of them whom
...vnto you?

...I haue desired Titus, and with him I
...sent a brother: did Titus pil you of any
...walked we not in the selfe same spi-
...walked we not in the same steps?

...Againe, thinke ye that we excuse our
...vnto you? wee speake before God in
...But we doe all things dearly be-
...for your edifying.

...For I feare, lest when I come, I shall
...find you such as I would: & that I shal
...vnto you such as ye would not, and
...be strife, enuying, wrath, contenti-
...backbitings, whisperings, swellings, &
...when I come.

...I feare lest when I come againe, my
...sale me among you, and I shall be-
...many of them which haue sinned al-
...and haue not repented of the vnclean-
...& fornication, & wantonnesse, which
...haue committed.

CHAP. XIII.

...summing the third time, 2 he denounceth the
...per vengeance toward the, 5 who haue
...of the power of Christ in his
...of flesh: 10 At length he prayeth for
...repentance, 11 & wisheth the prosperitie
...Of this is the third time that I come
...vnto you, in the mouth of two or three
...shall every word stand.

...telle you before, & tel you before: as

1 i 4 though

write I nowe being absent
therefore haue sinned, and to all
I come againe, I will not spare,

3 Seing that ye seek experience of Christ
that speaketh in mee, which towards you
is not weake, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified concerning
infirmitie, yet liueth hee through the
power of God. And we, no doubt are weak
in him, but we shall liue with him, through
the power of God towards you.

5 Proue your selues whether ye are in
faith: examine your selues: knowe ye
your owne selues, how that Iesus Christ
is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shall knowe that
ye are not reprobates.

7 Nowe I pray vnto God, that ye doe
no euill, not that wee should seeme approb
but that ye should doe that which is honest
though we be as reprobates.

8 For we cannot do any thing against
the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad when we are weak
and that ye are strong: this also we will
for, *even* your perfection,

10 Therefore write I these things being
absent, lest when I am present, I should
be sharpest, according to the power which
the Lord hath giuen me, to edification, and
not destruction.

11 Finally brethren, fare ye wel: be
perfect: bee of good comfort: bee of one
line in peace, and the God of loue and
mercy shall be with you.

12 Greete one another with an holy
kiss. All the Saints salute you.

13 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ
the loue of God, and the communion

Second Epistle to the Corinth. written by Paul the Apostle to the
Philip, a citie in Macedonia, & sent by Titus and Lucas.

THE EPISTLE OF THE
Apostle Paul to the
Galatians.

CHAP. I.

straight after the salutation. 6 He reprehendeth the Galatians for revolting 9. from the Gospell, 15 which hee received from God 17 before hee had communicated with any of the Apostles.

PAVL an Apostle, (not of men neither by man, but by Iesus Christ, and God the Father which hath raised him from the dead)

2 And all the brethren which are with me, vnto the Churches of Galatia:

3 Grace be with you, and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Iesus Christ.

4 Which gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that he might deliuer vs from this present euill worlde, according to the will of God, euen our Father,

5 To whom be glory for euer and euer, Amen.

6 I marvelle that ye are so soone removed away vnto another Gospell, from him which had called you in the grace of Christ.

7 Which is not another Gospell, saue that there be some which trouble you, and intend to peruert the Gospell of Christ.

8 But though that we, or an Angel from heauen preach vnto you otherwise, then that which wee haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed.—

If any man preach vnto you otherwise than that ye haue receiued, let him be accursed.
10 For nowe preach I man's doctrine? or doe I about to please men? for if I should yet please men, I were not the servant of christ.

11 Now I certifie you brethren, that the Gospel which was preached of me, was not after man.

12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Iesus Christ.

13 For ye haue heard of my conversation in time past, in the Jewish religion how I persecuted the church of God extremely, and wasted it.

14 And profited in the Jewish religion above many of my companions of my owne nation, & was much more zealous of the traditions of my fathers,

15 But when it pleased God (which he hath testified by his signs and wonders) to call me by his grace)

16 To reueile his Sonne in me, that I should preach him among the Gentiles, immediately I communicated not with flesh & blood.

17 Neither came I againe to Ierusalem to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and turned againe into Damascus.

18 Then after three yeeres I came againe to Hierusalem to visite Peter, and abode with him fiftene dayes.

19 And none other of the Apostles saw I, save Iames the Lords brother.

20 Now the things that I write vnto you, beholde, I write before God that I lie not.

21 After that, I went into the coastes of Syria and Cilicia, for I was unknowne

And heard onely some say
that he had secured vs in time past, now
with f faith which before he destroyed
And they glorified God for me.

CHAP. II.

That the Apostles did nothing disagree from
the Gospel, 3 he declareth by the example of
him being uncircumcised, 11 and also by
his aduouching the same against Peters dis-
sentatiō. 17 And so he passeth to f handling
of a free iustification by Christ, &c.

Then fourteene yeeres after, I went vp
again to Hierusalem, with Barnabas, &
with me Titus also.

And I went vp by reuelation, & declared
unto them that Gospel which I preach among
the Gentiles, but partic' larly to them that
were the chief, lest by any means I should
have labored in vaine:

3 But neither yet Titus which was with
me though he were a Grecian, was compel-
led to be circumcised.

4 To wit, for the false brethren which
craftily crept in priuily to spie out our
liberty, which wee haue in Christ Iesus, that
they might bring vs into bondage.

5 To whom we gaue no place by subie-
ction for an houre, that the truth of the
Gospel might continue with you.

6 But by the which seemed to bee great,
I was not taught (whatsoever they were in
time passed, I am nothing the better: God ac-
cepteth no mans person) for they that are f
chief, did ad nothing to me about that I had.

7 But contrariwise, when they sawe that
the Gospel ouer the vncircumcision was cō-
firmed vnto me, as the Gospe! ouer f circum-
cision was vnto Peter:

mightie by me toward the Gentiles.

9 And when James and Cephas and I knew of the grace that was given me, we were counted to be pillars, they gave to me and to Barnabas the right hand of fellowship, saying we should preach vnto the Gentiles, and not vnto the circumcision.

10 *W*arning onlie that we should remember the poore, which thing also I was diligent to doe.

11 ¶ And when Peter was come to Antiochia, I with stood him to his face: for he was to be condemned.

12 For before that certaine came from James, he ate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himselfe, fearing them which were of the Circumcision.

13 And the other Iewes played the hypocrites likewise with him, in so much that Barnabas was led away with them by that hypocrisye.

14 But when I sawe that they went not the right way to the trueth of the Gospel, I said vnto Peter before all men, If thou be a Iewe, liuest as the Gentiles, and not like the Iewes, why constrainest thou the Gentiles to doe like the Iewes?

15 Wee *which* are Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Know that a man is not iustified by the works of the Lawe, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen we, I say, haue beleueed in Iesus Christ, that wee might bee iustified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the Lawe, because by the works of the Lawe flesh shall be iustified.

17 If then while wee seeke to bee

For if I builde againe the things that
were destroyed, I make my selfe a trespasser.
For I through the Law, am dead to
that I might liue vnto God.
For I am crucified with christ, but I liue,
not I any more, but Christ liueth in mee,
in that that I now liue in the flesh. I
by the faith in the Sonne of God, vvhich
loved me, and giuen himself for me.
I do not abrogate the grace of Gods
righteousnes bee by the Lawe, then
Christ died without a cause.

CHAP. III.

*Rebuketh them for suffering themselves to
be dravne from the grace of free iustification
by Christ, most lyuelie set out vnto them.*

Foolish Galatians, vvhich hath be-
witched you, that ye should not obey the
truth, to vvhom Iesus Christ before was
described in your sight, & among you crucified.
This only would I learne of you, Recei-
ue ye the Spirit by the vvhorks of the Lawe,
or by the hearing of faith preached: —

Are ye so foolish, that after ye haue be-
come in the Spirit, ye would now be made
perfect by the flesh?

Haue ye suffered so many things in vaine,
if so be it be, euen in vaine.

Hee therefore that ministreth to you in
the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you,
doth hee it through the works of the Lawe, or
by the hearing of faith preached?

Yea rather as Abraham beleued God,
it was imputed to him for righteousness.

Knowe ye therefore, that they which
are of faith, the same are the children of A-
braham.

For the Scripture foreseeing that God

10. To thee shall all the Gentiles be
11. So the they which be of faith, are
12. led with faithful Abraham.

13. For as many as are of the works of
Lawe, are vnder the curse: for it is written
Cursed is euery man that continueth not
all things, which are written in the booke
the Law, to doe them.

14. And that no man is iustified by
Law in the sight of God, it is euident: for
Iust shall liue by faith.

15. And the Lawe is not of faith: but
man that shall doe those things, shall liue
them.

16. Christ hath redeemed vs from the
curse of the Law, when he was made a curse
for vs (for it is written. Cursed is euery one
that hangeth on tree)

17. That the blessing of Abraham might
come on the Gentiles through Christ Iesus
that we might receiue the promise of the
Spirit through faith,

18. Brethren, I speake as mē doe: That
it be but a mans couenant, when it is com-
mited, yet no man doeth abrogate it; or add
any thing thereto.

19. Now to Abraham and his seede was
the promises made. Hee sayeth not, And
the seedes, as speaking of many: but, And
thy seede, as of one, Which is Christ.

20. And this I say, that the couenant
was confirmed afore of God in respect of
Christ, the Law which was foure hundred
and thirtie yeeres after, cannot disanul, that
it should make the promise of none effect.

21. For if the inheritance be of the Law
it is no more by promise, but God gaue
it by promise.

10. To thee shall all the Gentiles be
11. So the they which be of faith, are
12. led with faithful Abraham.
13. For as many as are of the works of
Lawe, are vnder the curse: for it is written
Cursed is euery man that continueth not
all things, which are written in the booke
the Law, to doe them.
14. And that no man is iustified by
Law in the sight of God, it is euident: for
Iust shall liue by faith.
15. And the Lawe is not of faith: but
man that shall doe those things, shall liue
them.
16. Christ hath redeemed vs from the
curse of the Law, when he was made a curse
for vs (for it is written. Cursed is euery one
that hangeth on tree)
17. That the blessing of Abraham might
come on the Gentiles through Christ Iesus
that we might receiue the promise of the
Spirit through faith,
18. Brethren, I speake as mē doe: That
it be but a mans couenant, when it is com-
mited, yet no man doeth abrogate it; or add
any thing thereto.
19. Now to Abraham and his seede was
the promises made. Hee sayeth not, And
the seedes, as speaking of many: but, And
thy seede, as of one, Which is Christ.
20. And this I say, that the couenant
was confirmed afore of God in respect of
Christ, the Law which was foure hundred
and thirtie yeeres after, cannot disanul, that
it should make the promise of none effect.
21. For if the inheritance be of the Law
it is no more by promise, but God gaue
it by promise.
Being del
Law, 4 by
thereof,
liggerly
gaine to
pe, 21 co
allegorie.

therefore then serueth the Law
because of the transgressions, till
it came vnto the which the promise
was made: and it was ordained by Angels in
the hand of a Mediatour.

Now a Mediatour is not a Mediatour
if but God is one,

If the Law then against the promises
God? God forbid: for if there had bene
a given which could haue giue life, sure-
ly righteousness should haue bene by the Law.

But the Scripture hath concluded all
in sin, that the promise by the faith of Ie-
sus Christ should be given to them which beleeue.

But before faith came, we were kept
vnder the Law, as vnder a garisō, & shut vp vnto
faith, which should afterward be reuelled.

Wherefore the Law was our schoole-
master to bring vs to Christ, that we might
be made righteous by faith.

But after that faith is come, we are no
longer vnder a schoolemaster.

For yee are all the sonnes of God by
faith in Christ Iesus:

For all ye that are baptized into Christ
are put on Christ.

There is neither Jew nor Grecia: there
is neither bond nor free: there is neither male
nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Iesus.

And if ye be Christes, then are ye A-
brahams seede and heires by promise,

CHAP. iiii.

Being deliueved from the bondage of the
Law, & by Christes coming, who is the ende
thereof, it is very absurd to seeke backe to
the heauy ceuementies: 13 He calleth them a-
gain to the puritie of the doctrine of the Gos-
pel, 21 confirmeth his discourse with a fine
allegorie.

Then

1
2 In a child, differeth nothing
3 though, he be Lord of al,
4 But is vnder tutors & gouernours
5 all the time appoynted of the father.
6 Euen so wee when vve were children
7 were in bondage vnder the rudiments of
8 world.

9 But when $\frac{1}{2}$ fulnesse of time was come
10 God sent foorth his Son made of a woman
11 made vnder the Law,

12 That he might redeeme them which
13 were vnder the Law, that we might receive
14 the adoption of the sonnes.

15 And because ye are sonnes, God hath
16 sent foorth the Spirit of his Sonne into
17 your hearts, which crieth, Abba, Father,

18 Wherefore thou art no more a seruant
19 but a sonne: now if *thou be* a sonne, *thou art*
20 also the heire of God through Christ.

21 But euen then, when yee knewe
22 God, yee did seruice vnto them, which
23 nature are not gods:

24 But now seeing ye know God, yee
25 the rare knowen of God, howe turne yee
26 againe vnto impotent and beggerly rudiments
27 where vnto as from the beginning, yee were
28 be in bondage againe?

29 Yee obserue dayes, and moneths, and
30 times, and yeeres.

31 I am in feare of you, lest I have be-
32 ued on you labour in vaine.

33 Be yee as I (for I am euen as you) brethren,
34 I beseech you: ye haue not hurt me at
35 all.

36 And ye know, how through infirmities
37 of the flesh I preached the Gospel vnto you
38 at the first.

39 And the triall of mee which is in
40 flesh, yee despised not neither abhorred:

...as an Angel of God, yet

What was then your felicitie? for I
your record, that if it had bene possible
would haue plucked out your own eyes
and given them vnto me.

Am I therefore become your enemy,
because I tell you the truth?

They are ielotts ouer you amisse: yea,
they would exclud you, that ye should al-
together loue them.

But it is a good thing to loue earnest-
ly in a good thing, & not only when
I am present with you.

My little children of whom I tra-
uaile againe vntill Christ be formed in you.

And I would I were with you now,
that I might change my voyce: for I am in
doubt of you.

Tell me, yet that wil be vnder the law,
do ye not heare the Law?

For it is written, that Abraham had
two soones, one by a seruant, and one by a
free woman.

But he which was of the seruant, was
borne after the flesh: and he which was of
the free woman, was borne by promise.

By the which things another thing
is meant: for these mothers are $\hat{\gamma}$ two Testa-
ments, the one which is Agar of mount Si-
nai, which begetteth vnto bondage.

(For Agar or Sinai is a mountaine in
Arabia, & it answereth to Hierusalem which
now is) and shee is in bondage with her
children.

But Ierusalem, which is aboute, is free:
which is the mother of vs al.

For it is written, Reioyce thou barren
that bearest no childre: breake forth, & cry,
for thou shalt haue many children: for shee desolate hath

¶ k many

TO THE GALATIANS
many no children, then she was his
husband.

28 Therefore brethren, we are after
manner of Isaac, children of the promise.

29 But as then he \bar{y} was borne after
flesh, persecuted him that was borne after
spirit, euen so it is now.

30 But what sayeth the Scripture? Put
the seruant and her sonne: for the son of
seruant shall not bee heire with the sonne
of the free woman.

31 Then brethren, wee are not children
of the seruant, but of the free woman.

CHAP.V.

1 Having declared \bar{y} we came of the free
woman he sheweth the price of that freedome.

2 and howe we should use the same,
that wee may obey the spirit, 19 and not
the flesh.

Stand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith
Christ hath made vs free, & be not
intangled againe with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say vnto you, that if ye
bee circumcised, Christ shall profite you
nothing.

3 For I testifie againe to euery mā, whether
he be circumcised, \bar{y} he is bound to keepe the
whole Law.

4 Ye are abolished from Christ: whoso
euer are iustified by the Law, are fallen from
grace.

5 For wee through the Spirit waite
the hope of righteousness through faith.

6 For in Iesus Christ neither circumcision
vailleth any thing, neither vncircumcision,
but faith which woorketh by loue.

7 Yee did runne well: who did let you
ye did not obey the trueth?

8 It is not the perswasion of him that
teach you.

...auen dodi ... the ...

... must in you through the Law
... will be none otherwise minded
... bleth you shall beare his condem-
... whoeuer he be,

And brethren, if I yet preach circum-
... why do I yet suffer persecution? The
... slander of the crosse abolished.
... Would to God they were cut off,
... doe disquiet you.

For brethren, ye haue bene called vnto
... onely vse not your libertie as an oc-
... into the flesh, but by loue serue one
... other.

For as the Law is fulfilled in one word,
... is this, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour
... thy selfe.

If ye bite & deuoure one another, take
... lest ye be consumed one of another.

Then I say, Walke in the Spirit, & ye
... not fulfill the lustes of the flesh.

For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit,
... the Spirit against the flesh, and these are
... one to the other, so that ye cannot do
... same things that ye would.

And if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are
... under the Law.

Moreover the workes of the Law are
... manifest, which are adultery, fornication,
... cleanness, wantonnesie,

Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, debate,
... rations, wrath, contentions, seditions,
... lies,

Enuie, murders, drunkennesie, glotonie
... such like, whereof I tell you before, as
... haue tolde you before, that they which
... such things, shall not inherite the king-
... of God.

But y^e fruites of the Spirit is loue, ioy
... peace,

TO THE GALATIANS

peace, long suffering, gentleness, go

13 Meeknesse; temperance: against
there is no Law.

14 For they that are Christes, have
not y^e flesh with the affections & y^e lusts

15 If we liue in y^e Spirit, let vs also walke
in the Spirit.

16 Let vs not bee desirous of vaine
glorie, prouoking one another, enuying one
another.

CHAP. VI.

1 Now he entreateth particularly of charitie
toward such as offend, 6 toward them
that are of y^e word, 10 & those that are of
the household of faith: 12 Not like vnto such
that haue a counterfeit zeale of the Law, 13
sparing in the mangling of the flesh,

Brethren, if a man be suddenly taken
with any offence. yee which are spiritual,
restore such one with the spirit of meeknesse,
considering thy selfe, lest thou also be
tempted.

2 Beare ye one anothers burden, and
so shall ye fulfill the Law of Christ.

3 For if any man seeme to him selfe,
that hee is some what when he is nothing, he
deceiueh himselfe in his imagination.

4 But let every man proue his own worke,
and then shall he haue reioycing in himselfe
only and not in another.

5 For every man shall beare his own
burden.

6 Let him that is taught in the word
make him that hath taught him partaker
of his goode.

7 Bee not deceived: God is not mocked:
for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he
also reape.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall

...that of y spirit reape life

Let vs not therefore be wearie of well doing: for in due season we shal reape, if we

While we haue therefore time, let vs do good vnto al me, but specially vnto them which are of the household of faith.

¶ Ye see howe large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine own hand.

As many as desire to make a faire show in the flesh, they constrain you to bee circumcised, only because they would not suffer reproach for the crosse of Christ,

¶ For they themselves which are circumcised, keepe not the Lawe, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they might reioyce in your flesh.

But God forbid that I should reioyce in the crosse of our Lorde Iesus Christ, whereby the world is crucified vnto me, & I vnto the world?

For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature.

And as many as walke according to the rule, peace shalbe vpon them, and mercy vpon the Israel of God,

From hence forth let no man put me in bondage: for I beare in my body y marks of the Lord Iesus.

Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

Vnto the Galatians written from Rome

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL.
to the Ephesians.
CHAP. I.

After the salutation, & he entreateth of the
K k 3

from whence mans salvation cometh
the true and manerall fountaine and
so high a mystery cannot be vnderstood
he praiesh y^e the ful 2^d knowledge of the
may by God be reueiled vnto the Ephe

P And an Apostle of Iesus Christ by
will of God, to the Saints which are
at Ephesus, & to y^e faithfull in Christ
Iesus:

1 Grace be with you, & peace from God
our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 Blessed bee God, and the Father of
Lord Iesus Christ, which hath blessed vs
all spirituall blessing in heavenly things
Christ,

4 As he hath chosen vs in him, before the
foundation of the world, that we should be
holy, and without blame before him in love

5 Who hath predestinate vs. to be adopted
through Iesus Christ in himselfe, according
to the good pleasure of his will,

6 To the prayse of the glory of his grace
wherewith he hath made vs freely accept
in his beloved,

7 By whom we haue redemption through
his blood, euen the forgivensse of sinnes,
according to his rich grace:

8 Whereby he hath bene abundant
ward vs in al wisdome and vnderstanding

9 And hath opened vnto vs the mysterie
of his will according to his good pleasure
which hee had purposed in him,

10 That in the dispensation of the ful
of the times, hee might gather together
one al things, both which are in heauen,
which are in earth, euen in Christ:

11 In whom also wee are chosen when
wee were predestinate according to the pur
pose of him which worketh al things after

...which first trusted in Christ,
...be vnto the praise of his glory:
...in whom also ye have trusted, after
...the word of truth, even the Gospel
...saluation, whercin also after that ye
...Christ by the holy Spirit,
...which is the promise,
...Which is the earnest of our inheritance,
...the redemption of that libertie purcha-
...vnto the praise of his glory,
...Therefore also after that I heare of the
...which ye haue in the Lord Iesus, and
...toward al the Saints,
...I cease not to giue thanks for you,
...making mention of yo^r in my prayers, —
...That the God of our Lorde Iesus
...that father of glory, might giue vnto
...the Spirit of wisdome, and reuelation
...through the acknowledging of him,
...That the eyes of your vnderstanding
...may be lightened, that ye may knowe what
...hope is of his calling, & what the riches
...of his glorious inheritance is in the Saints,
...And what is the exceeding greatnesse
...his power toward vs, which beleene, ac-
...cording to the working of his mightie power,
...Which hee wrought in Christ, when
...he raised him from the dead, and set him at
...his right hand in the heavenly places,
...Farre aboue al principallitie, and power
...might, & domination, & every Name, the
...named, not in this world onely, but also in
...that is to come,
...And hath made al things subiect vnder
...his feete, and hath giuen him ouer all things
...the head to the Church,
...Which is his body, the fulnesse of
...that filleth al in al things.

CHAP. 11.

1 The better to set out the grace of Christ
with a comparison, calling them to remembrance
that they were altogether cast a way
all 11: 2 That they are saved by grace
brought were. 16 by reconciliation through
Christ, 17 published by the Gospel.

And you hath he quickened, that were
dead in trespasses and sinnes,

2 Wherein in time past ye walked, according
to the course of this world, and after the
prince that ruleth in the aire, even the spirit
that now worketh in the children of disobedience,

3 Among whom we also had our conversation
in time past in the lusts of our flesh,
fulfilling the will of the flesh, and of the
minde, and were by nature the children of
wrath, as well as others.

4 But God which is rich in mercie, through
his great loue wherewith he loved vs.

5 Euen when we were dead by sinnes,
hath quickened vs together in Christ,
whose grace yee are saved.

6 And hath raised vs vp together, and
made vs sit together in heavenly places
through Christ Iesus.

7 That he might shewe in the ages to come
the exceeding riches of his grace through
his kindnes towards vs in Christ Iesus.

8 For by grace are yee saved through faith,
and that not of your selues: it is the gift
of God,

9 Not of workes, lest any man should
boast himselfe.

10 For wee are his workmanship created
in Christ Iesus vnto good workes, which
God hath ordeined, that we should walke
in them.

11 Wherefore remember, that ye be
chosen in Christ Iesus before the foundation
of the world, that ye should be holy and
without blame in his sight, by the word
of the truth, that ye should bring forth
the fruit of good workes, which God hath
ordeined, that ye should walke in them.

Gentiles in the flesh, and called
partition of them, which are called cir-
cumcision in the flesh, made with hands.

13 That ye were, I say, at that time with-
out Christ, and were aliens from the com-
monwealth of Israel, & were strangers from
the covenants of promise, and had no hope,
and were without God in the world.

14 But now in Christ Iesus, ye which once
were farre off, are made neere by the blood
of Christ.

15 For he is our peace, which hath made
both one, and hath broken the stoppe of
the partition wall.

16 In abrogating through his flesh γ ha-
th that is, the Law of commandments
which standeth in ordinances, for to make
of twaine one newe man in himselfe, some-
thing peace.

17 And that hee might reconcile both un-
der God in one body by his crosse, & slay ha-
tred thereby,

18 And came, & preached peace to you
which were as farre off, & to them that were
neere.

19 For through him wee both haue an ac-
cess vnto the Father by one Spirit.

20 Now therefore ye are no more stran-
gers & forreiners, but citizens with γ Saints,
of the household of God,

21 And are built vpon the foundation of
Apostles & Prophets, Iesus Christ himselfe
being the chiefe corner stone.

22 In whom all the building coupled toge-
ther, groweth vnto an holy Temple in γ Lord,

23 In whom ye also are built together, to
be the habitation of God by the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

He declareth that therefore he suffered many
things of the Iewes, & because he preached
the

the myſterie touching the ſaluation
Gentiles, 8 at Gods commaundment.

For this cauſe, I Paul am the priſoner of
Ieſus Chriſt for you Gentiles,

2 If yee haue heard of the diſpenſation of
the grace of God, which is giuen me to you
ward,

3 That is, that God by reuelation hath ſhew-
ed this myſterie vnto me, (as I wrote be-
boue in fewe words.

4 Whereby when ye read, yee may know
mine vnderſtanding in the myſtery of Chriſt)

5 Which in other ages was not opened
vnto the ſonnes of men, at it is now reueled
vnto his holy Apoſtles and Prophets by the
Spirit

6 That the Gentiles ſhould bee inheritors
also, and of the ſame body, and partakers of
his promiſe in Chriſt by the Goſpel.

7 Whereof I am made a miniſter by the
giſt of Gods grace of God giue vnto me through
the effectual working of his power.

8 Even vnto mee the leaſt of al Saints in
this grace giuen, that I ſhould preach among
the Gentiles Gods vnſearchable riches of Chriſt

9 And to make cleare vnto all men what
the fellowſhip of the myſterie is, which from
the beginning of the world hath bene hid in
God, who hath created all things by Ieſus
Chriſt,

10 To the intent, that nowe vnto prin-
cipalities & powers in heauenly places, might
be knowen by the Church the manifold wiſ-
dome of God,

11 According to Gods eternal purpoſe, which
he wrought in Chriſt Ieſus our Lord:

12 By whom wee haue boldneſſe & ac-
ceſſe with confidence by faith in him.

13 Wherefore I deſire that yee faint not

14 For the
the father of
15 (Of w
heaven
16 That h
riches of h
ord by his Sy
17 That
by faith
18 That
alone, may
Saints, what
depth, and he
19 And t
pulleth know
al fulnes of
20 Vnto
exceeding al
or thinke ac
leth in vs,
21 Be pr
fa, through
Theſe three
matters. 1
loue. 7 St
of God. 1
18 He ca
infidels, 2
Therefo
pray you
ation whe
2 With
meke neſſe
meanor he
3 Ende
Spirit in t
4 There

...ious for your sakes, which is

For this cause I bow my knees vnto
the father of our Lord Iesus Christ,

15 (Of whom is named the whole fami-
lie in heauen and in earth)

16 That he might grant you according to
the riches of his glory, y^e ye may be strengthe-
ned by his Spirit in the inner man,

17 That Christ may dwel in your hearts
by faith:

18 That ye, being rooted and ground-
ed in love, may bee able to comprehend with all
senses, what is the breadth, and length, and
depth, and height:

19 And to know y^e love of Christ, which
passeth knowledge, that ye may be filled wth
the fulnes of God.

20 Vnto him therefore that is able, to doe
exceeding abundantly aboue al y^e wee aske
or thinke according to the power that wor-
keth in vs,

21 Be praise in the Church by Christ Ie-
sus, throughout al generations for euer, Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

*These three last chapters containe precepts of
manners. 1 Hee exhorteth them to mutual
love. 7 Sundry giftes are therefore bestowed
of God. 10 that the Church may be built up*

18 He calleth them from the vanitie of the
infidels, 25 from lying. 29 fro filthy talke

Therefore, being prisoner in the Lorde,
I pray you that ye walke worthy of the vo-
cation whereunto ye are called,

2 With all humblenesse of minde, and
meekenesse, with long suffering, supporting
one another through love,

3 Endeavouring to keepe the vnitie of the
Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There is one body, and one Spirite, eue

we are called in one hope of glory.

5 There is one Lord, one Faith, one Baptism,

6 One God, and Father of all, which ruleth all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But vnto every one of vs is giuen grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he sayeth, When hee ascended vp on high, he led captiuitie captiue, & gaue gifts vnto men.

9 (Now in that he ascended, what is it but that he had also descended first into the lowest partes of the earth? —)

10 Hee that descended, is euen the same that ascended farre aboue all heauens, & hee saith, I haue filled all things)

11 Hee therefore gaue some to be Apostles, and some prophets, & some Euangelists, and some Pastors and Teachers.

12 For the repairing of the Saints, for the worke of the ministry, & for the edification of the body of Christ,

13 Til wee all meete together (in the unity of faith and acknowledging of the Son of God) vnto a perfite man, & vnto the fulfille of the age of the fulnesse of Christ.

14 That we henceforth be no more children wauering and caried about with euery wind of doctrine, by the deceite of men, and with craftinesse whereby they lay in wait to deceiue.

15 But let vs folow the truth in love, & all things grow vp into him, which is the head of the Church, which is Christ,

16 By whom all the body being coupled & knit together by every ioynt, for the function thereof (according to the effectual power which is in the measure of every part) receiue

17 With increase of the body, vnto the edifying

10. This I say therefore and testifie in this
that yee henceforth walke not as o-
 Gentiles walke in vanitie of their mind
11. Hauling their vnderstanding darkened,
being strangers from the life of God
through the ignorance that is in the because
of the hardnesse of their heart. —

12. Which being past feeling, haue giuen
themselves vnto wantonnesse to worke all
filthinesse, ~~euens~~ with greedinesse, —

13. But ye haue not so learned Christ,
14. If so be yee haue heard him, and haue
been taught by him, as the truth is in Ios

15. That is, that yee cast off, concerning
corruption in time past, that old man which
is corrupt through the deceivable luster.

16. And bee renewed in y^e spirit of your
knowledge,

17. And put on the new man, which is
created vnto righteousnesse, and true
holinesse. —

18. Wherefore cast off lying, & speake
every man truth vnto his neighbour: for wee
are members one of another. —

19. Be angry but sinne not: let not y^e sunne
goe downe vpon your wrath.

20. Neither giue place to the deuill. —

21. Let him that stole, steale no more: but
let him rather labour, and worke with his
hands the thing which is good, that he may
be able to giue vnto him that needeth.

22. Let no corrupt communication proceed
out of your mouthes: but that which is good
in the vse of edifying, that it may minister
grace vnto the hearers.

23. And grieue not the holy Spirit of
God, by whom ye are sealed vnto the day of
redemption.

TO THE EPHESIANS.

redemption.

31 Let all bitternesse, and anger, & wrath, crying, and euil speaking bee put away from you, with all malicioufnesse.

3 Be yee courteous one to another, and tender hearted freely forgiving one another, euen as God for Christs sake freely forgau you.

CHAP.V.

3 *Left, in those vices & which he reprehended, they should set light by his admonitions, & terrifieth them by denouncing seuerer iudgment: & and stirreth them forward: 15 the he descendeth from generall lessons of maxims. 1 to the particular duties of wiues 25 and husbands:*

BE yee therefore followers of God as deare children.

2 And walke in love, euen as Christ hath loved vs, and hath given himselfe for vs to be an offering & a sacrifice of a sweete smelling fragrance to God.

3 Let fornication, and all uncleannesse, & covetousnesse, let it not be once named among you, as it becommeth Saints.

4 Neither filchinesse. neither foolish talking, neither iesting: Which are things uncomely, but rather giuing of thanks.

5 For this ye know, that no whore nor person, nor couetous person, which is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceiue you with vaine wordes: for, for such things cometh the wrath of God vpon the children of disobedience.

7 Be not therefore companions with the

8 For ye were once darkenesse, but are now light in the Lord: walke as children of light.

9 (For the fruite of the Spirit is in all goodnesse, and righteousnesse, and truth)

CHAP. V.

Appoynting that which is pleasing to

11 And haue no fellowship with the vn-
fruitfull works of darknes, but euen reprove

12 For it is shame euē to speake of \bar{y} things
which are done of them in secret,

13 But all things when they are reprinted
of the light, are manifest: for it is light that
maketh all things manifest.

14 Wherefore hee saith. Awake thou
that sleepest and stand vp from the dead, and
Christ shall giue thee light.

15 Take heede therefore that ye walke
circumspectly, not as fooles, but as wise,

16 Redeeming the season: for the dayes
of God are few.

17 Wherefore be ye not vniuersally, but vn-
derstand what the will of the Lord is,

18 And bee not drunken wth wine, where-
of is excess: but be fulfilled with \bar{y} Spirit,

19 Speaking vnto your selues in Psalmes,
Hymnes, & spiritual songs, singing & ma-
king melodie to the Lord in your hearts,

20 Giuing thanks alwayes for all things
vnto God, euen the Father, in the Name of
our Lord Iesus Christ.

21 Submitting your selues one to another
in the feare of God.

22 \bar{y} Wines, submit your selues vnto your
husbands, as vnto the Lord.

23 For the husband is the wifes head,
as Christ is the head of the Church, and
same is the saviour of his body.

24 Therefore, as the Church is in subie-
ction to Christ, euen so let the wifes be to
their husbands in euery thing.

25 \bar{y} Husbads, loue your wifes euē as Christ
loved \bar{y} Church, and gaue himselfe for it.

26 That he might sanctifie it, & cleanse it

by

by the washing of water through the word

17 That he might make it unto himselfe
a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrinkle
or any such thing: but that it should be
and without blame.

18 So ought men to loue their wives
their owne bodies: he f loueth his wife
with himselfe.

19 For no man euer yet hated his owne
flesh, but nourisheth and cherisheth it,
as the Lord doeth the Church.

20 For wee are members of his body,
his flesh, and of his bones.

21 For this cause shall a man leaue father
and mother, and shall cleaue to his wife,
they twaine shal be one flesh.

22 This is a great secret, but I speake
concerning Christ, and concerning the Church.

23 Therefore euery one of you, doe ye
let euery one loue his wife, euen as himselfe
and let f wife see that she feare her husband

CHAP. VI

1 *Hoshereth the duties of children. 5 seruants
9 and masters: 10 Then he speaketh of
perce buttell that the faithfull haue, 13
what weapons we must use in the same:
In the end hee commendeth Tychicus.*

Children, obey your parents in f Lord
for this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother, (which
is the first commandement with promise)

3 That it may be wel with thee, & that
thou mayest liue long on earth.

4 And ye, fathers, prouoke not your children
to wrath: but bring them vp in instruction
and information of the Lord.

5 Seruants, be obedient vnto them that
are your masters, according to the flesh,
feare & trembling in singlenesse of your heart
vnto Christ.

...service to the Lord, as the
servants of Christ, doing
the will of God from the heart.
...with good will serving the Lord, and

And know yee that whatsoever good
any man doeth, that same shall he re-
ceive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.
And yee masters, doe the same things
unto them, putting away threatening: and
know that even your master also is in hea-
ven: neither is there respect of person with him.
Finally, my brethren, be strong in the
Lord, and in the power of his might.
Put on the whole armour of God,
that ye may be able to stand against the as-
saults of the devil.

For we wrestle not against flesh and
blood, but against principalities, against pow-
ers, against the worldly governours, the
high of this worlde, against spiri-
tuall wickednesses, which are in
high places.

For this cause take unto you the whole
armour of God, that ye may be able to resist
the evil day, & having finished all things,
stand fast.

Stand therefore, and your loynes gird
about with verity, and having on the
plate of righteousness,

And your feet shod with the prepa-
ration of the Gospel of peace.

Above all, take the shield of faith,
with which ye may quench all the fiery darts
of the wicked.

And take the helmet of salvation, & the
sword of the Spirit, which is the worde, of

And pray alwaies with all manner pray-
er, in the Spirit: and watch

L I there-

TO THE PHILIPPIANS
Greeting for all Saints,

19 And for me, that utterance may be
sent vnto me, & I may open my mouth
freely to publish the secret of the Gospel.

20 Whereof I am made & ambassage
in bonds, & therein I may speake boldly
ought to speake.

21 But that ye may also know
fares and what I doe, Tychicus my
brother & faithful minister in the Lord
shew you of al things.

22 Whom I haue sent vnto you for
same purpose, that ye might know
fares, and that he might comfort you.

23 Peace be with the brethren,
with faith from God the father, and from
Lord Iesus Christ.

24 Grace be with al them which love
Lord Iesus Christ, to their immortallitie,

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Ephe-
sians, and sent by Tychicus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL
to the Philippians,

CHAP. I.

3 Having testified his godly, and tender
affection towards the Philippians, 12 he
treateth of himselfe, and his bonds: 13
pricketh them forward by his own example
27 & exhorteth them to unite. 28 & praiseth

PAUL and Timotheus the seruants of
IESVS CHRIST; to al the Saints
Christ Iesus which are at Philippi,
the Bishops and Deacons:

1 Grace be with you, and peace from
our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 I thanke my God having you in my

ance in all my prayers foral you,
y me with gladnesse)

Gospel, because of the fellowship which ye
ambassadors in the Gospel, frō & first day vnto now
ake boldy, and I am perswaded of this same thing

know me it vntil the day of Iesus Christ,

icis my because I haue you in remembrance, that

the Lord in my bondes, and in my defence, and

you for the furtherance of the Gospel, you al were par-

now me of my grace.
ort your For God is my record, how I long af-

thren, and from the very heart roote in Iesus
r, and for all.

And this I pray, that your loue may a-
which loue and yet more and more in knowledge, &
ortallie, and all iudgement.

10 That yee may allowe those things
the Epistles which are best, that ye may be pure, & with-
out offence vnto the day of Christ,

AVL 11 Filled with the fruits of righteousness,
which are by Iesus Christ vnto the glory &
praise of God.

12 I woulde yee vnderstood, brethren,
that the things which haue come vnto mee,

rendered rather to the furthering of the
13 Gospel.

14 So & my bands in Christ are famous
15 throughout all the iudgement hall, and in all

28 & in other places,

16 Inasomuch that many of the brethren
the Lord are boldned through my hands,

the Sainct dare more frankly speake the word.
Philippi 17 Some preach Christ euen through en-

18 and strife, and some also of good wil.
19 The one part preacheth Christ of cō-

20 fus Christian, and not purely, supposing to adde
21 an imposition of affliction to my bandes.

22 But

TO THE PHILIPPIANS

17 But the others of Ioue, knowing
I am set for the defence of the Gospel.

18 What then? yet Christ is preached in
maner of wayes, whether it be vnder a pre-
sence, of sincerely: and I therein ioy: yea, &
I wil ioy.

19 For I know that this shal turne to my
saluation through your praier, and by the
helpe of the Spirit of Iesus Christ,

20 As I feruently looke for, and hope
that in nothing I shalbe ashamed, but that
with al confidence, as alwaies, so now christ
shalbe magnified in my body, whether it be
by life, or by death.

21 For Christ is to me both in life, and in
death aduantage.

22 And whether to liue in the flesh were
profitable for me, and what to chuse I know
not.

23 For I am distressed betweene both
desiring to be loosed and to be with Christ
which is best of all.

24 Neuerthelesse, to abide in the flesh, is
more needeful for you.

25 And this am I sure of, that I shal abide
and with you all continue, for your further-
ance and ioy of your faith,

26 That yee may more abundantly re-
ioyce in Iesus Christ for me, by my comming
to you againe.

27 Onelie let your conuersation be as it
becommeth the Gospel of Christ, that whe-
ther I come and see you, or els be absent,
may heare of your matters that ye continue
in one Spirit, and in one minde, fighting to-
gether through the faith of the Gospel,

28 And in nothing feare your aduersaries
which is to them a token of perdition, and to
you of saluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen for Christ

for his sake.

10 Having the same fight, which yee gave
me, and now heare so be in me.

CHAP. II

1 He exhorteeth them aboute all things. 3. 10

humility, 6 & that by the example of christ

2 There be therefore any consolation in

christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellow-

ship of the Spirit, if any compassion & mercy.

3 Fulfill my joy, that ye be like minded,

having the same love, being of one accord,

and of one iudgement,

4 That nothing be done through contenti-

on, or vaine glorie, but that in meekenes of

minde euery man esteeme other better then

himselfe.

5 Looke not euery man on his owne

things, but euery man also on the things of

other men.

6 Let the same minde be in you that was

in christ Iesus,

7 Who being in the forme of god, thoughte

it no robbery to be equal with God:

8 But he made himselfe of no reputation,

and tooke on him the forme of a seruant, &

was made like vnto men, and was founde in

shape as a man.

9 He humbled himselfe, and became obs-

edient vnto the death, euen the death of the

croffe.

10 Wherefore God hath also highly ex-

alted him, and giuen him a Name aboute e-

uery Name,

11 That at the Name of Iesus should e-

uery knee bow, both of things in heauen, &

things in earth, and things vnder the earth,

12 And that euery tongue should confes-

sion that Iesus christ is the Lorde, vnto the glory

of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloved, as ye have
alwayes obeyed mee, not as in my pre-
sence onely, but now much more in mine absence,
so make an end of your owne saluation with
feare and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you
both the wil and the deede, *euen* of his
pleasure.

14 Doe all things without murmuring
and reasonings.

15 That yee may be blamelesse, and
as the sonnes of God without rebuke in the
middles of a naughty and crooked nation,
among whom yee shine as lights in γ world.

16 Holding forth γ word of life, γ I
reioyce in the day of Christ, that I have
runne in vaine neither haue laboured in vaine.

17 Yea, and though I be offered vpon
the sacrifice, and serue of your faith, I
glad, and reioyce with you al.

18 For the same cause also be ye glad,
reioyce with mee.

19 And I trust in the Lord Iesus, to see
Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I also
may haue of good comfort, whē I know your
state.

20 For I haue no man like minded, who
will faithfully care for your matters.

21 For all seeke their own and not the
which is Iesus Christs.

22 But ye know the prooffe of him, that
a son with the father, he hath serued
to the Gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to sende shortly
as I know how it wil goe with me.

24 And trust in the Lorde, that I also
my selfe shal come shortly.

25 But I supposed it necessarie to send
brother Epaphroditus vnto you, my
panion in labour, and fellow souldier,
your messenger, and hee that ministered

as I wanted.
he longed after all you, & was full
of griefe, because ye had heard, that he
was sicke.

And no doubt hee was sicke, very
nigh vnto death: but God had mercy on him
not on him onely, but on me also lest I
should haue sorow vpon sorow.

I sent him therefore y more diligently,
that ye should see him againe, yee might
reioyce, and I might be the lesse sorowful.

Receiue him therefore in y Lord with
kindnesse, and make much of such:

because that for the worke of Christ
he was neere vnto death, and regarded not
his life, to fulfil that service which was lack-
ing on your part toward mee.

CHAP. III.

*Herfuseth the vaine boasting of the false
apostles, 7 and setteth Christ against them.*

Moreouer, my brethren, reioyce in the
Lord. It grieueth mee not to write y
things to you, and for you it is a sure

1 Beware of dogges: beware of euil wor-
men: beware of the concision.

2 For wee are the circumcision, which
worship God in y spirit, & reioyce in Christ
Jesus, I haue no confidence in the flesh:

3 Though I might also haue confidence in
the flesh, If any other man thinketh y he hath
whereof he might trust in the flesh, much
more I.

4 Circumcised y eight day, of the kindred
of Israel of the tribe of Benjamin, an E-
brew of the Ebrewes by y law a Pharise.

5 Concerning zeale, I persecuted the
Church: touching the righteousness which
in the Law, I was vnbukeable.

6 But y things that were vantage vnto me
the

the same I counted losse for christ.
2 Yea, doubtlesse, I thinke all things losse for the excellent knowledge of christ Iesus my Lord, for whom I haue counted all things losse, and do iudge them so to be doing, that I might win christ. —

3 And might be found in him, that is, not having mine owne righteousness, which is of the Lawe, but that which is through the faith of christ, ~~even~~ the righteousness which is of God through faith, —

4 That I may knowe him, and the veritie of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his afflictions, and be made conformable vnto his death, —

5 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the resurrection of the dead.

6 Not as though I had already attained to it, either were already perfect: but I follow, if I may comprehend that for what sake also I am comprehended of christ Iesus.

7 Brethren, I count not my selfe, that I haue attained to it, but one thing I do. I forget that which is behinde, & endeavour myselfe vnto that which is before,

8 And follow hard toward the mark, for the price of the hie calling of God in christ Iesus.

9 Let vs therefore as many as bee perfect be thus minded: and if ye be otherwise minded, God shal reuile euē the same vnto you.

10 Neuerthelesse, in that whereunto we are come, let vs proceede by one rule, that we may minde one thing.

11 Brethren, be followers of me, & look on them which walke so, as ye haue vs for an ensample,

12 For many walke of whom I haue told you often, and now tell you weeping, they are the enemies of the crosse of christ.

13 Who

whose ende is damnation, whose God
is bellic, and whose glorie is to their
name, which mind earthly things.

But our conuersation is in heauen, from
whence also we looke for the Sauour, even
the Lord Iesus christ.

Who shall change our vile body, & it
may be fashioned like vnto his glorious body
according to the working, whereby hee is a-
ble euen to subdue al things vnto himselfe.

CHAP. iiii.

From particular exhortations. 4 hee com-
meth to general. 10. He sayth that he tooke
such ioy in their readinesse to liberalitie. 12
That he wil patiently beare the want.

Therefore, my brethren, beloved and
longed for, my ioye and my crowne, con-
tinue in the Lord, ye beloved.

I praie Euodias, and beseech Syntyche,
that they be of one accord in the Lord.

Yea, and I beseech thee, faithful yoke-
fellow, helpe those women, which laboured
with me in the Gospel, with Clement also,
and with other my fellow labourers, whose
names are in the booke of life.

Reioyce in the Lorde alway, againe I
say reioyce.

Let your patient minde be knownen vnto
all men. The Lord is at hand.

Be nothing careful but in al things let
your requests be shewed vnto God in pray-
er and supplication with giuing of thanks.

And the peace of God which passeth al
vnderstanding, shal preserue your hearts and
knees in christ Iesus.

Furthermore, brethren, whatsoeuer things
are true, whatsoeuer things are honest, what-
soeuer things are iust, whatsoeuer things are
worthy loue, whatsoeuer things are of good reporte, if
there

If there be any vertue, or if there be any
praise, thinke on these things,

9 Which ye haue both learned & recei-
ued, and heard and seene in me: those things
do & the God of peace shalbe with you.

10 Now I reioyce also in the Lord great-
ly, that now at the last your care for mee
springeth afresh, wherein notwithstanding
ye were carefull, but ye lacked opportunity.

11 I speake not because of want. for I haue
learned in whatsoeuer state I am, therewith
to be content,

12 And I can be abased, and I can abound:
euery where in al things I am instructed, both
to be full, and to be hungry, and to abound, &
to haue want.

13 I am able to do all things through
the helpe of Christ, which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, ye haue wel done
that ye did communicate to mine affliction.

15 And ye Philippians know also that in
the beginning of the Gospel, when I depar-
ted from Macedonia no Church communica-
ted with me, concerning the matter of giuing
& receiuing, but ye onely,

16 For euen when I was in Thessalonica
ye sent once, and afterward againe for my
necessity.

17 Not that I desire a gift: but I desire
the fruit which may further your reckoning.

18 Now I haue receiued all, and haue
plentie: I was euen filled, after that I had re-
ceiued of Epaphroditus that which came from
you, an odour that smelleth sweet, a sacrifice
acceptable and pleasant to God.

19 And my God shal fulfill al your neces-
sities through his riches with glory in Iesu
Christ.

20 Vnto God euen our Father, be praise
for euermore Amen.

CHAP. III.
1. Salute all the Saints in Christ Iesus. The
which are with me, greet you.
2. All the Saints salute you, and most of
they which are of Cæsars householde.
3. The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ be
with you all. Amen.

Written to the Philippians from Rome,
and sent by Epaphroditus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO THE Colossians,

CHAP. I.

After the salutation, 4 he praiseth the
word, to make them attentive vnto him. 7
Hereporteth the testimonie of the doctrine
which they heard of Epaphras. He magnifieth
Gods grace towards them, 20 and sheweth
that all the parts of our saluation consist in
Christ alone,

Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by
wil of God, and Timotheus our bro-
ther.

2 To them which are at Colosse,
slaves, and faithfull brethren in Christ.
Grace be with you, and peace from God our
Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 We giue thanks to God, euen the Father
of our Lord Iesus Christ, alwayes praying for

4 Since we heard of your faith in
Christ Iesus, and of your loue toward all
saints,

5 For the hopes sake, which is layed vp
for you in heaven, whereof yee haue heard
before by the word of truth, which is the
gospel.

6 Which is come vnto you, euen as it is
vnto

unto all the world, and is fruitful, as it is
among you, from the day that ye
and truly knew the grace of God.

7 As yee also learned of Epaphras our
deare fellow seruant, which is for you
Faithful minister of christ:

8 Who hath also declared vnto vs your
loue in the Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we
heard of it, cease not to pray for you, and
desire that ye might be fulfilled with know-
ledge of his wil, in al wisdom, and spiritu-
al vnderstanding.

10 That ye might walke worthy of the
Lord, & please him in al things, being fruit-
ful in all good workes, and increasing in the
knowledge of God,

11 Strengthened wth al might through his
glorious power, vnto all patience, and long
suffering with ioyfulnesse,

12 Giving thanks vnto the Father, which
hath made vs meete to bee partakers of the
inheritance of the Saints in light,—

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the pow-
er of darkenesse, and hath translated vs into
the kingdome of his deare Sonne.—

14 In whom we haue redemption through
his blood, *that is*, the forgivenesse of sinnes.

15 Who is the image of the inuisible
God, the first begotten of euery creature.

16 For by him were all things created
which are in heauen, & which are in earth,
things visible and inuisible, whether they be
Thrones or Dominions, or Principallities, or
Powers, all things were created by him and
for him,

17 And he is before al things, and in him
all things consist.

18 And he is the head of the body of
the church; hee is the beginning, & the first

CHAP. I.

of the dead, that in al things he might
the preheminance.

19 For it pleased *the Father*, that in him
should all fulnesse dwell.

20 And through peace made by that blood
of that his crosse, to recuncile to himselfe
through him, through him, *I say*, all things
which are in earth, and which are in
heaven.

21 And you which were in times past
enemies, because your minds were
in euil works, hath he now also recõciled

22 In y body of his flesh through death
make you holy, and vnblameable, & with
out fault in his sight.

23 If yce continue grounded and stablished
in the faith, and be not moued away
from the hope of the Gospell, whereof yee
haue heard, and which hath bene preached
to every creature which is vnder heaven,
whereof I Paul am a minister.

24 Nowe reioyce I in my sufferings for
you, and fulfil the rest of the afflictions of
Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which
is the Church,

25 Whereof I am a minister, according to
the dispensation of God, which is given me
unto youward to fulfil the word of God,

26 Which is the mystery hid since the
worlde began, and from al ages, but nowe it
is made manifest to his Saints,

27 To whom God would make known
what is the riches of this glorious mysterie
among the Gentiles, which riches is Christ in
you, the hope of glory,

28 Whom we preach, admonishing every
man & teaching every man in al wisdomes;
that wee may present every man perfect in
Christ Iesus.

29 Whereunto I also labour & strive, ac-
cor-

TO THE COLOSSEANS

according to his working, which worketh in
me mightiely.

CH AP. II.

4 Hee condemneth, as vaine, whatsoever is
without Christ, 11 intreating specially of cir-
cumcision 16 of abstinence from meats, 18
and of worshipping of Angels. 20 That we
are deliuered from the traditions of the Law
through Christ.

FOR I would ye know what great fight-
ing I haue for your sakes, and for them
of Laodicea, & for as many as haue not seen
my person in the flesh.

2 That their hearts might be comforted
& they knit together in loue, & in al rich-
es of y ful assurance of vnderstanding to know
the mysterie of God, euen the Father, and
Christ:

3 In whom are hidde al the treasures
wisdome and knowledge,

4 And this I say, lest any man should be-
guile you with enticing words:

5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet
am I with you in the spirit, reioycing, & be-
holding your order, & your stedfast faith
in Christ,

6 As ye haue therefore receiued Christ
Jesus the Lord, so walke in him,

7 Rooted and built in him, and stablishe
in y faith, as ye haue bene taught, abound-
therein with thanksgiuing.

8 Beware lest there be any mā that spoyle
you through philosophy, and vaine deceits,
through the traditions of men according
y rudiments of y world, & not after Christ
9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse
the Godhead bodily.

10 And yee are complete in him, who
is the head of al principallitie and power,
11 In whom also yee are circumcised

circum-

CHAP. II

made without handes, by putting
of the sinful body, of the flesh, through
the circumcision of Christ,

12 In that ye are buried with him through
baptisme, in whō ye are also raised vp toge-
ther through the faith of the operation of
God, which raised him from the dead.

13 And you which were dead in sinnes,
& in the vncircumcision of your flesh, hath
he quickened to gether with him, forgiving
you all your trespasses,

14 And putting out the hand-writting of
ordinances that was against vs, which was
contrary to vs, hee euen tooke it out of the
way, and fastened it vpon the crosse,

15 And hath spoiled \forall Principalities, &
powers, & hath made a shew of thē openly,
& hath triumphed ouer thē in the same crosse.

16 Let no man therefore condemne you in
meat & drinke, or in respect of an holy day,
or of the new moone, or of \forall Sabbath dayes

17 Which are but a shadow of things to
come: but the body is in Christ.

18 Let no man at his pleasure beare rule
over you by humbleness of mind, and wor-
shipping of Angels, aduancing himselfe in
those things which he neuer saw, rashly puff-
ing up with his fleshly minde,

19 And holdeth not the head, whereof
all the body furnished and knit together by
synes and bands, increaseth with the increa-
sing of God.

20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ
from the ordinances of the worlde, why as
though ye liued in the world, are ye burde-
ned with traditions?

21 As, Touch not, Taste not, Handle not.

22 Which al perish with the vsing. & are

not the cōmandements and doctrines of me-

23 Which things haue indeed a shew of wis-

dom

to the Colossians
to voluntary religion and husbandry
of minde, & in not sparing the body, which
are things of no value, for they pertaine to
the filling of the flesh.

CHAP. iij.

1 Against earthly exercises which the false
apostles urged, 2 he setteth heavenly. 5. And
beginneth with the mortifying of the flesh
whence he draweth particular exhortations
x 8 and particular duties, which depend
each mans calling.

IF ye then be risen with christ, seeke those
things which are above, where christ sits
at the right hand of God.

2 Set your affections on things which are
above, and not on things which are on the
earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid
with Christ in God.

4 When Christ which is our life, shall ap-
pear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which
are on the earth, fornication, uncleannes, the
inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and
covetousnes which is idolatry.

6 For the which things sake ye wrath of
God cometh on ye children of disobedience.

7 Wherein ye also walked once, when ye
lived in them.

8 But now put ye away even all these
things, wrath, anger, maliciousnes, curse
speaking, filthy speaking, out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye
have put off the old man with his works.

10 And have put on the newe, which
is renewed in knowledge after the image of
him that created him.

11 Where is neither Grecian nor Jew, cir-
cumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian,
Scythian, bond, free; but Christ is all, & in
him.

Therefore as the elect of God
beloved, put on the bowels of mer-
cies, humbleness of minde, meeke-
nesse, long suffering:

Forbearing one another, & forgiving
one another, if any man haue a quarrel to a-
nother, as Christ forgave, even so do ye.
And aboue al these things, put on loue,
which is the bond of perfectnesse.

And let the peace of God rule in your
hearts, to which ye are called in one body,
that ye be thankfull.

Let the worde of Christ dwell in you
richly in all wisdom, teaching and
renewing your owne selues in Psalmes &
songs, and spirituall songs, singing with a
heart in your hearts to the Lord.

And whatsoever ye shall do, in word
or deed, doe all in the name of the Lord Iesus
Christ, in thanks to God our Father by him.
As Wives, submit your selues vnto your
husbands, as it is comely in the Lord.

Husbands, loue your wives, and be as
Christ, the Church, his body.

Children, obey your parents in the Lord,
for that is well pleasing vnto the Lord.
Fathers, prouoke not your children to
the Lord, lest they be discouraged.

Servants, be obedient vnto them that
are the Lords according to the flesh in the
Lord, not with eye service as men pleasers,
but with singleness of hearts, fearing God.

And whatsoever ye doe, doe it heartily
as to the Lord, and not to men.

Knowing that of the Lord ye shall
receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye
are the Lord Christ:

But he that doth wrong, shall receiue
the punishment thereof: as he that hateth
his neighbour shall hate himselfe, and
his neighbour shall hate him, as the Lord
hateth him.

TO THE COLONIANS.
And respect of persons.

CHAP. IIII.

2 He returneth to general exhortation
ching prayer, and gracious speech, 7
endeth with greetings and commendations.

YE masters, doe vnto your seruants
which is iust and equall, knowing
ye also haue a master in heauen.

3 Continue in prayer, and watching
f. me with thanksgiving,

4 Praying also for vs, that God may
vnto vs & doore of vterance, to speake
stery of Christ: wherfore I am also iob

5 That I may vter it, as it becometh
me to speake.

6 Walke wisely towarde them that
without, and redeeme the season.

7 Let your speech be gracious alway
powdred with salt, that yee may know
to answere euery man.

8 Tychicus our beloued brother & fa
ful minister, and fellow seruant in the Lo
shal declare vnto you my whole state,

9 Whome I haue sente vnto you for
same purpose that he might know your
and might comfort your hearts,

10 With Onesimus a faithfull and belo
brother, who is one of you. They shal sh
you of all things here.

11 Aristarchus my prison fellow salu
you, and Marcus Barnabas cousin (to wh
whom ye receiued commandements, if
come vnto you, receiue him).

12 And Iesus which is called Iustus, wh
are of the circumcision. These onely are
worke fellowes vnto the kingdome of G
which haue bene vnto my consolation.

13 Epaphras the seruant of Christ, wh
is one of you. saluteth you, and alwaies
ueth for you in prayers, that ye may ha

III.
portation
speech, 7.
commendat
ur servants
knowing
en.
d watchin
God may
to speake
n also in
it becom
them than
on.
us alway
ay know

and fulfill the will of God.
For I beare him record, that he hath a
role for you, and for them of Laodi-
and for them of Hierapolis.
14 Luke the beloued Thimion greets
and Demas.
15 Salute the brethren which are of Lao-
and Nymphas, and the church which is
his house.
16 And when this Epistle is read of you,
that it bee read in the church of the
Laodiceans also, and that ye likewise reade
the Epistle written from Laodicea.
17 And saye to Aichippus, Take heede to
the ministry, that thou hast receiued in the
Lord, that thou fulfill it.
18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul.
Remember my bandes. Grace be with you,
men,

other & fa
t in the L
e state,
to you for
ow your

Written from Rome to the Colossians, &
sent by Tychicus and Onesimus.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL
to the Thessalonians.

and belo
ey shal
low salu
sin (ouch
ents, if
ustus, wh
nely are
me of G
lation,
hrist, wh
lwaies
may

CHAP. I.

It therefore beginneth with thanksgiving
to put the in mind that whatsoever was
praise worthy in them, it came of Gods good-
ness. 8 & that they are examples vnto others
Paul and Siluanus, & Timotheus, vnto
Church of the Thessalonians, which
in God the Father, and in the Lord
Jesus Christ: Grace be with you, and
from God our Father, and from the
Lord Jesus Christ.
We giue God thanks alwaies for you
making mention of you in our prayers.

unto you the Gospel of God which
bringeth life.

For our exhortation was not by deceit
or uncleanness, nor by guile.

But as we were allowed of God, that
the Gospel should be committed unto us, so
we speak, not as they that please men, but
as which approueth our hearts.

Neither yet did we euer use flattering
words, as ye know, nor coloured counten-
ance, for God is recorder.

Neither sought we praise of men, nei-
ther of you, nor of others, when we might
haue bin chargeable, as the Apostles of christ

But we were gentle among you, such
as a nurse cherisheth her children.

Thus being affectioned towards you,
our good will was to haue dealt vnto you,
the Gospel of God only, but also our
owne soules, because ye were deare vnto vs.

For ye remember, brethren our labor
and trouble: for we laboured day & night,
because we would not bee chargeable vnto
you, and preached vnto you the gos-
pel of God.

Nowe Ye are witnesses, and God also, howe
truly, and iustly, and vnblameably wee be-
lieued our selues among you that beleeue.

As ye knowe howe that we exhorted
you, and comforted, and besought euery one
of you (as a father his children)

That ye would walke worthe of god
who hath called you vnto his kingdome and
perfection.

For this cause also thanke we God
ceasing, that when ye receiued y^e worde
of God, which ye heard of vs, ye receiued it
as the word of men, but as it is indeede
the worde of God, which also worketh in
you.

14 For brethren, ye are become followers of the Churches of God, which in Iudaea are in Christ Iesus, because ye have also suffered the same things of your owne country men, even as they have of the Iewes,

15 Who both killed the Lorde Iesus and their owne Prophets, and have persecuted away, and God they please not, and are contrary to all men,

16 And forbid vs to preach vnto the Gentiles, that they might be saued, to fulfil their finnes alwayes: for the wrath of God is come on them, to the vtmost.

17 Forasmuch brethren, as we were kept from you for a season, concerning sight, but not in the heart, we enforced the more to kiss your face with great desire:

18 Therefore we would haue come vnto you (I Paul at least once or twise) but Satan hindered vs.

19 For what is our hope or ioy, or crowne of reioycing, are not euen you it in the presence of our Lord Iesus Christ at his coming?

20 Yes, ye are our glory and ioy.

CHAP. III.

1 To shewe his affection towards them, he sendeth Timothie vnto them.

Wherefore since wee could no longer beare, we thought it good to remaine at Athens alone,

2 And haue sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our labour fellow in the Gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you touching your faith,

3 That no man should be moued with these afflictions: for yee your selues know that we are appoynted thereunto.

4 For verely when we were with you, we told you before y^e we should suffer tribulations, euen as it came to passe, & ye knew

for this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent him y^e I might know of your faith, leaſt the tempter had tempted you in any ſort, and that our labour had bene in vaine.

6 But now lately when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tydings of your faith & loue, and that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwaies, deſiring to ſee vs, as we alſo do you,

7 Therefore brethren, wee had conſolation in you, in all our afflictions and neceſſitie through your faith,

8 For now are we aloue, if ye ſtand faſt in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we recompence to God againe for you, for al the ioy whereof we reioyce for your ſakes before our God

10 Night & day, praying exceedingly y^e wee might ſee your face, and might accompliſh that which is lacking in your faith.

11 Now God himſelfe, euen our Father, and our Lord Ieſus Chriſt guide our iourney vnto you,

12 And the Lorde increaſe you, and make you abounde in loue one toward another, & toward all men, euen as we do toward you.

13 To make your hearts ſtable and vnſhakeable in holineſſe before God, euen our Father, at the comming of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt with al his Saints.

CHAP. iiii.

He exhorteth them 3 to holineſſe, 9 to brotherly loue. 13 He forbiddeth them 10 ſorrow after the manner of infidels.

And furthermore wee beſeech you brethren, and exhort you in the Lord leſt that yee increaſe more and more as yee are receiued of vs, how ye ought to wake, to pleaſe God.

1 For ye knowe what commaundment
we gaue you by the Lord Iesus.

2 For this is the will of God; even your
sanctification, and that ye should abstain from
fornication,

3 That euery one of you should knowe
how to possesse his vessel in holinesse & ha-
mour.

4 And not in the lust of concupiscence,
even as the Gentiles which know not God.

5 That no man oppresse or defraud his
brother in any matter: for the Lord is avenge-
ger of all such things, as wee also haue told
you before time, and testified.

6 For God hath not called vs vnto va-
cleannes, but vnto holinesse.

7 He therefore that despiseth these things,
despiseth not man, but God who hath en-
dowed you with his holy Spirit.

8 But as touching brotherly loue, ye need
not that I write vnto you: for ye are taught
of God to loue one another.

9 Yea, and that thing verely ye doe
to all the brethren, which are throughout
Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren,
ye increase more and more.

10 And that ye study to be quiet, and
to be idle with your own busines, & to worke
with your own hands, as we commaunded you
from the first.

11 That ye may behaue your selues
quietly toward them that are without, and
nothing bee lacking vnto you.

12 ¶ I would not, brethren, haue you
ignorant concerning them which are asleep,
that ye sorrow not euē as other which haue
no hope.

13 For if we beleene that Iesus is de-
scended, and is risen, euē so them which sleepe in
him, wil God bring with him.

14 For this say we vnto you: by

...that we which live, and are awake
in the coming of the Lord, shall
not them which sleepe.

For the Lord himselfe shall descend
in the cloudes with a shout, and with the
trumpet of the Archangel, and with the trumpet
of God: & ^{the} dead in Christ shall rise first.
Then shall we which live and remaine
be caught up with them also in the cloudes,
to meete the Lord in the ayre: and so shall
we ever be with the Lord.

Wherefore comfort your selves one
another with these words.

CHAP. V.

*condemning the curious searching for the
seasons of Christs coming. 6 hee warneth
them to be ready daily to receive him: 11 and
giveth them sundry good lessons.*

Of times & seasons, brethren ye have
no neede that I write vnto you.

For ye your selves know perfectly, that
the day of the Lord shall come, even as a
thief in the night.

For when they shall say, Peace, and sa-
fety, then shall come vpon them sudden de-
struction, as the travail vpon a woman with
child, and they shall not escape.

But ye brethren, are not in darknes, ^{for}
the day should come on you, as is wont to
be.

Ye are all the children of light, and the
children of the day: we are not of the night,
nor of darknesse.

Therefore let vs not sleepe as doe other,
but let vs watch and be sober.

For they that sleepe, sleepe in ^{the} night,
they that be drunken, are drunken in the
night.

But let vs which are of the day, be sober,
putting on the breast plate of faith, and love,

of the hope of saluation, for an hallow
For God hath not appoynted vs vnto
death, but to obtayne saluation by y^e means
of our Lord Iesus Christ, —

10 Which died for vs, that whether wee
wake or sleepe, wee should liue together
with him.

11 Wherefore exhort one another, and e-
ncomend one another, euen as ye doe, —

12 Now wee beseech you, brethren, that
ye acknowledge them, which labour among
you, and are ouer you in the Lorde, and ad-
monish you,

13 That yee haue them in singular love
for their works sake. Be at peace among your
selues,

14 We desire you, brethren, admonish the
that are out of order: comforte the feeble
minded: beare with the weake: be patient to-
ward all men.

15 See that none recompence euill for
euill vnto any man: but euer follow y^e which
is good, both toward your selues, & toward
all men.

16 Reioyce euermore.

17 Pray continually.

18 In all things giue thanks: for this
is the will of God in Christ Iesus toward you

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Despise not prophecyng,

21 Trye all things, & keep y^e which is good.

22 Abstaine from al appearance of euill.

23 Now the very God of peace sanctifie
you thorowout: & I pray God y^e your whole
spirit and soule & body, may be kept blame-
les vnto the coming of our Lord Iesus Christ

24 Faithfull is he which calleth you, and
wil also do it.

25 Brethren, pray for vs.

26 Greete al y^e brethren wth an holy kisse

I charge you in the Lord, that this
be read vnto all the brethren & Saints.
The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be
with you, Amen.

The first Epistle vnto the Thessalonians
written from Athens.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL to the Thessalonians.

CHAP. I.

He commendeth the increase of faith & cha-
ritie. 4 & y^e patience of the Thessalonians. 6
And describing Gods vengeance against
such as oppresse the godly. 10 he teacheth the
godly to vvaite for the last iudgement.

PAUL and Siluanus, and Timotheus vn-
to the Church of the Thessalonians,
which is in God our Father, and in
the Lord Iesus Christ:

Grace be with you, & peace from God
our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ:

3 Wee ought to thanke God alwayes for
you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your
labour groweth exceedingly, and the loue of
one one of you toward another aboundeth

4 So that we our selues reioyce of you in
the churches of God, because of your patience
and faith in all your persecutions and tribula-
tions that ye suffer,

5 Which is a manifest token of the righte-
ous iudgement of God, that ye may be count-
ed worthy of the kingdome of God, for y^e
which ye also suffer.

6 For it is a righteous thing with God, to
compence tribulation to them that trouble

And to you which are troubled rest. v^e

II. THE GALATIANS.

when the Lord Iesus shall shew himself from heaven with his mighty Angels.

8 In flaming fire, rending vengeance vnto the, y^e do not know God, & which obey not the Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 Which shall be punished with everlasting perdition, from the presence of the Lord, & from the glorie of his power.

10 When he shall come to bee glorified in his Saints, & to be made merueilous in all them that belecue (because our testimony toward you was beleueed) in that day.

11 Wherefore, we also pray alwayes for you, that our God may make you worthy of this calling, & fulfil all the good pleasure of his goodnes, & the work of faith wth power.

12 That the Name of our Lorde Iesus Christ may bee glorified in you, and yee in him, according to the grace of our God, of the Lord Iesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

2. He sheweth that the day of the Lorde is not come, til there be a departure from faith, 3. and that Antichrist be reueiled, whose destruction he setteth out, and then vpon exhorteth to constancie.

NOW we beseech you, brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, by our assembling vnto him,

1 That yee be not suddenly moued in your minde, nor troubled neither by spirit nor by vvorde, nor by letter, as it were vs, as though the day of christ were at hand.

2 Let no man deceiue you by any means for that day shall not come, except there be a departing first, & that man of sinne be disclosed, euen the sonne of perdition.

3 Which is an aduersary, and exalteth himself against al that is called God, or worshipped: so that he doth sit as God

of God, the way that he that
is God.

Remember ye not, that when I was yet
with you, I tolde you these things.

And now ye know what vntoldeth
might be reuelled in his time.

For the myſtery of iniquity doth alrea-
dy worke: only he vvhich now vwithhol-
deth ſhall let till he be taken out of the way.

And then ſhall that vvhicked man be re-
uelled, vvhome the Lorde ſhall conſume wth
the ſpirit of his mouth, and ſhall abolith vvh^{at}
his brightneſſe of his comming.

Even him vvhofe comming is by the ef-
fectual working of Satan, vvhith all power,
and ſignes, and lying vvhonders,

And in al deceiuablenes of vvhight-
nes, among the that periſh, becauſe they
reſuſed not the loue of the truth that they
might be ſaued.

And therefore God ſhall ſend them
a deluſion, that they ſhould beleue lyes.

That al they might be damned vvhich
reſuſed not the truth, but had pleaſure in
vvhightouſneſſe.

But vve ought to give thanks alway
to God for you, brethren, beloved of f lord,
becauſe that God hath from the beginning
choſen you to ſaluation, through ſanctifica-
tion of the Spirit, and the faith of truth.

Whereunto he called you by our goſ-
pel, to obtain f glory of our lord Ieſus chriſt.
Therefore brethren, ſtand faſt, & keep
the inſtructions vvhich yee haue bin taught
either by vvhord, or by our Epiſtle.

Now the ſame Ieſus chriſt our Lorde,
and our God, euen the Father vvhich hath
loved vs, and hath given vs everlaſting cō-
ſolation and good hope through grace,

Comfort your hearts, and ſtabliſh you

II. THE SACRAMENTS
in every word and good worke.

CHAP. III.

1 He desireth them to further the preaching
the Gospel with their prayers.

Furthermore brethren, praye for vs, that
the worde of the Lorde may haue free
passage, and be glorified, even as it is w^o you.

2 And that wee may be deliuered from
vnrasonable and euil men: for all men haue
not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithful, which will
bless you, and keepe you from euil.

4 And wee are perswaded of you through
the Lord, that yee both do, and wil doe the
things which we warne you of.

5 And the Lorde guide your hearts to the
loue of God, and the waiting for of Christ.

6 We warne you brethren, in the Name of
our Lord Iesus Christ, that ye wi^l draw you
selues from euery brother that walketh
inordinatly, & not after the instruction, which
he receiued of vs.

7 For ye your selues know, how ye ought
to follow vs: for we behaued not our selues
inordinatly among you,

8 Neither tooke we bread of any mans
labour: but wee wrought with labour in
trauaile night & day, because we would
be chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because we haue not authority, but
that wee might make our selues an example
vnto you to follow vs.

10 For euen when wee were with you,
this we warned you of, y^e if there were
which would not work, y^e he should not

11 For wee heare, that there are some
which walke among you inordinatly, and
work not at all, but are busie bodies.

12 Therefore them that are such, we
warne and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ

they worke with quietnesse, and eate
their owne bread.

13 And ye brethren, be not weary in well

14 If any man obey not this our saying
in this letter, note him, and haue no compa-
ny with him, that he may be ashamed:

15 Yet count him not as an enemy, but ad-
monish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord himselfe of peace giue
peace alwaies by all meanes. The Lorde
be with you all.

17 The salutation of me Paul, with mine
owne hande, which is the token in euery E-
pistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be
with you al. Amen.

The second Epistle to the Thessalonians,
written from Athens.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL to Timotheus.

CHAP. I.

Paul setteth forth a perfect paterne of a true
Pastor, whose office especially consisteth in
teaching.

Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the
commandement of God our Saviour, &
of our Lord Iesus Christ our hope.

2 Vnto Timotheus my naturall sonne in
the faith, Grace, mercy, & peace from God
our Father, and from Iesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still in E-
phesus, when I departed into Macedonia, so
that thou maist warne some, that they
teach none other doctrine,

4 Neither that they giue heede to fables
& genealogies which are endles, which breed
questions rather then godly edifying which
is by faith,

5 For the ends of the commandments are
loue out of a pure heart, & of a good con-
science, and of faith vnsained.

6 From the which things some haue erred,
and haue turned vnto vaine iangling.

7 They would be doctours of the Law,
& yee vnderstand not what they speak, nei-
ther whereof they affirme.

8 And we know that the Law is good, if
a man vse it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the Lawe is not giuen
vnto a righteous man, but vnto the lawlesse
and disobedient, to the vngodly, and to sin-
ners to the vnholy, and to the prophane,
murderers of fathers & mothers, to maisters,

10 To whoremongers, to buggerers, to ene-
mies, to liers, to the periured, & if there be
anie other thing, that is contrarie to whole-
some doctrine,

11 Which is according to y^e glorious Gospel
of the blessed God, which is committed vnto
me.

12 Therefore I thank him which hath made
me strug, that is Christ Iesus our Lord: for he
counted me faithful, & put me in his seruice.

13 When before I was a blasphemer, &
a persecuter, and an oppressor: but I was re-
turned to mercie: for I did it ignorantly
through vnbeliefe.

14 But the grace of our Lord was exceed-
ing abundant with faith & loue, which is in
Christ Iesus.

15 This is a true saying, and by all meanes
worthy to bee received, that Christ Iesus
came into the world to saue sinners, of whom
I am chiefe.

16 Notwithstanding, for this cause was
I returned to mercie, that Iesus Christ should
first shew on mee al long suffering vnto the
ex ample of the, which shal in time to come
be

unto eternal life
into the King everlasting, im-
possible, vnto God only wise, beho-
ur and glory, for euer and euer. Amen.

This commandement commit I vnto
Iohnne Timotheus, according to the pro-
phet, which went before vpon thee, that
by them shouldest fight a good fight.

Having faith and a good conscience,
which some haue put away, and as conscience
faith, haue made shipwracke.

Of whom is Hymeneus, & Alexander
whom I haue deliuere d vnto Satan, that they
learne not to blaspheme.

CHAP. II.

Exhorteth them to make publike prayers
for al men, 4.5 and that for two causes 3. 4
Therefore hee willesh all men in all places to
pray: and declareth in what apparell, & in what
modesty women ought so be-
haueth themselves in holy assemblie.

Exhort therefore, that first of all suppli-
cations, prayers, intercessions and giuing
thanks be made for al men,

For kings and for all that are in autho-
rity, that we may leade a quiet & a peacea-
ble life, in al godlinesse, and honestie,

For this is good and acceptable in the
sight of God our Sauour,

Who will that all men shal be saved, &
come vnto the acknowledging of the truth.

For there is one God, & one Mediator
betweene God, and man, which is the man,
Christ Iesus.

Who gave himselfe a ranfome for al
men, so be that testimonie in due time,

Whereunto I am ordeined a preacher
and an Apostle (I speake y^e truth in Christ,
and lie not) euen a teacher of the Gentiles in
the word and veritie.

Now I will

8 I wil therefore that y^e men pray, where lifting vp pure hands without wrath or doubting.

9 Likewise also the women, that they array themselves in comely apparel, with shamefastnes & modestie, not with broided haire, or golde, or pearles, or costly apparel.

10 But (as becommeth women y^e profess the feare of God) with good works.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with al subiection.

12 I permit not a woman to teach, neither to vsurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.

14 And Ada was not deceiued but y^e woman was deceiued, & was in y^e transgression.

15 Notwithstanding, through bearing children, she shal be saued, if they continue in faith, and loue, and holinesse with modestie.

CHAP. III.

2 He setteth out Bishops, & Christiā Deacons with their wines. 12 children & familie.

THIS is a true saying, If any man desireth y^e office of a Bishop, he desireth a worthy worke.

3 A Bishop therefore must be vnreprochable, the husband of one wife, watching, temperate, modest, harberous, apt to teach,

4 Not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthy lucre, but gentle, no fighter, not contentious.

5 One that can rule his owne house honestly, having children vnder obedience with holinesse.

6 For if any cannot rule his owne house, howe shal he care for the Church of God?

7 He may not be a youg scholler, lest being lifted vp, fall into the condemnation of the de: il.

also be well reported of, such
which are without, lest he fall into
the snare of the deuill,
Likewise *must* Deacons be graue, not
drongued, not giuen vnto much wine,
nor to filthy lucre.

Knowing the mystery of the faith in pure
conscience.

10 And let them first be prooued: the let
a minister, if they be found blamelesse,
Likewise their wines *must* be honest, not
speakers, but sober & faithful in althings
Let the Deacons be the husbands of
their wife, and such as can rule their children
and their owne households:

For they that haue ministred wel, gea
themselves a good degree, and great libertie
in the faith, which is in Christ Iesus.

14 These things write I vnto thee, trust
they to come very shortly vnto thee.

15 But if I tary long, that thou might
know, how thou oughtest to behaue thy
selfe in γ house of God, which is γ Church
of the liuing God the pillar & ground of truth
And without cōtrouersie, great is γ my
erie of godlinesse, which is, God is manifest
in flesh, iustified in the spirit, scene of An
gel, preached vnto the Gentiles beleened o
the world, and receiued vp in glorie.

CHAP. IIII

He condemneth as well false doctrines 3. of
marriage and the choice of meates 7. as also
of phane fables: 8 And commandeth the
dailie exercise, 13 and the dayly reading of
the Scripture.

NOW the Spirit speaketh evidently that
in the latter times some shall depart
from the faith, & shall giue heed vnto Spirits
of error, and doctrines of deuils.

Which speake, lies through hypocrisie &

N. n. a. h. u.

have their consciences burned with
iron,

3 Forbidding to marry, and commanding
to abstaine from meates which God hath cre-
ated to be receiued with giuing thanks
which beleene and know the truth.

4 For euery creature of God is good,
nothing ought to be refused, if it be receiued
with thanksgiuing,

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God
and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance
of these things, thou shalt be a good
minister of Iesus Christ, which hath bene-
fitted vp in y words of faith, & of good
works, which thou hast continually followed.

7 But cast away prophane and old
fables, and exercise thy selfe vnto godline.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth little,
godlines is profitable vnto all things, which
hath the promise of the life present, and
that that is to come.

9 This is a true saying, and by all men
worthy to be receiued.

10 For therefore wee labour and are
bucked because wee trust in the liuing God,
which is the Sauour of all men, specially
those that beleue.

11 These things warne and teach,

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but
vnto the that beleue, an ensample, in word,
in conuersation, in loue, in spirit, in faith,
in purenesse.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to
diligent, to exhortation, and to doctrine.

14 Despise not the gift that is in thee,
which was giuen thee by prophesie with
laying on of the hands of y company of
Eldership.

15 These things exercise, and giue

among all men.

Take heede vnto thy selfe, and once
continue therein: for in doing this
thou shalt both saue thy selfe, and them that
are with thee.

CHAP. V

Having set downe a maner how to rebuke
blasphemers, he entreateth of widowes, who
were chosen for the seruice of the Church.
Then he cometh to Elders, & speaketh
somewhat touching the health of the body.

Ebuke not an Elder, but exhort him as
a father, and the yonger men as brethren.
The elder women as mothers, the young-
er as sisters, with all purenesse.

Honour widowes, which are widowes
in deed.

But if any widowe haue children or
nephewes, let them learne first to shewe god-
lynesse toward their owne house, and to re-
spect their kindred: for that is an honest
thing, and acceptable before God.

And shee that is a widow in deed, and
alone, trusteth in God, and continueth in
applications and prayers, night and day.

But shee that liueth in pleasure, is dead
while she liueth.

These things therefore warne them of,
that they may be blamelesse.

If there be any that prouideth not for
his owne, & namely, for them of his household,
he denieth the faith, & is worse then an infidel.

Let not a widow be taken into the
number vnder threescore yeere old, that hath
bene the wife of one husband,

And wel reported of for good workes: if
she haue nourished her childre, if she haue
lodged the strangers, if she haue washed the
soots feete, if she haue ministred vnto them.

N n 3 which

which were, & aduerſity, if ſome were
ſimnally giuen vnto euery good worke.

11 But reſuſe the yonger widowes:
when they haue begun to waxe wanton
gainſt Chriſt, they wil marry.

12 Hauiug damnation becauſe they haue
broken the firſt faith.

13 And likewise alſo being idle, they
learn to go about fro houſe to houſe: yea, they
are not only idle, but alſo praters, & buſie
dies, ſpeaking things which are not comely.

14 I will therefore that the yonger wo-
men marrie, and beare children, and gouerne
the houſe, & giue none occaſion to ſeem
ſary to ſpeake euil.

15 For certaine are already turned backe
after Satan.

16 If any faithfull man or faithfull woman
haue widowes, let them miniſter vnto them,
and let not the Church be charged, ſee they
may be ſufficient for them: that are widowes
in deede.

17 ¶ The Elders that rule wel let the be
had in double honour, ſpecially they which
labour in the word and doctrine.

18 For the Scripture ſaith, Thou ſhalt not
mouſel ſe mouth of the oxe that treadeth out
the corne: and the labourer is worthy of his
wages.

19 Againſt an Elder receiue none accuſa-
tion, but vnder two or three witneſſes.

20 Them that ſinne, rebuke openly, that
therest may alſo feare.

21 I charge thee before God and ſe Lord
Jeſus Chriſt, and the elect Angels, that thou
obſerue the things without perſeſſing one
to another, and doe nothing partially.

22 Lay hands ſuddenly on no man, neither
be partaker of other mens finnes: keep thy
ſelfe pure.

23 Drink

no longer water, but as a lake
by Romackes lake, and thing often
mens sinnes are open before hād,
before vnto iudgement: but some mens
after.

Likewise also the good words are ma-
before hād, & they that are otherwise
not be hid.

CHAP. VI.

showeth the duetie of seruāts, 10 & what
mischievous euill conetousnes is 13 and
having spoken somewhat of richmen, he once
againe forbiddeth Timothy 20 to combāt
himselfe with vaine babblings.

¶ Et as many seruāts as are vnder y^e yoke
count their masters worthy of all ho-
nor, that the Name of God and his doctrine
be not euil spoken of.

¶ And they which haue beleeuing masters,
let them not despise them, because they are
brethren, but rather do service because they
are faithfull and beloued and partakers of y^e
benefite. These things teach and exhort.

¶ If any man teach otherwise, and consen-
seth not to y^e wholesome wordes of our Lord
Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine, which is
according to godlinesse.

¶ He is puffed vp and knoweth nothing, but
doteth about questions and strife of words,
whereof cometh enuie, railings, euil surmi-
sings.

¶ Froward disputations of men of corrupt
minds and destitute of the truth, which
thinke that gaine is godlines: from such sepa-
rate thy selfe.

¶ But godlinesse is great gaine, if a man
be content with that he hath.

¶ For we brought nothing into the world,
& it is certaine, y^e we can carie nothing out.

Therefore when we him shall see
ment, let vs therewith be content.

9 For they that will be rich, fall into
fation and snares, and into many foolish
noysome lustes, which drowne men in pe-
dition and destruction.

10 For the desire of money is the root
of al euil, which while some lusted after, they
strayed from the faith, & pearced themselves
through with many sorowes.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these
things, and follow after righteousnesse, god-
linesse, faith, loue, patience, and meekenes.

12 Fight the good fight of faith: lay hold
of eternall life, wherunto thou art also cal-
led, & hast professed a good professiō before
many witnesses.

13 I charge thee in the sight of God, who
quickeneth al things, & before Iesus Christ,
which vnder Pontius, Pilate witnessed a
good confession.

14 That thou keepe *this* commandement
without spot, & vnbukeable, vntil the ap-
pearing of our Lord Iesus Christ,

15 Which in due time he shal shew, that
he is blessed & Prince onely, the King of kings
and Lord of lords,

16 Who only hath immortalitie, & dwelleth
in the light that no eie can attaine vnto,
whom neuer man saw, neither can see, vnto
whō be honour and power euerlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this
world, that they be not high minded. & that
they trust not in vncertaine riches, but in the
living God, (which giveth vs abundantly al
things to enjoy)

18 That they do good, & be rich in good
works, & ready to distribute, & communicate.

19 Laying vp in store for themselves a good
foundation against the time to come, that
they

the eternall life.

O Timothy, keepe that which is committed unto thee, and avoide prophane and idle babblings, and oppositions of sciences so called,

Which while some professe, they haue no profit concerning the faith, Grace be with you Amen.

The first Epistle to Timothy written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest Citie of Phrygia Pacaciana.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF Paul to Timothy.

CHAP. I.

Paul commendeth Timothy's faith, 6 & exhorteth him to go on faithfully in the charge committed unto him, 8 and that neither for his bonds, 15 nor the revelling of others, he faileth. 11 He triumpheth of his Apostleship. 14 He willeth him to haue care of the thing committed unto him: 16 & praiseth Onesiphorus.

Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the wil of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Iesus.

To Timothy my beloued sonnet Grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, & from Iesus Christ our Lord.

I thank God, whom I serue from mine adolescence with pure conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day.

Desiring to see thee, mindefull of thy cares, that I may be filled with ioy:

When I call to remembrance the vncfeined faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, & in thy mother Eunice, & am assured y^e is dwelleth in thee also.

Where-

6 Wherefore, I put thee in remembrance
that thou stirre vp the gift of God which
is in thee, by the putting on of mine hands.

7 For God hath not given to vs the
spirit of feare, but of power, and of loue, and
of a sound mind.

8 Be not therefore ashamed of the testi-
mony of our Lord, neither of me his prisoner:
but be partaker of the afflictions of the Gos-
pel, according to the power of God,

9 Who hath saued vs, and called vs with
an holy calling, not according to our works,
but according to his own purpose and grace,
which was giuen to vs through Christ Iesus
before the world was,

10 But is now made manifest by the appea-
ring of our Sauour Iesus Christ, who hath
abolished death, and hath brought life and
immortality vnto light through the Gospel.

11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher
and Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these
things, but I am not ashamed: for I know
whom I haue beleueed, and I am perswaded
that he is able to keep that which I haue com-
mitted to him against that day.

13 Keepe the true paterne of the whole-
some wordes, which thou hast heard of me in
faith, and loue which is in Christ Iesus.

14 That worthy thing, which was com-
mitted to thee, keep through the holy Ghost,
which dwelleth in vs.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which
are in Asia, be turned from me: of which son
are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord giue mercy vnto the house
of Onesiphorus, for he oft refreshed me, and
was not ashamed of my chaine,

17 But when he was at Rome, he sought
me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The

and grace vnto him; that he may
conferre with the Lord at that day: and
many things he hath ministred vnto
Epheſus, thou knowest very wel.

CHAP. II.

The better to set out perseuerance, in the
Christian warfare, 3 he taketh similitudes 4
from sould e. 1, 6 and from husbandmen, 10
he sheweth that his bods are for the profited
of the Saints: 14 Then he warneth Timothee
to diuide the worde of trueneth aright, 17
to beware of the examples of the wicked, 12
and to doe all things modestly.

How therefore, my sonne, be strong in
the grace that is in Christ Iesus.

And what things thou hast heard of me,
many witnesses, y same deliuer to faithful
men, which shal be able to teach other also.

Thou therefore suffer affliction as a good
soldier of Iesus Christ.

Nomā y warreth, entangleth himselfe
with y affaires of this life, because he would
please him y bath chose him to be a souldier

And if any mā also strue for a mastery,
hee is not crowned except hee strue as hee
ought to doe.

The husbandman must labour, before
he receiue the fruits.

7 Consider what I say and the Lord giue
thee vnderstanding in al thinges:

8 Remember that Iesus Christ made of
the seede of Dauid, was raised againe from
the dead according to my Gospel.

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an euil doer,
euen vnto bonds: but the word of God is not
bound.

10 Therefore I suffer all things for y elects
sake, that they might also obtaine y saluatiō
which is in Christ Iesus, with eternal glory.

11 It is a true saying, For if we be dead
together

gether with him, we also shall
wish him.

22 If we suffer, we shall also reign
with him: If we deny him, he also will
deny us.

23 If we beleue not, yet so doth he
will: he cannot deny himselfe.

24 Of these things put the in remembrance
and protest before the Lord, that they be
not about words, which is to no profit,
so the peruerting of the hearers.

25 Study to shew thy selfe approved
unto God, a workeman that needeth not to
be ashamed, diuinding the word of truth a right

26 Stay prophane and vaine babbling,
they shall encrease vnto more vngodlinesse.

27 And their word shall fret as a canker,
which sort is Hymeneus and Phyletus.

28 Which as concerning the truth have
departed from the marke, saying, that the
restitution is past already, and doe destroy
the faith of certaine.

29 But the foundation of God remaineth
sure, & hath this scale, The Lord knoweth
who are his, and Let every one that calleth
on the Name of Christ, depart from iniquity.

30 Notwithstanding in a great house
there are not onely vessels of gold and siluer,
but also of wood and of earth, and some for honour,
and some vnto dishonour,

31 If any man therefore purge himselfe
from these hee shall bee a vessel vnto honour,
sanctified, and meete for the Lord, and pre-
pared vnto euery good worke.

32 Flee also from the lustes of youth, & follow
after righteousness, faith, loue, & peace, with
them that call on the Lord with pure heart,

33 And put away foolish and vnclear
questions, knowing that they ingender strife.

34 But the seruant of the Lord must not
strife,

begette toward al me, apt to teach
the rail.

Instructing them with meekenesse that
contrary minded, proving to God at any
will give them repentance, that they
acknowledge the truth,

And come to amendement out of the
of the deuill, of whom they are taken
sinners, to doe his wil.

CHAP. III

Forsoleth the dangerous times that are to
come, 9. but with a certaine hope of victorie
is encouraged him to the combat, 14.
aiming out especially a trial of sound doctrine
His knowe also, that in the last dayes
shal come perilous times.

1 For men shall be louers of their owne
eyes, conetous, boasters, proud,ursed spea-
kers, disobedient to parents, vnthankful, vni-
uersally,

2 Without naturall affection, unne brea-
thers false accusers, intemperate, fierce, no lo-
uers at all of them which are good.

3 Traitors, headie, high minded, louers of
pleasures more then louers of God.

4 Hauing a thewe of godlinesse, but haue
denied the power thereof: turne away there-
from from such.

5 For of this sort, are they which creep
into houses, and leade captiue simple women
laden with sinnes, and led with diuers lusts.

6 Which women are euer learning, & are
never able to come to the acknowledging of
the truth.

7 And as Iannes and Iambres with stood
Moses, so doe these also resist the truth, men
of corrupt mindes, reprobate concerning the
faith.

8 But they shall preuaile no longer: for
their madnesse shalbe euidēt vnto al me,
then

II TIMOTHY

which also was.

10 But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of living, purpose, faith, long suffering, love, patience,

11 Persecutions & afflictions which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium, & at Lysia, which persecutions I suffered: but from them all the Lord delivered me.

12 Yea, & al that wil liue godly in Christ Iesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But the euil me & deceiuers, shall waxe worse & worse, deceiuing, & being deceiued.

14 But continue thou in y things which thou hast learned, and which are committed vnto thee knowing of whom thou hast learned them?

15 And that thou hast knowen the holy Scriptures of a child, which are able to make thee wise vnto saluation through the faith which is in Christ Iesus.

16 For the whole Scripture is given by inspiration of God & is profitable to teach, to couince, to correct, & to instruct in righteousness.

17 That the man of God may be absolute, being made perfect vnto al good workes.

CHAP. III.

1 He chargeth him to preach the Gospel with diligence, 2 in that so miserable time: 6 That his death is hard at hand. 8 yet so, y as a conquerour, he maketh haste to a glorious triumph. 10 He sheweth the cause why he sendeth for Timothie, 11 euē by reason of his present state.

1 Charge thee therefore before God, and before the Lord Iesus Christ, which shall iudge the quicke and dead at that his appearing, and in his kingdome,

2 Preach the word: be instant in season & out of season: in proue, rebuke, exhort v

my
h, l
h can
ar li
ur from
Chin
I with
ceined
which
mitted
leat
holy
make
faith
n by
ch
hte
me,
with
e: 6
as
one
the
his
nd
ll
a-
of

teaching and doctrine,
the time wil come, when they wil
wholeſome doctrine: but haſting
eares itching, ſhal after their owne luſtes
them an heape of teachers,

And ſhall turne their eares from the
truth, and ſhalbe given vnto fables.

But watch thou in al things: ſuffer ad-
uerſitie doe thy worke of an Euangelift: caſe
thy miniſterie to be thoroughly liked of.

For I am nowe ready to be offered, and
the time of my departing is at hand.

I haue fought a good fight, and haue
finiſhed my courſe I haue kept the faith.

For henceforth is layde vp for me the
crowne of righteouſnes, which the Lord the
righteous iudge ſhal giue me at that day: &
not to me only, but vnto al the alſo that loue
that his appearing.

Make ſpeede to come to me at once:

For Demas hath forſaken me, & hath
embraced this preſent worlde, & is departed
vnto Theſſalonica. Creſcens is gone to Gala-
tia, Titus to Dalmatia.

Only Luke is with mee. Take Marke
and bring him with thee: for he is profitable
vnto me to miniſter.

And Tychicus haue I ſent to Ephesus.

The cloake that I left at Troas with
Carpas, when thou commeſt bring with thee
& the bookes, but ſpecially the parchments.

Alexander the copperſmith hath done
mee much euil: the Lord reward him accor-
ding to his workes.

Of whom bee thou ware alſo: for hee
withſtood our preaching ſore.

At my firſt anſwering no man aſſiſted
me, but all forſooke me: I pray God, that it
may not be layde to their charge.

Notwithſtanding the Lord aſſiſted me
and

And strengthened me, that by me I might be fully believed, and that all should beare: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the Lyon.

18 And the Lord will deliver me from every evil worke, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdome: to whom be praise for ever and ever. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Make speede to come before winter. Erastus greeteth thee, and Pudens, & Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you, AMEN.

¶ The second Epistle written from Rome unto Timotheus, first Bishop elect of the Church of Ephesus, where Paul presented the second time before the Emperor Nero,

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL to Titus.

CHAP. I.

¶ He sheweth what kinde of men ought to be chosen Ministers: 10 howe vaine babling speeches should be stopped. 12 & through the occasion hee toucheth the nature of the Christians 14 and shewes who put holinesse in our vvaie things.

PAUL a servant of God, & an Apostle of IESUS CHRIST, according to the faith of Gods elect, & acknowledging of the truth, which is according to godlines,

2 Vnto the hope of eternal life, which God

...lie, hath promised before the
beginne.

...hath made his worde manifest to doe
through the preaching. which is com-
mended me, according to the comman-
dment of God our Saviour.

...Ihus my naturall sonne: according to
common faith, Grace mercie and peace
from God the Father, and from the Lord Je-
Christ our Saviour.

For this cause left I thee in Creta, that
shouldest continue to redresse & things
remain, and shouldest ordeine Elders in
the citie, as I appointed thee.

If any bee vnreprocheable, & husband of
the wife, hauing faithfull childre, which are
not slandered of riot, neither are disobedient.
For a Bishop must be vnreprocheable,
not a steward, not froward, not angrie,
not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to
swaie,

But harborous, one that loueth goodnes,
righteous, holy, temperate,

Holding fast that faithfull worde accor-
ding to doctrine, that he also may be able to
reuerberate with wholesome doctrine, & conuince
them that say against it.

For there are many disobedient and
talkers & deceiuers of mindes, chiefly
of the circumcision.

Whose mouthes must be stopped which
peruert whole houses, teaching things which
they ought not, for filthy lucre sake,

One of themselves, euen of their owne
schism sayd, The Cretians are alwayes
false, euil beasts, slow bellies.

This witnesse is true: wherefore con-
uince them sharply, that they may be sound
in the faith,

And not taking heede to Iewish fables

TO TITVS

and commandments of men, that turn
way from the truth.

15 Vnto the pure are all things pure,
vnto them that are defiled, & vnbeleue
is nothing pure, but euen their mindes
consciencs are defiled. —

16 They professe that they knowe God,
but by workes they denie him, and are
damnable & disobedient, and vnto euey
worke reprobate. —

CHAP. II.

2 He setteth out the duties of sundry persons
in Church & States. 6 and willet him to instruct
the Church in maners. 11 He draweth an argu-
ment from the endle of our redemption,
which is that we liue godly and vprightly.

But speake thou ſuch things which become
wholesome doctrine,

1 That the elder men be watchful, graue,
temperate, sounde in the faith, in lone, and
patience.

2 The elder women likewise, that they
be in such behauiour as becommeth holines,
not false accusers, not subiect to much wine,
but teachers of honest things.

3 That they may instruct the yong
men to be sober minded, that they loue their
husbandes, that they loue their children,

4 That they be temperate, chaste, keep
at home, good & subiect vnto their husbandes,
that the word of God be not euil spoken of.

5 Exhort yong men likewise, that they
be sober minded.

6 In al things shew thy selfe an ensample
of good workes, with vncorrupt doctrine,
with grauitie, integritie,

7 And with the wholesome word which
cannot be condemned, that hee which with-
standeth, may bee ashamed, hauing nothing
concerning you to speake euil of.

CHAP. III.

servants be subiect to their masters
in all things, not answering

Neither pickers, but that they shew
god faithfulness, that they may adorne
the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things,
For that grace of God, that bringeth
salvation vnto all men, hath appeared,

And teacheth vs that we should deny
unrighteousnes and worldly lustes, and that wee
live soberly and righteously and god-
ly in this present world.

Looking for that blessed hope, and ap-
pearance of that glory of that mighty God,
of our Saviour Iesus Christ.

Who gave himself for vs, that he might
redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs
by his peculiar people vnto himselfe, zealous
of good workes.

These things speake, and exhorde, and
remonstrance with all authority. See that no man
despise thee.

CHAP. III

Willeth that all generally be put in minde
of reverence such as be in authority.

Put them in remembrance, that they bee
subiect to the Principalities, and powers,
that they be obedient, and ready to doe
good worke,

That they speake euill of no man, that
they bee no fighters, but soft, shewing all
meeknesse vnto all men.

For wee our selues also were in times
past, lawlesse, disobedient, deceiued, serving
in malice & diuers pleasures, living in malitious-
& enuie, hateful, & hating one another.

But when that bountifullnesse and that
kindnesse of God toward man appeared,

Not by the workes of righteousness
wee had done, but according to his

TO TITVS.

mercie he saved vs, by the washing of
new birth, & the renewing of $\frac{1}{2}$ holy

6 Which hee shedde on vs abundantly
through Iesus Christ our Saviour.

7 That wee, being iustified by his grace,
shoulde bee made heires according to
hope of eternall life,

8 This is a true saying, and these things
I wil thou shouldest affirme, $\frac{1}{2}$ they which
haue beleened God, might bee careful
shew foorth good workes. These things
good and profitable vnto men.

9 But stay foolish questions, and
logies, and contentions, and brawlings
the Law: for they are vnprofitable and
vnto men.

10 Reiect him that is an heretike,
once or twise admonition,

11 Knowing that hee that is such, is
perverted, & sinneeth, being damned of his
selfe.

12 When I shal send Artemas vnto
or Tychicus, be diligent to come to me
Nicopolis: for I haue determined there
winter.

13 Bring Zenas $\frac{1}{2}$ expounder of $\frac{1}{2}$ Law
and Apollos on their iourney diligently,
they lacke nothing.

14 And let ours also learne to shew
good woorkes for necessarie vses, that
be not vnfruitful.

15 All that are with mee, salute
Greete them that loue vs in the faith,
be with you al, Amen.

To Titus elect the first Bishop of
Church of the Cretians, written
Nicopolis in Maccedonia.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL
to Philemon.

...his name ... a left ...
... sending againe to Philemon his
... and the faithful seruant, he intercedeth
... for him, and very grauely preache the
... (Christus equis).

A V L a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and
our brother Timotheus, vnto Philemon
our deare friend and fellowe helper,
And to our deare sister Apphia, &
Achippus our fellow souldier, and to the
church that is in thine house:

Grace be with you, and peace from God
Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.
I giue thanks to my God, making
alwayes of thee in my prayers,
(When I heare of thy loue and faith,
which thou hast toward the Lorde Iesus
Christ, and toward all Saints:

That the felowship of thy faith may be
effectuall, and that whatsoever good
is in you through Christ Iesus, may be
made known,

For we haue great ioy and consolation
by thy loue, because by thee, brother, thine
bowels are comforted.

Wherefore, though I be very bolde in
Christ to command thee, that which is con-
fession,

Yet for loues sake I rather beseech thee,
though I be as I am, even Paul aged, & euen
now a prisoner for Iesus Christ.

I beseech thee for my son Onesimus,
whom I haue begotten in my bondes.

Which in time past was to thee unpro-
fitable but nowe profitable both to thee &
me,

Whom I haue sent againe: thou there-
fore receiue him, that is mine own bowels.

Do 3 13 Whom

not, that in thy stead he might have
vnto me in the bonds of the Gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I
nothing, that thy benefite should not be
it were of necessity, but willingly.

15 It may be that he therefore departed
for a season, that thou shouldest receive him
for ever,

16 Not now as a servant, but above a
want, *even* as a brother beloved, especially
me: how much more then vnto thee, both
the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If therefore thou counte our things
common, receive him as my selfe.

18 If hee hath hurt thee, or oweth thee
ought, that put on mine accounts,

19 I Paul haue written *this* with mine
owne hand: I wil recompense it, albeit I
not say to thee, that thou owest moreover
to me euen thine owne selfe.

20 Yea, brother, let me obteine this plea-
sure of thee, in the Lord: comfort my bowels
in the Lord.

21 Trusting in thine obedience I write
vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt doe
more then I say.

22 Moreover also prepare me lodging:
I trust through your prayers I shalbe freed
given vnto you.

23 There salutethee Epaphras my fellow
prisoner in Christ Iesus.

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas and
my fellowe helpers.

25 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ
with your spirit, Amen:

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, and
sent by Onesimus a servant.

THE EPISTLE TO THE Hebrewes.

The drift & end of this Epistle is to shew
Iesus Christ the Son of God both God
and man, that true, eternal and onely Pro-
phet, King, and high Priest, that was sha-
dowed by the figures of the olde Lawe, and
indeed exhibited: of whom the whole
Church ought to bee taught, governed, and
sanctified.

CHAP. I.

It shewes that the doctrine which Christe
brought, is most excellent, in that it is the
fulfilling vp of al prophecies, & he aduanceth
him above the Angels, 10 And proueth by
diuers testimonies of the Scriptures, that he
surpasseth all other.

AT sundry times and in diuers ma-
ners God spake in the olde time
to our Fathers by the Prophets:
in these last dayes he hath spoken
vnto vs by his Sonne,

Whom he hath made heire of al things,
whom also he hath made the worlds.

Who being the brightnesse of the glo-
rie, and the ingraued forme of his person, &
sustaining vp all things by his mighty worde,
hath by himself purged our sins, & sitteth at
his right hand of the Maiesty in the highest
heavens,

And is made so much more excellent
then the Angels, in as much as hee hath ob-
tained a more excellent Name then they.

For vnto which of the Angels said hee
at any time, Thou art my Sonne, this daye
have I thee? and againe, I will be his Fa-
ther, and he shalbe my Sonne?

And againe, when he bringeth in his first
begotten

And of the Angels of God we read
7 And of the Angels hee saith, *Behold the Spirit his messengers, and hee is a flame of fire.*

8 *But vnto the Son he saith, O God thy throne is for euer and euer: the scepter of thy kingdome is a scepter of righteousness.*

9 *Thou hast loved righteousness, and hast hated iniquitie. Wherefore God, euen thy Father hath anoynted thee with the oyle of gladnesse above thy fellowes.*

10 *And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast established the earth, and the heauens are the works of thine hands:*

11 *They shall perish, but thou dost remaine: and they all shall waxe olde as a garment,*

12 *And as a vesture shalt thou fold vp, and they shal be changed: but thou art the same, and thy yeeres shal not faile.*

13 *Vnto which also of the Angels hee saith at any time, Sit at my right hand, and make thine enemies thy foote stoe.*

14 *Are they not al ministring spirits, sent forth to minister, for their sakes, which be heires of saluation?*

CHAP. II.

1 *Therefore he inferreth, that good heed must be giuen to Christes doctrine: 9 And hee telleth him out vnto vs euen as our brethren our selfe, that we may with a good will take vp our selues wholly vnto him.*

¶ *Wherefore we ought diligently to take heed to the things which wee haue heard, lest at any time we runne our.*

2 *For if the word spoken by Angels be stedfast, and euery transgression, and disobedience receiued a iust recompense of rewe.*

3 *Howe shall we escape, if we neglect*

by the Lord, and ~~after~~ who vs by them that heard him,
and hearing wondrously thereto, both
& wonders, & with diuers miracles,
of the holy Ghost, according to
his will?

For hee hath not put in subiection vnto
angels the world to come, whereof we

see one in a certaine place written
What is man, that thou shouldest be
in subiection of him? or the sonne of man, that
thou wouldest consider him:

Thou madest him a little inferiour to
angels: thou crownedst him with glory and
honour, and hast set him above the works of
his hands,

Thou hast put all things in subiection
vnto his feete. And in that he hath put all
things in subiection vnder him, he left nothing
that should not be subiect vnto him. But wee
see not all things subdued vnto him.

But wee see Iesus crowned with glory
and honour, which was made a little inferiour
to the Angels, through his suffering of death,
by Gods grace he might taste death for
men.

For it became him, for whom are all
things, & by whom are all these things
made, that hee brought many children vnto
glory, that hee shoulde consecrate the Prince
of our saluation through afflictions.

For hee that sanctifieth, and they
which are sanctified, are all of one: wherefore
he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

Saying, I will declare thy Name vnto
my brethren: in the middes of the Church
will I sing praises to thee.

And againe, I will put my trust in him.
And

Behold, here am I, which God hath given me.

4 Forasmuch the as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, hee also himself likewise tooke part with the, that he might destroy through death, him that hath the power of death, that is, the devil.

15 And that hee might deliuer all them which for feare of death were all their life time subiect to bondage.

16 For hee in no sort tooke on him the Angels nature, but he tooke on him the seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in al things it behooued him to bee made like ynto his brethren, that he might bee merciful, and a faithful hie Priest in things concerning God; y he might make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people.

18 For in that he suffered, & was tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Nowe hee sheweth how farre Inferiour Moses is to Christ, 5, 6 euen so much as the seruant to the master: and so he bringeth in certaine exhortations and threatnings take out of David 8 against such as either stubbornly resist. 11 or els are very slowe to obey.

Therefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly vocation, consider the Apostle and hie Priest of our profession, Christ Iesus:

2 Who was faithful to him that hath appointed him, eue as Moses was in al his house.

3 For this mā is counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as hee which hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For euery house is builded of some mā, and he that hath built al things, is God.

5 Now Moses verely was faithful in al his

which should be spoken after
Christ is as ☉ Sunne, one that we
whose house wee are, if we holde fast
confidence and that reioycing of this
unto the ende,

Wherefore, as the holy Ghost saith, To
ye shal heare his voyce,

Harden not your hearts, as in the pro-
uocation, according to the day of the tenta-
tion in the wilderness,

Where your fathers tempted me, pro-
uoked me, & saw my works fourtie yeres long

Wherefore I was grieved with that
generation, and said, They erre euil in their
heart, neither haue they knowen my wayes,

Therefore I sware in my wrath, If they
shall enter into my rest.

Take heede, brethren, lest at any time
there be in any of you an euil heart, & vne-
thankful, to depart away from ☉ living God,

But exhort one another daily, while it
is called, To day, lest any of you bee harde-
ned through the deceitfulnesse of sinne.

For wee are made partakers of Christ
if wee keepe sure vnto the ende that begin-
ning, wherewith we are vpholden.

So long as it is sayd, To day if ye heare
his voyce, harden not your hearts, as in the
prouocation.

For some when they heard, prouoked
him to anger: howbeit, not al that came out
of Egypt by Moses.

But with whom was hee displeased
fourtie yeeres? Was hee not displeased with
them that sinned, whose carkeises fel in the
wildernesse?

And to whom sware hee that they
should not enter into his rest, but vnto them
that obeyed not?

19 So wee see that they could not
in because of vnbeliefe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He ioyneth exhortation with threatening, lest
they, euen as their fathers were, be deprived
of the rest offered vnto them, 11 but they
endeuour to enter into it: 14 And so he be-
ginneeth to intreate of Christs Priesthood.

I Et vs feare therefore, lest at any time
by forsaking the promise of entring into
his rest, any of you should seeme to be de-
prived.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached
as also vnto them: but the word that they
heard, profited not them, because it was not
mixed with faith in those that heard it.

3 For we which haue beleueed, doe enter
into rest, as hee saide to the other, As I haue
sworne in my wrath, If they shall enter into
my rest: although the worke were finished
from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certaine place of the
seuenth day on this wise, And God did rest
the seuenth day from all his works.

5 And in this place againe, If they shall
enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some
must enter there into, and they to whom it
was first preached, entered not therein for vn-
beliefes sake.

7 Againe hee appoynted in Dauid a cer-
taine day, by To day, after so long time, sa-
ying, as it is sayd, This day, if ye heare his
voyce, harden not your hearts.

8 For if Iesus had giuen the rest, the would
he not after this haue spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the
people of God.

10 For hee that is entred into his rest
hath also ceased from his own works, as God

Al from his

11 Let v

rest, left

ample of di

12 For t

might in op

two edged s

into the diu

spirit. & of

a discerne

of the heart

13 Neith

not manifest

ailed and o

we haue to

14 Seeing

Priest, which

the Sonne o

son,

15 For w

can not be

infirmities,

inlike sort,

16 Let v

throne of g

and finde g

1 First he sh

Secondly,

be our hie

all thing

For euer

men, &

pertaining t

ists and fa

2 Which

vision on t

et of y wa

ssed with

And fo

CHAP. V.

from his.

11 Let vs studie therefore to enter into the way, lest any man fall after the same example of disobedience.

12 For the word of God is lively, and mighty in operation, and sharper then any two edged sword, and entreth through, even unto the diuiding asunder of the soule, & the spirit. & of the ioyntes, and the marow, and is a discerner of the thoughts, and the intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature, which is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and open vnto his eyes, with whom we haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that wee haue a great hie Priest, which is entred into heauē, *even Iesus the Sonne of God*, let vs hold fast our profession,

15 For we haue not an high Priest, which can not be touched with the feeling of our infirmitie, but was in all thing: tempted in like sort, yet without sinne,

16 Let vs therefore goe holdly vnto the throne of grace, that we may receiue mercie, and finde grace to helpe in time of neede.

CHAP. V.

1 First he sheweth the due tie of the hie Priest: Secondly, that Christ is appointed of God to be our hie Priest, 7 and that he hath fulfilled all things belonging thereunto.

For euery hie Priest is taken from among men, and is ordeined for men, in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes.

2 Which is able sufficiently to haue compassion on them that are ignorant, & that are out of way, because that hee also is compassed with infirmitie.

And for the sames sake hee is bound to

TO THE HERREWES.

offer for sinnes, as well for his owne part,
for the peoples.

4 And no man taketh this honour
himselfe, but he that is called of God, as
Aaron.

5 So likewise Christ tooke not to himselfe
this honour to be made the high Priest
he that said vnto him, Thou art my Sonne
this day begate I thee, *gaue it him.*

6 As hee also in another place speaks
Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order
Melchi-sedec.

7 Who in the dayes of his flesh did
vp prayers & supplications, with strong cry-
ing & teares vnto him, that was able to
him from death, and was also heard in
which he feared.

8 And though he were the Sonne,
learned he obedience, by the things which
he suffered.

9 And being consecrate, was made the
author of eternal saluation vnto al them that
obey him:

10 And is called of God an high Priest
after the order of Melchi sedec,

11 Of whome wee haue many things
say, which are hard to be vttered, because
are dull of hearing.

12 For when as concerning the time
ought to be teachers, yet haue ye neede
againethat we teach you what are the first
principles of y word of God: & are become
such as haue neede of milke and not of strong
meate,

13 For every one that vseth milke, is
expert in the word of righteousnesse: for he
a babe.

14 But strong meate belongeth to them
are of a ge, which through long custome haue
their wits exercised, to discern both good

CHAP. VI

CHAP. VI.

highly toucheth y^e childish slouthfulness of
the Hebrewes, 4 and terrifieth them with
threatnings. 7 He stirreth them up to
labour in time to goe forward: he hopeth
of the. 13 he allegeth Abrahams ex-
ample: 17 & compareth saith that taketh
hold on the word, 18 vnto an acre.

Therefore, leauing the doctrine of y^e be-
ginning of Christ, let vs be led forward
in perfectiō, not laying againe the founda-
tion of repentance from dead works, and of
faith toward God,

Of the doctrine of baptismes, and laying
on hands, and of the resurrection from y^e
dead, and of eternall iudgement.

And this will we doe, if God permit.

For it is impossible, y^e they which were
lightened, & haue tasted of y^e heavenly gift
were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

And haue tasted of the good word of
God, and of the power of the world to come,

If they fall away, should be renewed
again by repentance: seeing they crucifie a-
gain to themselves the Son of God, & make
mocke of him.

For the earth which drinketh in y^e raine
bringeth forth much cometh oft vpon it, & bringeth forth
much meet for them by whome it is dressed
receiveth blessing of God.

But that which beareth thornes and
thistles is reprobated and is neere vnto cursing,
whose ende is to be burned.

But beloved, wee haue perswaded ouer
you better things of you, and such as ac-
company saluation, though we thus speake.

For God is not vnrighteous, that hee
should forget your worke, & labour of love,
which yee shewed toward his Name, in that

TO THE HEIREN
ye haue ministred vnto the Saines
minister.

11 And we desire that every one of
shew the same diligence, to the full
of hope vnto the ende.

12 That ye bee not slouthfull, but fol-
wers of them, which through faith & patience
inherit the promises.

13 For when God made the promise
Abraham, because he had no greater to swear
by, hee sware by himselfe,

14 Saying, Surely I wil abundantly
bless thee, and multiply thee multifoldly.

15 And so after that he had waited
patiently, hee enjoyed the promise.

16 For men verily sweare by him that
greater *then themselves*, & an oth for confirma-
tion is among them an end of all strife.

17 So God willing more abundantly
shewe vnto y^e heires of promise y^e stability
of his counsel, bound himselfe by an othe.

18 That by two immutable things, where-
in it is ympossible that God should lie,
we might haue strong consolation, which
shall be our refuge to lay hold vpon that hope
is set before vs,

19 Which hope we haue, as an anchor
soules, both sure & stedfast, and it entred
to that which is within the vaile,

20 Whither the forerunner is for vs entered
in, euen Iesus, that is made an hie Priest
euer, after the order of Melchi-sedec.

CHAP. VII.

3 He hath hitherto stirred the v^p 10 marks
lightly what things are to be considered in
Melchi-sedec, 15 wherein he is like vnto Ch

FOR this Melchi-sedec was king of
y^e Priest of the most hie God, who met
Abraham, as he returned from the slaugh-
ter of the kings, and blessed him:

...that this Abraham gave the tithes
...who first is by interpretation
...righteousnesse: after that, *he is also*
...Isaiah, that is, King of peace,
...without father, without mother, with-
...out, and hath neither beginning of his
...neither end of life: but is likened vnto
...of God, and continueth a Priest

Now consider how great this man was
...whome even the Patriarke Abraham
...riches of the spoyle.

For verily they which are the children
...which receiue the office of \S Priest-
...have a commandement to take accor-
...to the Lawe, tithes of the people (that
...their brethren) though they came out of
...of Abraham.

But he whose kindred is not counted a-
...them, receiued tithes of Abraham, and
...him that had the promises.

And without al contradiction, the lesse
...of the greater,

And here men that die, receiue tithes:
...he receiueth them, of whom it is
...ed, that he liueth,

And to say as \S thing is, Levi also which
...tithes. payed tithes in Abraham.

For hee was yet in the loynes of his
...Abraham, whē Melchi-sedec met him.

If therefore perfection had bene by
...priesthoode of the Levites (for vnder it
...law was established to the people) what

And it furthermore, that another Priest
...rise after the order of Melchi-sedec,
...to be called after the order of Aaron?

For if the Priesthood be changed, the
...duty must there be a change of \S law.

For he of whom these things are spo-
...vnto another tribe, whereof

man seved at the altar.

14 For it is evident, that our Lord
out of Iuda, concerning the which
ses spake nothing, touching the Priest.

15 And it is yet a more evident thing
cause that after y^e similitude of Melchizedek
there is risen vp another Priest,

16 Which is not made Priest after
Law of the carnal commandement, but
the power of the endlesse life.

17 For hee testifieth thus, Thou art
Priest for ever, after y^e order of Melchizedek.

18 For the commandement that was
fore, is disannulled, because of the weakness
thereof, and vnprofitablenesse.

19 For the Lawe made nothing perfect
but y^e bringing in of a better hope made
fre whereby we draw neere vnto God.

20 And forasmuch as it is not without
othe (for these are made Priests without
othe:

21 But this is made with an othe by
that said vnto him, The Lord hath sworn
and will not repent. Thou art a Priest for
uer, after the order of Melchizedek)

22 By so much is Iesus made a surety
a better Testament.

23 And among them many were
Priestes, because they were not suffered
endure by the reason of death.

24 But this man, because he endured
hath a Priest hood, which cannot passe
one to another.

25 Wherefore he is able also perfectly
true thē that come vnto God by him, for
he ener liueth to make intercession for
the.

26 For such an hie Priest it became
hauē, which is holy, harmelesse, vndefiled,
separate from sinners, and made higher
the heuens;

...not ... his
... offer vp sacrifice, but for his owne
... then for the peoples: for that did
... when he offered vp himselfe.

... for the Law maketh men his Priests,
... have infirmities: but the word of the
... was since the Lawe, maketh the
... who is consecrated for euermore.

CHAP. VIII.

... more certainly that the ceremo-
... of the Lawe are abrogate. 5, he shew-
... that they were appoynted to serue the
... paterne.

... of the things which we haue spo-
... this is the summe, that wee haue
... his Priest, that sitteth at the right
... of the throne of the Maiesty in heauens,
... And is a minister of the Sanctuary, and
... that true Tabernacle which the Lorde
... and not man.

... For euery his Priest is ordeined to offer
... gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it was of
... that this man should haue some-
... Priest also to offer.

... For he were not a Priest, if he were on
... earth, seeing there are Priests that accor-
... to the Law offer gifts,

... Who serue vnto the paterne & shadow
... heavenly things, as Moses was warned by
... when hee was about to finish the Ta-
... See saide he, & thou make all things
... according to the paterne, shewed to thee in
... mount.

... But now our his Priest hath ordeined a
... him, for an excellent office, in as much as hee is
... Mediatour of a better Testament, which
... vpon better promises.

... For if that first Testament had bene in-
... able, no place should haue bin sought
... second.

8 For in rebuking them he saith
the dayes will come, saith the Lord,
I will make with the house of Israel, &
the house of Iuda a new Testament:

9 Not like the Testament that I made
with their Fathers in the daye that I took
them by the hands, to leade them out of the
land of Egypt: for they continued not in
Testamēt, & I regarded thē not, saith y^e Lord.

10 For this is the Testament that I will
make with the house of Israel. After those
doies, saith the Lord I will put my lawes
in their mind, & in their hart. I will write
I will be their God, & they shall be my people.

11 And they shall not teach euery man
his neighbour, & euery man his brother, saying
Knowe the Lord: for all shall know me, from
the least of them to the greatest of them.

12 For I will be merciful to their iniquities,
zeousnesse, and I will remember their sinnes
and their iniquities no more.

13 In that he saith a new Testament, he
hath abrogate y^e olde: now y^e which is dis-
annulled & waxed old, is ready to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

2 Comparing the forme of the Tabernacle,
& the ceremonies of the Lawe. 11. *the truth set out in Christ* 15 *he concludes*
that now there is no more neede of an
Priest. 24. *because Christ himselfe hath fulfilled*
these duties vnder the new covenēt.

Then the first Testament had also ordinance
of religion, & a worldly Sanctuary.

2 For the first tabernacle was made
wherein was the candlestick, and the table
and the shewbread, which Tabernacle is called
the holy places.

3 And after the second vaile was the
Tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all.

4 Which had the golden censer, and

the Testament, ouerlayde with
 with golde, wherein the golden pot
 & wherein had Manna, was, and Aarons rod that
 budded, & the tables of the Testament.
 And ouer the Arke were the glorious
 cherubims, shadowing the mercy seate: of
 which things we wil not now speake parti-
 cularly.

Now when these things were thus or-
 dained, & Priests went alwaies into the first
 tabernacle, and accomplished the seruice.
 But into the second went the hie Priest
 once euery yeere, not without blood
 which he offered for himselfe, and for the ig-
 norance of the people.

Whereby the holy Ghost this signifi-
 eth, that the waye into the Holiest of al was
 yet opened, while as yet the first taber-
 nacle was standing,

Which was a figure of that presente
 tabernacle, wherein were offered gifts and sacri-
 fices that could not make holy, concerning
 conscience, him that did the seruice.

To Which only stood in meates & drincke,
 and diuers washings, & carnal rites, which
 were inioyned, vntil the time of reformatiō.

But Christ being come an hie Priest of
 good things to come, by a greater and a more
 perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands,
 is not of this building,

Neither by the blood of goates and
 of calves: but by his owne blood entred hee in
 into the holy place, and obtained eter-
 nal redemption for vs.

For if the blood of bulles & of goates,
 with the ashes of an heifer, sprinkling them
 are vncleane, sanctifieth as touching the
 purifying of the flesh,

Howe much more shall the blood of
 Christ, which through the eternal Spirit offe-

and himselfe without fault to God, to
your consciences from dead works, to serve
the living God?

15 And for this cause is he the Mediator
of the newe Testament, that through death
which was for the redemption of the trans-
gressions that were in the former Testa-
ment, they which were called might receive
the promise of eternal inherance.

16 For where a Testament is, there must
be the death of him that made the Testamēt.

17 For the Testament is confirmed when
men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long
as he that made it, is alive.

18 Wherefore neither was the first orde-
med without blood,

19 For when Moses had spokē euery pre-
cept to the people, according to the Law, hee
tooke the blood of calves, & of goats, with
water and purple wooll, and hyssope, and
sprinkled both the booke, & al the people,

20 Saying, This is the blood of the Te-
stamēt, which God hath appointed vnto you.

21 Moreouer hee sprinkled likewise the
Tabernacle with blood also, & al the mini-
stering vessels.

22 And almost al things are by the Law
purged with blood, and without shedding of
blood is no remission.

23 It was then necessary, that the simili-
tudes of heauēly things should be purified w
such things: but y^e heauenly things theselues
are purified wth better sacrifices the are these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy
places that are made with handes, which are
similitudes of the true Sanctuary: but is entred
into very heauē, to appeare now in the sight
of God for vs,

25 Not that he should offer himself of-
ten, as the hie Priest entred into y^e holy place
had n

with other blood,

(For then must he have often suffered
the foundation of the world) but now
the ende of the world hath he bene made
manifest, once to put away sinne by the sa-
crifices of himselfe.

17 And as it is appoynted vnto men that
they shall once die, and after that cometh
the iudgement:

18 So Christ was once offered to take a-
way the sinnes of many, and vnto them that
believe for him, shall hee appeare the seconde
time without sinne vnto saluation.

CHAP. X

1 He proueth that the sacrifices of the Lawe
were unprofitable, 2 because they were yere-
ly requied. 5 But that the sacrifice of Christ
is one & perpetual, 6 he proueth by Davids
testimonie, 19 then he addeth an exhortatiō
29 & severely threatneth them that reiect
the grace of Christ, 36 in the end he praiseth
patience 38 that cometh of faith.

Or the Law hauing the shadow of good
things to come, & not y^e very image of
things, can neuer wth those sacrifices, which
they offer yeere by yeere continually, sa-
tisfie the commers thereunto.

2 For would they not then haue ceased to
be sin offred because y^e the offerers once pur-
chased should haue had no more cōscience of sinne

3 But in those sacrifices there is a remem-
brance againe of sinnes every yeere.

4 For it is ynpossible that the blood of
holies and goates should take away sinnes.

5 Wherefore when he cometh into the
worlde he saith, sacrifice and offering thou
sighestest not: but a body hast thou ordeined

6 In burnt offerings, & sinne offerings thou
hadst no pleasure.

TO THE REHEWED.

7 Then I sayd, Lo, I come, (in the beginning of the booke it is written of me) that I should doethy wil, O God.

8 Aboue, when he saide, Sacrifice and offering, and burnt offrings, and sinne offrings thou wouldest not haue, neither haddest pleasure therein (which are offered by Jew)

9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy wil, O God, he taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

10 By the which will we are sanctified, even by the offering of the body of Iesus Christ, once made.

11 And every Priest standeth daily ministering, and oft times offereth one manner of offering which can neuer take away sinners.

12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sinnes, sitteth for euer at the right hand of God,

13 And from hencefoorth tarieth, till his enemies be made his footeffoole.

14 For with one offering hath he consecrated for euer them that are sanctified.

15 For the holy Ghost also beareth vs record for after he had said before,

16 This is the Testament that I will make vnto them after those dayes saith the Lord, I will put my Lawes in their heart, and in their mindes I will write them,

17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now where remission of these things is, there is no more offering for sinne.

19 Seeing therefore, brethren, that by the blood of Iesus we may be bolde to enter in to the holy place,

20 By the newe and liuing way, which he hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, that is to say, his flesh.

21 And seeing we haue an hie Priest, who

the house of God,
 12 Let vs drawe neere with a true heart
 assurance of faith, our hearts being pure
 from an evil conscience, —

13 And washed in our bodies with pure
 water, let vs keepe the profession of our hope
 without wauering, (for he is faithfull that
 promised)

14 And let vs consider one another, to
 incite vnto loue, and to good workes, —

15 Not forsaking the fellowship that we
 haue among our selues, as the manner of some
 is: but let vs exhort one another, and that so
 much the more, because yee see that the day
 draweth neere. —

16 For if wee sinne willingly after that
 we haue receiued and acknowledged that
 we haue sinned, there remaineth no more sacrifice for
 sin.

17 But a fearefull looking for of iudge-
 ment, and violept fire, which shall deuoure
 our aduersaries.

18 He that despiseth Moses Law, dyed with
 the curse vnder two or three witnessess:

19 Of howe much sorer punishment sup-
 pose ye shal he be worthy, which treadeth
 vnder foote the Sonne of God, & counteth
 the blood of the Testament as an vnholi-
 ness, wherewith he was sanctified, & doeth
 despite to the Spirit of grace?

20 For wee know him, that hath said,
 My grace belongeth vnto me: I wil recom-
 pence saith the Lord. And againe, The Lord
 will iudge his people.

21 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the
 hands of the liuing God.

22 Now call to remembrance the dayes
 which haue passed, in the which after yee had
 receiued light, yee endured a great fight in
 iust, while

33 Partly while ye were made
stocke both by reproches and afflictions,
partly while ye became companions of them
which were so tossed to and fro,

34 For both ye sorowed with me for
bonds, and suffered with ioy the spoyling
of your goods, knowing in your selues how
that yee haue in heauen a better, and an
enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence
which hath great recompense of reward.

36 For ye haue neede of patience, that
after ye haue done the will of God, ye might
receiue the promise,

37 For yet a very litle while, and be-
hold, I shall come, and wil not tary:

38 Now the iust shall liue by faith, but
if any withdraw him selfe, my soule shal haue
no pleasure in him.

39 But we are not they which with-
draw our selues vnto perdition, but follow faith
vnto the conuersation of the soule.

CHAP. XI

1 He declareth in this whole chapter, that the
Ishers, which from the beginning of the world
were approoued of God, attained saluation
no other way then by faith, that the Iewes
may know that by the same only, they are
vnto the Father in an holy union.

Now faith is the ground of things which
are hoped for, & the euidence of things
which are not seene.

2 For by it our elders were wel reported

3 Through faith wee vnderstand, that the
world was ordeined by the worde of God,
so that the thinges which wee see, are
made of things which did appeare,

4 By faith Abel offered vnto God a greater
sacrifice then Cain, by the which he
obtained witnesse that hee was righteous,

of his gifts by the which faith alſo
dead, yet ſpeaketh.

By faith was Enoch tranſlated that he
ſhould not ſee death: neither was hee found:
God had tranſlated him: for before he was
tranſlated, he was reported of, that he had
pleaſed God.

But without faith it is vnpoſſible to
pleaſe him: for he y^e commeth to God muſt
know that God is, & that he is a rewarder
of them that ſeek him.

By faith Noe being warned of God of
things which were as yet not ſcene, mo-
ued with reuerence, prepared the Arke to the
ſaluation of his houſhold, through the which
Arke hee condemned the worlde, and was
made heire of the righteousnes, which is by
faith.

By faith Abraham when he was called,
obeyed God, to goe out into a place, which
he ſhould afterward receiue for inheritance,
he went out, not knowing whither he went:
By faith he abode in the land of promiſe,
the land a ſtrange countrey, as one that dwelt in
the land of Canaan, with Isaac and Iacob, heires with him of
the ſame promiſe.

For hee looked for a citie hauing a
foundation, whoſe builder & maker is God.

Through faith Sara alſo receiued ſtrength
to conceiue ſeede, and was deliuered of a
ſonne: When ſhe was paſt age, becauſe ſhee
trufte him faithful which had promiſed.

And therefore ſprang there of one, euē
that was dead, ſo many as the ſtars
of the ſkie in multitude, and as the ſande of
the ſea ſhore is innumerable.

All theſe died in faith, and receiued not
the promiſes, but ſaw them aſarre off, & be-
lieued in them, and receiued them thankfully,
knowing that they were ſtrangers and
Pilgrims

pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things, desire plainly that they seeke a countrey.

15 And if they had bene mindful of their countrey, from whence they came out, they had leasure to haue returned,

16 But nowe they desire a better, than is an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed of them to be called their God: for hee hath prepared for them a citie,

17 By faith Abraham offred vp Isaac, which hee was tried, and hee that had receiued the promises offred his onely begotten Sonne,

18 (To whome it was said, In Isaac shall thy seed be called)

19 For he considered that God was able to raise him vp euen from the dead: from whence he receiued him also after a sort.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau, concerning things to come.

21 By faith Jacob when hee was a dying, blessed both the sonnes of Ioseph, & leaning on the end of his staffe, worshipped God.

22 By faith Ioseph when hee died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel, & gaue commandment of his bone.

23 By faith Moses when hee was borne, was hid three moneths of his parents, because they saw hee was a proper childe, neither feared they the kings commandment.

24 By faith Moses when he was come to age, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaos daughter,

25 And chose rather to suffer aduersities with the people of God, then to enioye the pleasures of sinnes for a season.

26 Esteeming the rebuke of Christ greater riches then the treasures of Egypt: for he had respect vnto the recompense of reward.

27 By faith he forsooke Egypt, & feared not

mercies of the King: for he entred
he that saw him which is invisible.

18 Through faith he ordeined the Pas-
over, and the effusion of blood, least he that
destroyed the first borne, should touch them.

19 By faith they passed through the red
sea by drie land, which when γ Egypti-
ans assayed to do, they were swallowed vp.

20 By faith the walles of Iericho fell
downe, after they were compassed about
seuen dayes.

21 By faith the harlot Rahab perished
with them which obeyed not, when she
received the spies peaceably.

22 And what shall I more say? for the
time would be too short for me to tel of Ge-
son, of Barac, & of Sampson, and of Iephre,
of Dauid, & Samuel, & of the Prophets,

23 Which through faith subdued king-
domes, wrought righteousness, obtained the
promises, stopped the mouthes of lions,

24 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped
the edge of the sword, of weake, were made
strong, waxed valiant in battell, turned to
fight the armies of the alijants.

25 The woman receiued their dead raised
to life: others also were racked, and would
not be deliuered, that they might receiue
their resurrection.

26 And others haue bene tryed by mo-
rting & scourgings, yea, moreouer by bonds
and imprisonment.

27 They were stoned, they were hewen
under, they were tempted, they were slain
with the sword, they wandred vp and down in
skins of camels and in goats skines, being
beaten, afflicted, and tormented:

28 Whom the world was not worthy of:
they wandred in wildernesses & mountaines,
in denes, and caves of the earth.

29 And

39 And these all through faith
good report and receiued not the promise.

40 God providing a better thing for vs
they without vs should not be made perfect.

CHAP. IX.

1 Hee doeth not onely by the examples of the
fathers before recited, exhort the to patience
and constancie, 3 but also by the example of
Christ. 11 That the chasteninge of God can
not be rightly Iudged by the outward sight
of our flesh.

W Herefore, let vs also, seeing that we are
compassed with so great a cloud of wit-
nesses, cast away euery thing that presseth
down, and the sinne that hangeth so fast on vs,
let vs runne with patience the race that is
set before vs,

2 Looking vnto Iesus the authour and
finisher of our faith, who for the ioy that was
set before him, endured the crosse, and de-
spised the shame, and is set at the right hand
of the throne of God.

3 Consider therefore him y^e endured such
speaking against of sinners, lest ye should
be wearied and faint in your mindes.

4 Yee haue not yet resisted vnto blood,
running against sinne.

5 And ye haue forgotten the consolation
which speaketh to you as vnto childre, My
sonne, despise not the chastening of y^e Lord,
neither faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loveth, hee chasteneth:
and he scourgeth euery sonne that hee
receiueth.

7 If yee endure chastening, God offereth
himselfe vnto you as vnto sonnes: for what
sonne is it whom the father chasteneth not?

8 If therefore ye bee without correction
whereof all are partakers, then are ye be-
arded, and not sonnes,

For wee haue had the fathers
which corrected vs, and wee gain
reference: Should wee not much rather
subiection vnto the Father of spirits,
we might liue? —

For they verely for a few dayes cha-
stised vs after their owne pleasure: but hee
correcteth vs for our profite, that we might
partakers of his holinesse.

Now no chastening for the present see-
meth to be ioyous, but grievous: but after-
ward it bringeth the quiet fruit of righteous-
nes, vnto the which are thereby exercised.

Wherefore lift vp *your* handes which
hang downe, and *your* weake knees,

And make straight steps vnto your
gite, least that which is halting bee turned
out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

Follow peace with al men, and holie
nes, without the which no man shall see
the Lord.

Take heede, that no man fall away
from the grace of God: let no roote of bit-
ternes spring vp and trouble you, least there
by many be defiled. —

Let there bee no fornicatour, or pro-
fane person, as Esau, which for a portion
of meate solde his birthright.

For ye know how that afterward also
when he would haue inherit the blessing, he
was rejected: for he found no place to repen-
te, though he sought *that blessing* wth teares.

For yee are not come vnto the mount
that might bee touched, nor vnto burning
mount, nor to blacknesse and darkenesse, and
shadow of death,

Neither vnto the sound of a trumpet,
nor the voyce of words, which they y^e heard
and excused themselves, that the word should
not be spoken to them any more,

20 For they were not able to stand,
which was commanded, Yea, though a house
be on the mountaine, it shall bee fioned,
and thrust thorow with a dart:

21 And so terrible was the sight which
appeared, that Moses said, I feare & quake.

22 But ye are come vnto the mount Sion,
and to the citie of the living God, the cele-
stial Hierusalem, and to the company of in-
numerable Angels, —

23 And to the assembly & congregation
of the first borne, which are written in hea-
ven, and to God the iudge of all and to the
spirits of iust and perfite men, —

24 And to Iesus the Mediator of y new
testament, and to the blood of sprinkling
that speaketh better things then y of Aba.

25 See that ye despise not him that speaketh
from heauen: for if they escaped not, which refused
him that spake on earth: much more shall
we not escape, if wee turne away from him
that speaketh from heauen.

26 Whose voyce then shooke the earth,
and now hath declared, saying, Yet once
more will I shake, not the earth onely, but
also heauen.

27 And this worde, Yet once more, signi-
fieth the remoouing of those things, which
are shaken, as of those things, which are made
with hands, that the thinges which are not
shaken, may remaine.

28 Wherefore seeing wee receiue a king-
dome, which cannot be shaken, let vs haue
grace, whereby we may so serue God, that
we may please him with reuerence & feare.

29 For euen our God is a consuming
fire.

CHAP. XIII

He giueth good lessons not onely for maner
7 but also for desire.

10 Brotherly loue continue.
11 Be not forgetful to encertaine Affa-
12 for thereby some haue receiued Angels
13 in their houses vnwares.

14 Remember them that are in bondes, as
15 if ye were bound with them: & them
16 in affliction, as if ye were also afflic-
17 in the body.

18 Marriage is honourable among al men;
19 the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers &
20 detests God will iudge.

21 Let your conuersation be without con-
22 ditions, and be content with those things y
23 haue: for he hath sayd,

24 I wil not faile thee, neither forsake thee.
25 So that we may boldly say, The Lord
26 is my helper, neither will I feare what man
27 doe vnto mee.

28 Remember them which haue the ouer-
29 sight of you, which haue declared vnto you
30 the worde of God: whose faith follow, con-
31 sidering what hath bene the ende of their
32 conuersation. Iesus Christ yesterday, and is
33 the same also is for euer.

34 Bee not caried about, with diuers and
35 vaine doctrines: for it is a good thing that
36 your heart be stablished with grace, and not
37 with meanes, which haue not profited them
38 that haue bin occupied therein.

39 We haue an altar where of they haue
40 no authoritie to eat which serue in the Ta-
41 bernacle.

42 For the bodies of those beasts, whose
43 blood is brought into the Holy place by the
44 High Priest for sinne, are burnt without the
45 campe.

46 Therefore euen Iesus, that he might
47 sanctifie the people with his owne blood,
48 suffered without the gate.

Q. 9 13 Let

TO THE HEBREWS

13 Let vs goe foorth to him therefore
of the campe bearing his reproch.

14 For here haue we no continuing city:
but we seeke one to come.

15 Let vs therefore by him offer the sacri-
fice of praise alwayes to God: \bar{y} is, the fruit
of the lips, which confesse his Name.

16 To do good, and to distribute for-
giue: for with such sacrifices God is pleased.

17 Obey them that haue the oversight
of you, and submit your selues: for they watch
for your soules, as they \bar{y} must giue account
that they may doe it with ioy: and not with
griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.

18 Pray for vs: for we are assured that
we haue a good conscience in al things, desiring
to line honestly.

19 And I desire you some what \bar{y} more
earnestly, that ye so do, that I may be re-
sted to you more quickly.

20 The God of peace that brought againe
from the dead our lord Iesus, the great shep-
heard of the sheepe, through the blood of the
euermlasting couenant,

21 Make you perfect in all good worke,
so do his wil, working in you that which is
pleasant in his sight through Iesus Christ,
whom be praise for euer and euer Amen.

22 I beseech you also brethren, suffer the
words of exhortation: for I haue writte vnto
you in few words.

23 Know that our brother Timotheus is
deliuered, with whom (if he come shortly)
I will see you.

24 Salute al the that haue \bar{y} ouersight
of you & al \bar{y} Saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you al Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes from Italy.
and sent by Timotheus.

THE GENERAL EPISTLE
of James,

CHAP. I.

1 *Trieste* *of patience, & of faith. 1 & 2*
lixeſſe of minde in rich men.

James a ſervant of God and of the Lord
 Jeſus Chriſt to the twelue tribes, which
 are ſcattered abroad, ſalutation.

My brethren count it exceeding joy
 if ye fall into diuers tentations.

Knowing that the trying of your faith
 bringeth forth patience,

And let patience haue her perfect work,
 that ye may bee perfect and entire, lacking
 nothing.

If any of you lacke wiſedō, let him aſke
 of God, which giueth to al men liberally, &
 without reproch to man, and it ſhalbe giuen him.
 But let him aſke in faith, & wauer not:
 for he that wauereth, is like a waue of the
 ſea, toſt of the winde and caried away.

Neither let that man thinke that hee
 ſhal receiue any thing of the Lord.

A double minded man is vnſtable in all
 his wayes.

Let the brother of low degree reioyce
 that he is exalted:

Againe, hee that is rich, in that hee is
 made low: for as y flower of the graſſe, ſhal
 wither away.

For as when the ſonne riſeth with
 ſcorcheth the graſſe withereth, & his flower
 falleth away, and the goodly ſhape of it pe-
 riſheth: euen ſo ſhal the rich man wither a-
 way in all his wayes.

Bleſſed is the man that endureth ten-
 tation: for when he is tried, hee ſhal receiue

the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

13 Let no man say when hee is tempted, I am tempted of God for God can not be tempted with euil, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But euery man is tempted, when he is drawen away by his owne concupiscence, and is enticed.

15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sinne, and sinne when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Erre not, my deare brethren.

17 Euery good giuing, and euery perfect gift is from above, and commeth down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

18 Of his own wil begate he vs with the word of truth, that we should be as \bar{y} first fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my deare brethren, let euery man be swift to heare, slow to speake, and slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man doeth not accomplish the righteousness of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superstitie of malicioussnesse, and receiue meeknesse the worde that is grafted in you, which is able to saue your soules.

22 And be ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne selues.

23 For if any heere the worde, and do it not, he is like vnto a man that beholdeth his natural face in a glasse.

24 For when he hath considered himselfe, he goeth his way, and forgetteth immediately what maner of one he was.

25 But who so looketh in the perfect law of libertie, and continueth therein, he not being a forgetful hearer but a doer of \bar{y} word, shall be blessed in his deed.

...man among ...
...refraineth not his tongue, but de-
...his own hart, this mā's religio is vain
...Pure religio & vndefiled before God,
...the Father, is this, to visit the fatherles
...widowes in their aduersitie, and to keepe
...helle vnspotted of the world.

CHAP. II.

He sayth, that to haue respect of persons is
...agreeable to Christian faith, 14 which se
...passe in words is not enough, unlesse 15
...we shew it also in deedes of mercie & cha-
...ity, 22 after the example of Abraham,

MY brethen, haue not the faith of our
...glorious Lord Iesus Christ in respect
...of persons.

For if there come into your company a
...man with a golde ring, and in goodly appa-
...ment, and there come in also a poore man in
...rayment.

And ye haue respect to him that wea-
...reth the gay clothing, and say vnto him, Sit
...thou here in a goodly place, and say vnto the
...poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my
...footstoolle,

Are ye not partial in your selues, & are
...become iudges of euil thoughts?

Hearken, my beloued brethre, hath not
...God chusen y^e poore of this world, that they
...should be rich in faith, and heires of y^e king-
...dom which he promissed to thē y^e loue him?

But ye haue despised the poore. Doe
...not the rich oppresse you by tyranny, and do
...not they draw you before the iudgmēt seat?

Do not they blaspheme the worthy
...Name after which ye be named?

But if ye fulfil the royal Law, according
...to the Scripture, which sayth, Thou shalt loue
...thy neighbour as thy selfe, ye do wel.

But if ye regard the persons, yee com-

transgressours.

10 For whosoever shall keepe the Law, and yet faileth in one point, he is guilty of all.

11 For he that sayd, Thou shalt not commit adultery, sayd also, Thou shalt not kill. Now though thou doest none adulterie, yet if thou killest, thou art a transgressour of the Law.

12 So speake ye, and so doe, as they that shalbe iudged by the Law of liberty.

13 For there shalbe condemnation mercellesse to him that sheweth not mercy, and mercy reioyceth against condemnation.

14 What availeth it, my brechren, though a man sayth he hath faith, when he hath no works? can that faith save him.

15 For if a brother or a sister be naked, and destitute of dayly food,

16 And one of you say vnto the, Depart in peace: warme your selues, and fil your bellies: notwithstanding, ye giue them not these things which are needfull to the body, what helpeth it!

17 Euen so the faith, if it haue no works, is dead in it selfe.

18 But some man might say, Thou hast Faith & I haue workes: shew mee thy faith out of thy workes, and I will shew thee my faith by my workes.

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God: thou doest well: the devils also beleeue it, & tremble.

20 But wilt thou vnderstand, O thou vain man, that the faith which is without workes, is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified through workes, when he offered Isaac his son vpon the altar?

22 See

works? and through the works was
made perfect,

And the Scripture was fulfilled, which

Abraham beleued God, & it was im-
puted vnto him for righteousnes; and he vvas
called the friend of God.

14 Ye see then how that of works a man
is justified, and not of faith onely.

15 Likewise also was not Rahab the har-
lot justified through works, when she had
receiued the messengers, & sent them out a-
nother way?

16 For as the body without the spirit is
dead, even so \bar{y} faith without works is dead.

CHAP. III

To shew that a Christian man must gouerne
his tongue with the bridle of faith and
charity, & he declareth the commodities and
mischiefs that insue therof: 10 & how much
mans wisdom 17 differeth from heauely.

MY brethren, be not many masters,
knowing \bar{y} we shal receiue the grea-
ter condemnation.

1 For in many things we sinne al. If any
man sinne not in word, hee is a perfect man,
and able to bridle al the body.

2 Beholde, we put bits into the horses
mouthes that they shoulde obey vs, and wee
turne about all their body.

3 Beholde also the ships, which though
they be so great, & are driue of fierce winds,
yet are they turned about with a very small
rudder, whithersoener the gouernour listeth.

4 Euen so the tongue is a litle member,
boasteth of great things: beholde, how great
a thing a litle fire kindleth.

5 And the tongue is fire, yea, a world of
wickednesse: so is the tongue set among our
members, that it defileth the whole body, &
setteth

set on fire the course of nature,
set on fire of hell,

7 For the whole nature of beasts, and
birds, and of creeping things, and things
the sea is tamed and hath bene tamed of the
nature of man,

8 But the tongue can no man tame, It
is an venomous euil, full of deadly poison,

9 Therewith blesse wee God even the
Father, and therewith curse we men which
are made after the similitude of God;

10 Out of one mouth proceedeth blessing
& cursing: my brethren, these things ought
not so to be,

11 Doth a fountaine send forth at one
place sweet water and bitter?

12 Can the figtree, my brethren, bring
forth Oliues, either a vine figs? so can not
a fountaine make both salt water and sweet.

13 Who is a wise man, and endued with
knowledge among you? let him shew by
good conuersation his works in meeknesse of
wisdome.

14 But if yee haue bitter enuying, & strife
in your hearts, reioyce not, neither be liars a-
gainst the trueth.

15 This wisdome descendeth not from
aboue, but is earthly, sensual, and deuillish,

16 For where enuying and strife is there
is sedition, and al manner of euil words.

17 But the wisdome that is from aboue,
is first Pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to
be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits,
without iudging, and without hypocrisie.

18 And the fruit of righteousnesse is sowne
in peace, of them that make peace.

CHAP. IIII.

He reckoneth up the mischiefes that proceed
of the workes of the flesh,

From

whom are wares, and howe
you? are they not hence, one of
pleasures that fight in your members?
lust, & haue not ye enuy, & desire im-
merately, and can not obtaine: ye fight &
and get nothing, because ye aske not.
Ye aske, & receiue not, because ye aske
ill, that yee might lay the same out on
pleasures.

Ye adulterers & adulteresses, know yee
that the enimitie of the world is the eni-
my of God? Whosoever therefore will be a
friend of the world, maketh himselfe an ene-
my of God.

Do ye thinke that the Scripture saith in
vain? The spirit that dwelleth in vs, lusteth
after enuy.

But the Scripture offereth more grace, &
therefore sayth God resisteth the proud, and
giveth grace to the humble.

Submit your selues to God: resist ye deuil,
and he will flee from you.

Draw nere to God, and he will draw
nere to you. Clense your hands, ye sinners, &
purge your hearts, ye double minded.

Suffer afflictions, and sorrow ye, and
weep: let your laughter be turned into moun-
ting: and your ioy into heavinesse,

Cast downe your selues before the
lorde, and he will lift you vp.

Speake not evil one of another, bre-
thren, He that speaketh evil of his brother, or
he that condemneth his brother, speaketh
evil of the Law, and condemneth the Law:
& if thou condemnest the Law thou art not
an obseruer of the Law, but a iudge.

There is one Lawgiuer, which is able
to saue & to destroy. Who art thou y iudgest
another man?

Goe to now ye that say, To day or to morrow

come there a yere, and buy, and sell, and
gaine.

14 (And yet ye cannot tel what shall be
morow. For what is your life? It is even as a
poult that appeareth a litle time and after
ward vanissheth away)

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord
wil, and, if we liue, we wil do this or that.

16 But now ye reioyce in your boasting,
all such reioycing is euil.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth how
to doe well, and doeth it not, to him it is
said.

CHAP. V.

1 He threatneth the rich with Gods seuerel
ment for their pride, 7 that the poore be-
ring the miserable end of the rich, 8 may
siently beare afflictions. 11 as Iob did. 14
in their distresses.

GO to now, ye rich men: weep: & howl
for your miseries that shall come vpon
you.

2 Your riches are corrupt, and your
strengths are motheaten.

3 Your golde and siluer is cancred, and the
rust of them shalbe a witnesse against you,
they shal eat your flesh, as it were fire. Ye haue
heaped vp treasure for the last dayes.

4 Beholde, the hire of the laborers, which
haue reaped your fields (which is of you
backe by fraud) crieth, and the cries of the
which haue reaped, are entred into the ears
of the Lord of hosts.

5 Ye haue liued in pleasure on the earth,
& in wantonnesse. Ye haue nourished your
hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Yee haue condemned and haue killed the
Iust, and he hath not resisted you,

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, vnto the
coming of the Lord, Behold, the husbandmen
wait

precious fruit of the earth,
patience for it, vntill he receive
& the latter raine,
Be yee also patient therefore, and settle
your hearts : for the comming of the Lord
is at hand.

Grudge not one against another, brethren,
lest ye be condemned: beholde, \S Iudge sta-
ndeth before the doore.

Take, my brethren, \S Prophets for an
example of suffering aduersitie, and of long
patience, which haue spoken in the Name of
the Lord.

Beholde, we count them blessed which
haue heard of the patience of Iob
and haue knowen what end the Lord made.

For the Lord is very pitiful and mercifull,

But before al things, my brethren, I sweare
by heauen, nor by earth, nor by
any other othe? but let your yea be yea, &
your nay, nay, lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him
sing. Is any merry? Let him sing.

14 Is any sicke among you? Let him call
for the Elders of the Church, and let them
anoynt him with oyle in the
Name of the Lord.

15 And \S prayer of faith shal saue \S sicke,
and the Lord shall raise him vp: and if he haue
committed sinnes, they shalbe forgiven him.

16 Acknowledge your faults one to ano-
ther, & pray one for another, \S ye may be
healed: for \S prayer a righteous man availeth
much, if it be fervent,

17 Helias was a man subiect to like passi-
ons as we are, and he prayed earnestly that
it might not raine, and it rained not on the
earth for three yeres, and sixe moneths,

18 And he prayed againe, & \S heauen gaue
raine, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Bre-

19 Brethren, if any of you have been
from the truth, and some man hath con-
verted him,

20 Let him know ^y he which hath con-
verted the sinner from going astray out of the
way shall save a soule fro death & shall have
a multitude of sinnes,

THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL of Peter.

CHAP. I.

1 He extolleth Gods mercie shewed in Christ,
which wee lay hold on by faith, and possesse
through hope: 10 whereof the Prophets fore-
told.

Peter an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to the
strangers that dwell here & there thro-
rowout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia,
Asia, and Bithynia.

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge
of God the Father vnto sanctification of the
Spire, through obedience and sprinkling of
the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace & peace be
multiplied vnto you.

3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our
Lorde Iesus Christ, which according to his
abundant mercie hath begotten vs againe
vnto a lively hope by the resurrectiō of Iesus
Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance immorall and vndefe-
led, & that withereth not, reserved in hea-
ven for vs,

5 Which are kept by the power of God
through faith vnto saluation, which is pre-
pared to be shewed in the last time.

6 Wherein ye reioyce, though now for
a season (if neede require) ye are in heavinesse
through manifold tentations.

7 That the trial of your faith, being much

CHAP. I.

precious the gold y^e perisheth) though
 melted with fire) might be found vnto
 prayse: and honour and glory at the ap-
 pearance of Iesus Christ.

Whom ye haue not seene, and yet loue
 in whom now, though yee see him not,
 doe you beleene, and reioyce with ioy
 unspeakable and glorious.

Receiuing the end of your faith, *euen*
 the saluation of *your* soules. —

Of the which saluation the Prophets
 enquired & searched, which prophesied
 the grace that should come vnto you,

Searching when or what time y^e Spirit
 which testified before of Christ which was
 to come should declare the sufferings *that*
 should come vnto Christ, and the glory that
 should follow.

Vnto whom it was reueiled y^e not vn-
 to themselues, but vnto vs they should mi-
 nister the things, which are now shewed
 vnto you by them which haue preached vnto
 y^e Gospel by y^e holy Ghost sent downe
 from heauen, the which things the Angels de-
 sire to behold. —

Wherefore gird vp the loynes of your
 sober, & trust perfectly on y^e grace
 which is brought vnto you, in the reuelation of
 Iesus Christ,

As obediēt childrē, not fashioning your
 selues vnto the former lusts of your ignorāce:

But as he which hath called you, is ho-
 ly, so be ye holy in all maner of conuersatiō,

Because it is written, Be ye holy, for I
 am holy. —

And if ye cal him Father, which with-
 out respect of persons iudgeth according to
 every mans work, passe y^e time of your dwell-
 ing here in feare.

Knowing that ye were not redeemed
 with

I. PETER.

with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vaine conuersation, receiued by traditions of the fathers,

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lambe vndefiled, and without spot,

20 Which was ordeined before the foundation of the world, but was declared in these last times for your sakes,

21 Which by his meanes doe beleue in God that raised him from the dead, & gave him glory, y your faith & hope might be in God,

22 Having purified your soules in obeying the truth through y spirit, to loue brotherly without faying, loue one another with pure heart feruently,

23 Being borne anew, not of mortal seed, but of immortal, by the worde of God, which liueth and endureth for euer.

24 For all flesh is as grasse, and all the glory of man is as the flower of grasse. The grasse withereth, & the flower falleth away,

25 But the word of the Lorde endureth for euer: and this is the word which is preached among you.

CHAP. II.

2 He exhorteth the new borne in faith to let their lines answerable to the same, & let their faith shoulde stagger, hee bringeth in that which was foretold touching Christ, All of

Wherefore laying aside, all malitiousnes, all guile, and dissimulation, and enuie, and all euil speaking,

As new borne babes desire the sincere milke of the word, that ye may grow thereby

3 Because ye haue tasted that the Lords bountiful.

4 To whom comming as vnto a liuing stone disallowed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

CHAP. II.

as lively stones he made a spiritual
 holy Priesthood to offer vp spiritual
 acceptable to God by Iesus Christ.
 Wherefore also it is contined in the
 Behold I put in Sion a chiefe corner
 elect and precious : and hee that belee-
 therein, shal not be ashamed.

Vnto you therefore which beleeue, it is
 but vnto the which be disobedient,
 dead, & gone which the builders disallowed, y
 might be made the head of the corner,
 And a stone to stumble at, & a rocke of
 offence, euen so them which stumble at the
 being disobedient, vnto y which thing
 were euen ordeined.

But ye are a chosen generation, a royall
 hood, an holy nation, & people set at
 apart, that ye should shew forth the ver-
 of him y hath called you out of dark-
 and all into his marucilous light, -
 Which in time past were not a people
 are now y people of God: which in time,
 were not vnder mercie : but now haue
 which is pre-ordained mercie.

1 Dearly beloued, I beseech you, as stra-
 and pilgrims, abstaine fro fleshly lustes,
 fight against the soule, -
 And haue your conuersation honest a-
 mong the Gentiles, that they which speake
 of you as of euil doers, may by your good
 behauiour which they shal see, glorifie God in
 this day of visitation.

23 Therefore submit your selues vnto all
 the sinners ordinance of man for the Lords sake,
 whether it be vnto y king, as vnto y superior
 the Lord. Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them y
 sent of him, for the punishment of euill
 to a liuening, & for the praise of them that doe wel
 of God. For so is the wil of God. that by well
 doing ye may put to silence the ignorance
 of

of the foolish men,

16 As free, and not as having the title for a cloke of malicioufnesse, but as seruants of God.

17 Honour all men: love brotherly fellowship: feare God: honour the king.

18 Seruants, be subiect to your masters al feare, not only to the good and courteous but also to the forward:

19 For this is thanke worthy, if a mans conscience toward God endure griefe, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what prayse is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye take it patiently: but and if when ye doe wel, ye suffer wrongfully & take it patiently, this is acceptable to God.

21 For heretunto yee are called: for Christ also suffered for you, leauing you an example that yee should follow his steps.

22 Who did no sinne, neither was there guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when hee was reuiled, reuiled not again: when he suffered he threatned not, but committed it to him & iudgeth righteous.

24 Who his own selfe bare our sinnes in his bodie on the tree, that we being dead in sin, should liue in righteousness: by whose stripes yee were healed.

25 For yee were as sheepe going astray, but are now returned vnto the shepheard and Bishop of your soules.

CHAP. III

1 That Christian women should not contemne their husbands, though they be infidels.

I likewise let & wiues be subiect to their husbands, that euen they which obey not & word, may without & word be won by the conuersation of the wiues,

2 While they beholde your pure conuersation, which is with feare.

3 What

the head, and the head shall be covered
with a golden haire, and golde put about, or
on of apparel:

Let it bee the hid man of the heart,
which *benefiteth* in the incorruptiō of a meeke
quiet spirit, which is before God a thing
well set by.

For euen after this maner in time past
the holy women, which trusted in God,
themselves, & were subiect to their hus-

As Sara obeyed Abraham, & called him
whose daughters ye are, whiles ye doe
not being afraid of any terrour.

Likewise ye husbandes dwell with thē
in knowledge, giuing honor vnto the
man, as vnto the weaker vessell, euen as
ye which are heires together of the grace
of life, that your prayers be not interrupted.

Finally, be ye al of one minde: one suf-
fer with another: loue as brethren: be pitie-
full & courteous,

Not rendering euill for euill, neither re-
buke for rebuke, but contrariwise blesse,
knowing that ye are thereunto called that
ye should be heires of blessing.

For if any man long after life, & to se
good dayes, let him refraine his tongue fro
evil, and his lips that they speake no guile,

Let him eschew euil, and doe good: let
him seeke peace and follow after it.

For the eyes of the Lord are ouer the
righteous, and his eares are open vnto their
prayers: and the face of the Lord is against
them that doe euil.

And who is it that will harme you, if
ye follow that which is good?

Norwithstanding blessed are ye, if ye
suffer for righteousness sake, Yea, feare, not
their feare, neither be troubled.

R 1 15 But

and be ready to give an account
every man that asketh you a reason of
hope \bar{y} is in you, with meeknes & gentlenes.
16 Having a good conscience, that when
they speake evil of you as of evil doers,
may bee a shamed which slander your
conuersation in Christ.

17 For it is better (if the wil of God
be so) that ye suffer for wel doing then for
doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered
sinnes, the iust for the vniust, that hee might
bring vs to God, and was put to death
concerning \bar{y} flesh, but was quickened by \bar{y} Spirit.

19 By the which he also went, & preached
vnto the spirits that are in prison.

20 Which were in time passed disobedient,
when once the long suffering of God abode
the daies of Noe, while the Arke was pre-
paring, wherein few, that is, eight soules, were
saued in the water,

21 Whereof the bapisme that now is, maketh
swearing that figure (which is not a putting
away of the filth of the flesh, but a confidence
demanding which a good conscience maketh
to God) sauerth vs also by the resurrection
of Iesus Christ,

22 Which is at \bar{y} right hand of God, gone
into heaven, to whom the Angels, & powers
& might are subiect.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He bringeth in Christs example, & applieth it
to \bar{y} mortifying of \bar{y} flesh, & especially com-
mending charitie: 12 & so encreateth of patience.

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered
for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise
with the same minde, which is, that he which
hath suffered in \bar{y} flesh, hath ceased from
sin.

2 That he henceforward should live

...not after
...of men, but after the will of God.
...sufficient for us that we haue
...the lust, of
...walking in wantonnesse, lusts
...in gluttonie, drinkings, and in a-
...idolatries.

wherein it seemeth to them strange, that
of God be not with them vnto the same effect
for we therefore speake they enill of you.

Which shall giue accounts to him, y^e is
ffered to iudge quicke and dead.

For vnto this purpose was the Gospel
th^e also vnto the dead, that they might
be condemned, according to men in the flesh,
might liue according to God in y^e spirit.

Now the end of all things is at hand.
Therefore sober, & watching in prayer
abode. But aboue all things haue seruent loue
s purposing you: for loue shall couer the multi-
es, w^h of sinnes.

Be ye harborous one to another without
is, judging.

Let euery man as hee hath receiued y^e
minister y^e same one to another, as good
makers of the manifold grace of God.

If any man speake, let him speake, as
words of God, If any man minister, let
do it as of the ability vvhich God mini-
st^r, that God in al things may be glorified
through Iesus Christ, to vvhom is praise and
minion for euer and euer. Amen.

th^e Dearly beloued thinke it not strange
concerning y^e triall, vvhich is amōg you
troule you, as though some strange thing
ed fore come vnto you:

But reioyce, inas much as ye are par-
takers of Christs sufferings, that when his
glory shall appeare, ye may be glad & reioyce
e. If ye be railed vpon for the Name of

K 1 2 Christ.

I. PETER.

Christ blessed are ye: for *ſ*pirit of
of God resteth vpon you: which on their
is euil spokē of: but on your part is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a
therer, or as a thiefe, or an euill doer, or a
bustle body in other mens matters.

16 But if any man suffer as a Christian,
him not be ashamed: but let him glorify
God in this behalfe.

17 For the time is come, that iudgement
must be gonne at the house of God. If it
begin at vs, what shall the end be of them
which obey not the Gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved,
where shal *ſ* vn godly & *ſ* sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according
to the wil of God, commit their souls
to him in wel doing, as vnto a faithful creature.

CHAP. V.

1 He warneth the elders not to vsurpe authori-
tie ouer the Church. & will'ng the yonger
to be willing to be taught, & to be made.

THE Elders, which are among you, I be-
seech which am also an Elder, and
witness of the sufferings of Christ, & also
taker of the glorie that shall be reueiled.

2 Feed the flocke of God, which de-
pendeth vpon you caring for it not by constraint
but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of
readie minde:

3 Not as though ye were lords ouer the
heritage, but that ye may be ensamples to
the flocke.

4 And when that chiefe Shepheard shall
appeare, ye shall receiue an incorruptible
crown of glorie.

5 Likewise ye yonger submit your selues
vnto the Elders, and submit your selues euery
man one to another: decke your selues
wardly in lowlinesse of minde: for God

spirit of peace, and giueth grace to y^e hum-
ble your selues therefore vnder y^e
hand of God, that he may exalt you
at the same time.

Cast al your care on him: for hee careth
for you.

Be sober and watch: for your aduersary
the deuil as a roaring lyon, walketh about,
seeking whom he may deuoure: —

Whom resist stedfast in the faith, know-
ing that y^e same afflictions are accomplished
in your brethren which are in the world,

And the God of all grace, which hath
called vs vnto his eternall glorie by Christ
Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a litle, make
your perfect confirme, strengthen, & stablish
your faithfull creatur.

To him be glorie & dominion for euer,
euer, Amen,

By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto
me, as I suppose, haue I written briefly, ex-
horting and testifying how that this is the
grace of God, wherein ye stand.

The Church that is at Babylon elected
together with you, saluteth you, and Marcus
her sonne.

Greete ye one another with the kisse
of loue, Peace be with you all which are in
Iesus Christ, AMEN.

THE SECOND EPISTLE GE-

nerall of Peter.

CHAP. I.

Having spoken of the bountifulnesse of God, 5
& of the vertues of faith, 6 he exhorteth the
to holines of life. 12 & that his counsel may
be y^e more effectual, 14 hee sheweth that his
death is at hand, 16 & that himselfe did see
the power of Christ which he opened vnto the

Simon Peter a Ierusalem and
of Iesus Christ, to you which haue
obtained like precious faith with us
righteousnes of our God and Saviour
Iesus Christ:

2 Grace and peace bee multiplied to
you thorough the acknowledging of God and
IESVS our Lord,

3 According as his diuine power hath
giuen vnto vs all things that pertaine vnto
& godlinesse, through the acknowledging
of him that hath called vs vnto glory & vnto
himselfe by his own blood:

4 Whereby most great and precious
promises are giue vnto vs, that by the ye
shall be partakers of the diuine nature, in that
ye shall flee the corruption, which is in the world
through lust.

5 Therefore giue euen all diligence that
ye may obtaine the grace of our Lord Iesus
Christ: unto:ioyne moreouer vertue with your faith
& with vertue knowledge:

6 And with knowledge, temperance: and
with temperance, patience: & with patience,
godlinesse:

7 And with godlinesse, brotherly kinde-
nesse: & with brotherly kindnesse loue.

8 For if these things bee among you, &
ye shall not be bound, they will make you that yee
shall be idle, nor vnfruitful in your knowledge
of our Lord Iesus Christ:

9 For hee that hath not these things,
is blind, and cannot see farre off, and hath
gotten that he was purged from his old sinnes:

10 Wherefore, brethren, giue rather dili-
gence to make your calling and electiō firm
for if yee doe these things ye shall neuer
fall:

11 For by this meanes an entering shall
bee ministred vnto you abundantly into the
eternall kingdome of our Lord & Saviour
Iesus Christ,

12 Wherefore, I wil not bee negligent

that ye haue knowledge, and be in
the present truth,
11 For I thinke it meete as long as I
the Tabernacle, to stirre you vp by
you in remembrance:

12 Seeing I know that the time is at hand
that I must lay down this my tabernacle, e-
for our Lord Iesus Christ hath shewed me
13 I wil endeuour therfore alwayes, that
I may be able to haue remembrance of
things after my departing.

14 For we followed not deceiueable
when wee opened vnto you the power
of our Lord Iesus Christ, but w
eyes we law his Maiestie:

15 For he receiued of God the Father ho-
ur and glory, whē there came such a voyce
to him from y^e excellent glory, This is my
beloued Sonne, in whom I am wel pleased.

16 And this voyce wee heard vyhen he
came from heauen, being vvith him in the
holy mount.

17 We haue also a most sure vvord of
Prophets, to the vvich ye doe vvell that ye
ake heed, as vnto a light that shineth in a
dark place, vntil the day davyv, and the day
shall arise in your hearts.

18 So that ye first know this, that no pro-
phecie of the Scripture is of any priuate inter-
pretation.

19 For the prophecie came not in old
time by the vvill of man: but holy men of
God spake as they were mooued by the holy

CHAP. II.

*He foretelleth them of false teachers, 3 vvho by
wicked sleights and destruction he declarerth*

BVt there vvere false prophets also amo-
the people, euē as there shall be false tea-

men among you: which priuily shall
in damnable heresies, euē denying the Lord
that hath bought them, and bring vpon the
felues swift damnation.

2 And many shall followe their destruc-
tions, by whom the way of truth shall be
misspoken of,

3 And through couetousnes shall they
fained wordes make merchandise of you
whose condemnation long since resteth
and their destruction slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the Angels that
had sinned, but cast them downe into hel,
deliuered them into chaines of darknes, to be
kept vnto damnation:

5 Neither hath spared the olde worlde
but saued Noe the eight person a preacher of
righteousnesse, and brought in the flood. vpon
the world of the vngodly,

6 And turned the cities of Sodome & Go-
morre into ashes, condemned the & over-
threw them, and made them an ensample
vnto them that after should liue vngodly,

7 And deliuered iust Lot vexed with the
vncleane conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For hee being righteous, and dwelling
among them, in seeing & hearing, vexed his
righteous soule from day to day with their
vnlawfull deedes)

9 The Lord knoweth to deliuer the god-
ly out of tentation, & to reserue the vniust
vnto the day of iudgemēt vnder punishment.

10 And chiefly them that walke after
the flesh in y^e lust of vncleannesse, & desire
gouernement, which are bold, and stand in
their own conceits, and feare not to speake
evil of them that are in dignitie.

11 Whereas the Angels which are greater
both in power and might, giue not railing
iudgement against them before y^e Lord

these as naturall brut beasts,
 sensualitie, and made to be taken and
 destroyed, speake euill of those things which
 they know not, & shal perish through their
 corruption,

13 And shall receiue the wages of vn-
 righteousness, as they which count it plea-
 sant daily to liue deliciously. Spots they are
 blotting themselves in their deceit-
 fulness in feasting with you,

14 Having eyes ful of adulterie, and that
 cannot cease to sin, beguiling vntable souls:
 they haue harts exercised with couetousnes,
 they are the children of curse:

15 Which forsaking the right way, haue
 gone astray, following the way of Balaam,
 the sonne of Bosor, which loued the wages of
 vnrighteousnesse.

16 But he was rebuked for his iniquities
 by the dumb beast speaking with mans voyce
 forbad the foolishnes of the Prophet.

17 These are wells without water, and
 cloudes caried about with a tempest, to whom
 the blackedarkenesse is reserved for euer.

18 For in speaking swelling words of va-
 nity, they beguile with wantonnesse through
 lustes of the flesh the which were cleane esca-
 ped from them which are wrapped in error,

19 Promising vnto them libertie, and are
 themselves the seruants of corruption: for of
 whome soeuer a man is overcome, euen vnto
 the same is he in bondage.

20 For if they, after they haue escaped
 from the filthinesse of the world through
 acknowledging of the Lord, and of the Savi-
 our Iesus Christ, are yettangled againe ther-
 in, and overcome, the latter end is worse
 then the beginning.

21 For it had beene better for them, not
 to haue acknowledged the way of righteous-
 nesse.

to turne from γ holy commandment
vnto them.

22 But it is come vnto them according
the true prouerbe, The dog is returned to his
own vomite: and, The sow γ was washed
in the wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

*He sheweth that he writeth the same thing
again, 2 because they must often be stirred
up, 4 because dangers hang ouer their heads
through certaine mockers.*

THis second Epistle I nowe write vnto
you, beloued, wherewith I stirre vp,
warne your pure mindes.

2 To call to remembrance the word
which were tolde before of γ holy Prophet
and also the commandement of vs the
apostles of the Lord and Saviour.

3 This first vnderstand, That there shall
come in the last daies, mockers, which will
walk after their lusts,

4 And say, Where is the promise of his
comming? For since γ fathers died, all things
continue alike frō the beginning of the crea-
tion,

5 For this they willingly know not, that
the heauens were of old, and the earth that
was of the water and by the water, by the
word of God.

6 Wherefore the world that then was,
perished, overflowed with water.

7 But the heauens and earth which are
now, are kept by the same word in store, &
reserued vnto fire against the day of conde-
nation, & of the destruction of vngodly mē.

8 Dearely beloued, bee not ignorant of
this one thing, that one day is with the Lord
as a thousand yeres & a thousand yeres as
one day,

9 The

the Lords of that promise is not slacke
(as some men count slacknes) but is patient
toward vs, & would haue no man to perish,
but would al men to come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord wil come
as a thiefe in the night, in the which the
heauens shal passe away with a noyse, & the
elements shal melt with heate, and the earth
with y^e works y^e are therein, shalbe burnt vp.

11 Seeing therefore that all these things
shall be dissolved, what maner persons ought
ye to be in holy conuersation and godlines,

12 Looking for, and hasting vnto the
coming of that day of God, by the which the
heauens being on fire, shall bee dissolved, &
the elements shal melt with heate?

13 But wee looke for new heauens, and
new earth, according to his promise, wherein
dwelleth righteousness.

14 Wherefore beloved, seeing that yee
looke for such things, be diligent y^e ye may
be found of him in peace, without spot, and
blameles.

15 And suppose that the long suffering of
our Lorde is saluation, euen as our beloved
brother Paul according to the wisdom gi-
uen vnto him wrote to you.

16 As one, that in al his Epistles speaketh
of these things: among y^e which some things
are hard to be vnderstood, which they y^e are
vnclearned and vnstable, wrest, as they do al-
so other Scriptures vnto their own destruction.

17 Ye therfore beloved, seeing yee know
these things before, beware, lest yee be al-
plucked away with the error of the wicked,
and fal from your owne stedfastnes.

18 But growe in grace & in the know-
ledge of our Lord and Sauour Iesus Ch rist
to him be glory both now and for evermore.
Amen,

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERALL
of Iohn.

CHAP. I.

He testifieth that he bringeth y^e eternal word
wherin is life, 5 & light, 9 God will
mercifull vnto the faithful, if going vnder
the burden of their sins, they learne to
vnto his mercy.

THat which was from the beginning
which wee haue heard, which wee
haue scene & these our eies, which
we haue looked vpon, & those hands
of ours haue handled of that word of life.

2 (For that life was made manifest, and
we haue scene it, & beare witness, & shew
vnto you that eternall life, which was with
the Father, and was made manifest vnto vs)

3 That, I say, which we haue scene and
heard declare we vnto you, that ye may also
haue fellowship with vs, & that our fellow-
ship also may be with the Father, and with
his Sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we vnto you, y^t
your ioy may be full.

5 This then is the message, which we haue
heard of him, & declare vnto you, y^t God is
light, and in him is no darknesse.

6 If we say that wee haue fellowship wth
him, and walke in darkenesse, we lie, and doe
not truely.

7 But if we walke in the light, as he is in
the light we haue fellowship one with ano-
ther, and the blood of Iesus Christ his Sonne
cleaseth vs from all sinne.

8 If we say that we haue no sinne, wee
deceiue our selues, and truth is not in vs.

9 If We acknowledge our finnes, hee is
faithfull and iust to forgie vs our finnes, and

CHAP. II.

GENERAL. If we say we haue not sinned, we make
 a liar, and his word is not in vs.

CHAP. II.

He declareth that Christ is our Mediatour &
 aduocate, 3 & sheweth that the knowledg
 of God consisteth in holinesse of life, 12
 which appertaineth to all sortes, 14 that
 depend on Christ alone.

MY little children, these things write I
 vnto you, that yee sinne not: & if any
 man sinne, we haue an aduocate with y^e Fa-
 ther, Iesus Christ the iust,

2 And he is the reconciliatiō for our sins:
 and not for ours onely, but also for the sinnes
 of the whole world.

3 And hereby we are sure that we know
 him, if wee keepe his commandements.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth
 not his commaundements, is a lyar, and the
 truth is not in him.

5 But hee that keepeth his worde, in him
 is the loue of God perfect in deede: hereby
 we know that ye are in him.

6 He that saith, he remaineth in him, ought
 euen so to walke, as he hath walked.

7 Brethren, I write no newe commaun-
 dement vnto you: but an olde commaunde-
 ment, which yee haue had from the begin-
 ning: this olde commaundement is y^e word,
 which ye haue heard from the beginning.

8 Again, a new commaundement I write
 vnto you that which is true in him, & also in
 you: for the darkenesse is past, and that true
 light now shineth,

9 He that sayth that he is in that light, &
 hateth his brother, is in darkenes vntill this
 time.

10 He that loueth his brother abideth in
 that light, and there is none occasion of euill
 in

him.

11 But he that hateth his brother is in darkenes, & walketh in darknes, & knoweth not whither he goeth because that darkenes hath blinded his eyes, —

12 Little children, I write vnto you, because your finnes are forgiven you for his Names sake.

13 I write vnto you fathers, because ye haue knowē him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you yong men, because ye haue overcome that wicked one. I write vnto you little children, because ye haue knowen the Father.

14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, because yee haue knowen him that is from the beginning. I haue written vnto you yong men, because ye are strong and the word of God abideth in you, and ye haue overcome that wicked one.

15 Loue not this world, neither \bar{y} things that are in this world, If any man loue this world, the loue of the Father is not in him.

16 For al that is in this world (as the lust of \bar{y} flesh, the lust of the eyes, & the pride of life) is not of the Father, but is of this world.

17 And this world passeth away, & the lust thereof but he that fulfilleth the will of God, abideth ever.

18 Little children, it is the last time, & as ye haue heard that Antichrist shal come, eue now are there many Antichrists: whereby we know that it is the last time,

19 They wēt out frō vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had bene of vs: they should haue cōtinued wth vs. But this cōmeth to passe, \bar{y} it might appeare, \bar{y} they are not al of vs.

20 But ye haue an ointment from \bar{y} Holy, so ye and know al things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because ye know

CHAP. III.

not the truth : but because ye know
that no lie is of the truth,

Who is a liar, but he that denieth γ Je-
sus that Christ: the same is that Antichrist
denieth the Father and the Sonne.

Whosoever denieth the Sonne, γ same
denieth the Father.

Let therefore abide in you that same
which ye haue heard from the beginning, γ
which ye haue heard from γ beginning
remain in you, yee also shall conti-
nue in the Sonne and in the Father.

And this is the promise that he hath
promised vs *euem* that eternal life.

These things haue I written vnto you,
warning them that deceiue you.

But γ anointing which ye receiued of
him dwelleth in you: & ye need not that any
man teach you but as γ same anointing tea-
cheth you of al things & it is true, & is not ly-
ing: & as it is taught you, ye shal abide in him.

And now, little children, abide in him,
when he shall appeare, we may be bold &
not be ashamed before him at his comming.
If ye know γ he is righteous, know ye γ
which doeth righteously is borne of him.

CHAP. III

*Letting downe the inestimable glory of this,
that wee are Gods sonnes. 7 sheweth that
tokens of life must be testified by good works
whereof charity is a manifest token.*

BEholde, what loue the Father hath given
vnto vs, that we should be called the sons
of God: for this cause this worlde knoweth
not, because it knoweth not him.

Dearely beloued, now are we the sons
of God, but yet it is not made manifest what
we shalbe: and we know that when he shal
be made manifest, we shalbe like him: for we
shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this life in him purgeth himselfe, eu: n as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sinne, transgresseth also the law: for sinne is the transgression of the Law. —

5 And ye know that he was made manifest, that he might take away our sinnes, in him is no sinne,

6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seene him, neither hath knowen him, —

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doth righteousness, is righteous, as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sinne, is of the devil: for the devil sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose was manifest that Son of God, that hee might loose the works of the devil. —

9 Whosoever is borne of God, sinneth not: for his seede remaineth in him, neither can he sinne, because he is borne of God. —

10 In this are the children of God knownen, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

11 For this is the message, that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.

12 Not as Cain which was of the wicked one, & slew his brother: & wherefore slew he him? because his own works were euill & his brothers good.

13 Marvaille not my brethren, though this world hate you.

14 We know that wee are translated from death vnto life, because we loue the brethren: hee that loveth not his brother abideth in death. —

15 Whosoever hateth his brother, is a murderer.

ye know that no man layeth his
life abiding in him.

Hereby haue we perceiued loue, that
he layed downe his life for vs: therefore wee
also to lay downe *our* lines for *ſ* brethren.
And whosoever hath this worlds good
seeketh his brother haue neede, and shew
hys compassion from him, how dwel-
leth the loue of God in him?

My litle children, let vs not loue in
word, neither in tongue *onely*, but in dede &
truth,

For thereby wee know that we are of
truth, & shal before him assure our hearts.

For if our heart condemne vs. God is
truer then our heart, & knoweth al things

Beloued, if our hart condemne vs not,
we haue we boldnesse toward God: —

And whatsoener wee aske, we receiue
of him, because wee keepe his commande-
ments, and doe those things which are plea-
sing in his sight. —

This is then his commandement, that
whosoever belecue in the Name of his Sonne Iesus
God, neither hateth, & loue one another as he gaue com-
mandement.

For hee that keepeth his commande-
ment dwelleth in him, and hee in him: and
by we know that he abideth in vs, *euen*
that Spirit which he hath given vs.

CHAP. IIII

*Having spoken somewhat touching the try-
ing of spirits, 4 For some speake after the
world, 5 and some after God. 7 He retur-
neth to charitie, 11. 19 and by the exam-
ple of God he exhorteth to brotherly loue.*

O dearly beloued, belecue not euey spi-
rit, but trie the spirites whether they
be of God: for many false prophets are gon
into this world.

S 1 2 Hereby

Every spirit which confesseth that
Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And every spirit that confesseth not
Iesus Christ to be come in the flesh, is not
of God: but this is the spirit of Antichrist,
whom ye haue heard, how that hee shoulde
come, and now already he is in this world.

4 Little children, ye are of God, and haue
overcome them: for greater is he that is in
you, then he that is in this world.

5 They are of this world, therefore speake
they of this world, & this world heareth them.

6 We are of God, he that knoweth God
heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth
not. Hereby know we the Spirit of truth,
the spirit of error.

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for
the loue commeth of God, & every one that
hath it, is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loueth not, knoweth not God:
for God is loue.

9 Herein was that loue of God made manifest
amongst vs, because God sent that
only begotten Son into this world, that we
might liue through him.

10 Herein is that loue, not that we loue
God, but that he loued vs, and sente his
only begotten Son to be a reconciliation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, we ought
also to loue one another.

12 No man hath seene God at any time.
If we loue one another, God dwelleth in us,
and his loue is perfect in vs.

13 Hereby knowe we, that wee dwell
in him, and he in vs: because he hath giuen
us his Spirit.

14 And we haue seene & do testifie, that
the Father sent that Sonne to be the Saviour
of the world.

God.

And we haue knowne, and beleue

that God hath in vs. God is loue, &

that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God,

and God in him.

Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that

we should haue boldnes in the day of iudge-

ment: for as he is, euē so are we in this world.

There is no feare in loue, but perfect

loue casteth out feare: for feare hath paine.

& he y feareth, is not perfect in loue.

We loue him, because he loued vs first.

If any man say, I loue God, and hate

his brother, he is a lyar: for how can he that

loueth not his brother whom he hath seene,

loue God whom he hath not seene?

And this commandement haue we of

him, that he that loueth God, should loue his

brother also.

CHAP. V.

Hee sheweth that brotherly loue & faith ar

things inseparable: 10 And y there is no

faith towards God, but by beleuing in christ

Who soeuer beleueth that Iesus is that

Christ, is borne of God, & euery one

that loueth him, which begate, loueth him also.

which is begotten of him.

In this we know that we loue the chil-

dren of God, when wee loue God, and keepe

his commandments.

For this is the loue of God, that wee

keepe his commandments: and his comman-

dements are not burdenous.

For all that is borne of God, ouercom-

meth this world: & this is that victory that

hath overcome this worlde, euē our faith.

Who is it that ouercommeth this world?

but hee which beleueth that Iesus is that

6 This is that Iesus Christ that came
in water and blood: not by water only, but
by water and blood: and it is that Spirit that
beareth witnesse, for that Spirit is truth.

7 For there are three, which beare record
in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the ho-
ly Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three, which beare re-
cord in the earth, the Spirit, and the water, and
the blood: and these three agree in one.

9 If wee receive the witness of men, the
witness of God is greater: for thus is the wit-
ness of God, which he testified of his Sonne.

10 Hee that beleeueth in that Sonne of
God, hath the witness in himself: he that be-
leeueth not God, hath made him a lyar, be-
cause hee beleeued not the recorde, that God
witnessed of that his Sonne.

11 And this is that record, to wit, that God
hath given vnto vs eternal life, and this life
is in that his Sonne.

12 Hee that hath that Sonne, hath that
life: and he that hath not that Son of God,
hath not that life.

13 These things haue I written vnto you,
that beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of
God, that ye may know that ye haue eternal
life, & that ye may beleeue in the Name of
that Sonne of God.

14 And this is that assurance, that wee
haue in him, that if we aske any thing accor-
ding to his wil, he heareth vs.

15 And if wee know that he heareth vs,
whatsoeuer we aske, we know that we haue
the petitions that we haue desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sinne a sin
that is not vnto death, let him aske, and hee
shal giue him life for them that sin not vnto
death. There is a sin vnto death: I say not

17 All v
18 We k
God, sinne
od, keepe
acheth hi
19 We k
hole worl
20 But w
come, and
in which i
that is,
same is
21 Litle c
holes, Ame

THE S

This Epi
remorse
the feare
continue
any not y

T He
ch
an
ha

1 For th
and shal
3 Grace
from God
Christ the
4 I reioy
children w
a come
5 And n
ting a
that sa

- 17 All vnrighteousnes is liue, but shall
come not vnto death.
18 We know that whosoever is borne of
God sinneth not: but hee that is begotten
of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wicked one
toucheth him not.
19 We know that we are of God, & the
whole world lieth in wickednesse.
20 But we know that that Sonne of God
is come, and hath giuen vs a minde to know
him which is true: and we are in him that
is true, that is, in that his Sonne Iesus Christ:
the same is that very God, & eternal life.
21 Little children, keepe your selves from
deceit, Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF IOHN.

*This Epistle is written to a woman of great
renowne, & who brought vph her children in
the feare of God, & her exhorteth her to
continue in Christian charity. 7 that she co-
muni not with Antichrist. 10 but avoid the*

I He elder to the elect Lady, and her
children, whom I loue in the truth:
and not I onely, but also all that
haue knowen the trueth,

1 For the truths sake which dwelleth in
me, and shalbe with vs for ever:

2 Grace bee with you, mercie and peace
from God the Father, & from the Lord Iesus
Christ the Son of the father, wth truth & loue

3 I reioyced greatly, that I founde of thy
children walking in truth, as we haue recei-
ued a commandement of the Father

4 And now I beseech thee Lady, (not as
writing a newe commandement vnto thee,
but that same which we had from the begin-
ning

that we loue one another.

6 And this is that loue, that we should walke after his commandements. This commandement is, that as yee haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entred into the world, which confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. He that is such one is a deceiuer and an Antichrist.

8 Look to your selues, that we loose not the things which we haue done, but that we may receiue a full reward.

9 Whosoener transgresseth and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that continueth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne.

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, receiue him not to house, neither bid him God speede:

11 For he that biddeth him, God speede, is partaker of his euil deedes. Although I haue many things to write vnto you, yet I would not write with paper and ynke: but I trust to come vnto you, & speake mouth to mouth, that our ioyes may be full.

12 The sonnes of thy elect sister, greet thee, Amen.

THE THIRD EPISTLE OF IOHN.

1 He commendeth Gaius for his hospitalitie, and reprehendeth Diotrephes for vaine glory: 10 He exhorteth Gaius to continue in good doing. 12 and in the ende commendeth Demetrius.

THe Elder vnto the beloued Gaius, whom I loue in the truerh.

2 Beloued, I wish chiefly that thou prosperedst and farest well as thy soule prospereth,

3 For

For I reioyced greatly when the Bre-
ther came, and testified of the trueth that in
thee, how thou walkest in the trueth.

4 I haue no greater ioy then this, *that is,*
to heare that my sonnes walke in verity.

5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully, whatso-
euer thou dost to the brethren, & to strangers
which bare witnesse of thy loue before
the Churches. Whome if thou bringest on
thy journey as it becometh, according to
God, thou shalt do wel,

7 Because that for his Names sake they
went forth, and tooke nothing of the Gen-
tiles.

8 Wee therefore ought to receiue such,
that we might be helpers to the trueth.

9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotre-
phes which loueth to haue the preeminence
among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will call to
your remembrance his deeds, which he doth:
stratling against vs with malicious words, &
not therewith content, neither hee himselfe
receiueth the brethren, but forbiddeth them
that would, and thrusteth them out of the
church,

11 Beloued, follow not that which is e-
uill, but that which is good: he that doth wel,
is of God: but hee that doeth euill, hath not
seene God.

12 Demetrius hath good reporte of all
men, and of the trueth it selfe: yea, and wee
our selues beare recorde, and ye knowe that
our record is true.

13 I haue many thinges to write: but I
will not with yoke and pen vwrite vnto thee:

14 For I trust I shall shortly see thee, &
wee shal speake mouth to mouth. Peace be
with thee. The friendes salute thee. Greete
the friends by name,

THE GENERALL EPISTLE
OF IVDE.

2 He warneth the godly to take heed of such men & that make the grace of God a cloke for their wantonnes, 5 and that they shall not escape unpunished, for the contempt of that grace, 6. 7. he proueth by three examples 14 & alledgeth the prophetic of Enoch 20. Finally he sheweth the godly a meane to ouerthrow all the snares of those deceiuers

IVDE a servant of Iesus Christ, and brother of Iames, to them which are called and sanctified of God the Father, and reserued to Iesus Christ:

2 Mercy vnto you, and peace and love be multiplied.

3 Beloued, when I gave all diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation, it was needefull for mee to write vnto you, to exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for the maintenance of the faith, which was once given to the Saints.

4 For there are certaine men crept in, which were before of olde ordeined to this condemnation: vngodly men they are which turne the grace of our God into wantonnes, and denie God the onely Lord and our Lord Iesus Christ.

5 I wil therefore put you in remembrance forasmuch as ye once knew this, how that the Lord, after that he had deliuered the people out of Egypt, destroyed them afterward which beleeued not.

6 The Angels also which kept not their first estate, but left their owne habitation, he hath reserued in euerlasting chaines vnder darkenes vnto the iudgement of the

day,
As So
about
lid, com
range fl
der the v
8 Like
also de
ment, and
horitic.
9 Yet
troue ag
body of M
speaking
10 But
which the
they know
without
themselu
11 W
lowed the
by the de
in the gai
12 Th
nity whe
fate, fee
without
rupt tree
placked v
13 Th
forming o
hing ita
nes of da
14 A
dam, pro
Lord cor
15 T
to rebuk
their wic
ly comu

day,

As Sodome and Gomorrhe, and the ci-
ties about them, which in like maner as they
did, committed fornication, and followed
unge flesh, are set forth for an ensample, &
under the vengeance of eternal fire.

Likewise notwithstanding the sleepers
also defile the flesh, and despise gouverne-
ment, and speake euil of them that are in au-
thoritie.

Yet Michael the Archangel, when hee
stroue against the devil, and disputed about
body of Moses, durst not blame him or cursed
speaking, but sayd, The Lord rebuke thee.

But these speake euil of those things,
which they know not: & whatsoever things
they knowe naturally, as beastes, which are
without reason, in those things they corrupt
themselves,

Woe be vnto them for they haue fol-
lowed the way of Cain, and are cast away
by the deceit of Balaams wages, and perish
in the gaine saying of Core.

These are spots in your feasts of cha-
rity when they feast with you without all
care, feeding themselves: cloudes they are
without water, caried about of windes, cor-
rupt trees or without fruite, twise dead, and
plucked vp by the rootes.

They are the raging waues of the sea,
foming out their owne shame: they are wan-
dering starres, to whom is reserved the black-
nes of darkenes for euer.

And Enoch also the senenth from A-
dam, prophesied of such saying, Beholde, the
Lord commeth with thousands of his Saints,

To giue iudgement against all men, &
to rebuke all the vngodly among them of
their wicked deeds, which they haue vngod-
ly committed, & of all their cruel speakings,

16 These are flatterers, complaisant,
walking after their own lusts: whose mouth
speake proude things, having mens persons
in admiration, because of advantage,

17 But, ye beloved, remember the words
which were spoken before of the Apostles
of our Lord Iesus Christ,

18 Howe that they tolde you that they
should be mockers in the last time, who
should walke after their own vngodly lusts

19 These are they that separate themselves
from other, natural, hauing not the Spirit.

20 But, yee beloved, edifie your selues
your most holy faith, praying any holy ghost

21 And keepe your selues in the love
of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Ie-
sus Christ vnto eternal life.

22 And haue compassion of some, in pur-
suing difference: —

23 And other saue with feare, pulling them
out of the fire, and hate euen that garment
which is spotted by the flesh. —

24 Nowe vnto him that is able to keepe
you, that ye fal not & to present you fault-
lesse before the presence of his glory wth ioye

25 That is, to God only wise, our Sauour,
be glory, and maiesty, and dominion, and
power, both now and for euer, Amen.



THE REVELATION OF
Iohn the Diuine.
CHAP. I.

1 He declareth what kinde of doctrine is here
handed, 8 euen his, that is the beginning
and ending, 12. Then the mystery of the se-
uen Candles & starres. 20 is expounded

THE

which God gave vnto him,
 shewe vnto his seruantes things
 which must shortly bee done:
 which hee sent, and shewed by his Angel
 vnto his seruant Iohn,

Who bare record of the word of God
 of the testimonie of Iesus Christ, and of
 things that he sawe.

Blessed is he that readeth, and they that
 heare the wordes of this prophetic, & keepe
 the things which are written therein: for
 the time is at hand.

Iohn to the seuen Churches which are
 in Asia, Grace be with you, and peace from
 God the Father, and from Iesus Christ, which is,
 and which was, and which is to come,
 and from the seuen Spirits, which are
 before his Throne,

And from Iesus Christ, which is that
 faithfull witnes, and that first begotten
 of the dead, and that prince of the Kings of the
 earth, vnto him that loued vs, and washed vs
 from our sinnes in his blood,

And made vs Kings and Priestes vnto
 God, euen his Father, to him, I say, be glory,
 and dominion for euermore, Amen.

Behold, he commeth with cloudes, and
 every eye shal see him, yea, euen they which
 pierced him through: and all kinreds of the
 earth shal waile before him, euen so, A-
 men.

I am Alpha & Omega, the beginning,
 and the ending, saith the Lorde, Which is, &
 Which was, and which is to come, euen the
 Almightye.

I Iohn, euen your brother, and compa-
 nion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and
 patience of IESVS CHRIST, was in
 the yle called Pathmos, for the worde of
 God

And for the witnessing of Iesus Christ
10 And I was *rauiſhed* in the ſpirit on the
Lords daye, and heard behinde me a great
voyce, as it had bene of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the
firſt & that laſt: & *ſay* which thou ſeeſt, write
in a booke, & ſende it vnto the ſeuene Churches
which are in Aſia, vnto Ephesus, & vnto
Smyrna, and vnto Pergamus, & vnto Thy-
atyræ, and vnto Sardis, & vnto Philadelpha
and vnto Laodicea.

12 Then I turned backe to ſee the voyce
that ſpake with me: and when I was turned
I ſaw ſeuene golden candleſtickes,

13 And in the mids of the ſeuene candle-
ſtickes, one like vnto the Sonne of man, clo-
thed with a garment downe to the feete, &
girded about the pappes wth a golden girdle.

14 His heade, and haire were white, as
white wooll, & as ſnow, and his eyes were
as a flame of fire,

15 And his feete like vnto fine brasse
burning as in a furnace: and his voyce as the
ſound of many waters.

16 And hee had in his right hande ſeuene
ſtarres: and out of his mouth went a ſharpe
two edged ſworde, and his face ſhone as the
Sunne ſhineth in his ſtrength.

17 And when I ſawe him, I fell at his
feete as dead: then he layde his right hande
vpon mee, ſaying vnto me Feare not: I am
that firſt and that laſt,

18 And am aliue, but I was dead: & be-
holde, I am aliue for euermore, Amen: and I
haue the keyes of hell and of death,

19 Write the thinges which thou haſt
ſeene, and the thinges which are, and the
thinges which ſhal come hereafter.

20 The myſterie of the ſeuene ſtars which
thou ſaweſt in my right hand, and the ſeuene
golden

and I will be a candlestick, is this, The seven starres
Angels of the seven Churches : and
the seven candlestickes which thou sawest,
are the seven Churches.

CHAP. II.

John is commaunded to write those things
which the Lord knew necessary to the churches
of Ephesus, 8 of the Smyrnians, 12. Of
Pergamus, 18 and of Thyatira, 25 that they
keepe those things which they receiued of
the Apostles.

Vnto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus
write, These things saith hee
I know thee, thou walkest in the middes of the seven golden
candlestickes.

I know thy workes, and thy labour, &
thy patience, and howe thou canst not beare
the things which are euill, and hast examined
them which saye they are Apostles and
are not, and hast founde them liars.

And thou wast burdened, & hast patience,
and for my Names sake hast laboured,
and hast not fainted.

Neuerthelesse, I haue somewhat against
thee, because thou hast left the first loue.

Remember therefore from whence thou
art fallen, and repent, and do the first works:
and I will come against thee shortly, and
will remooue thy candlestick out of his
place except thou amend.

But this thou hast, that thou hatest the
works of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate.

Let him that hath an eare, heare what
the Spirit saith vnto the churches, To him
that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the
tree of life, which is in the midst of the Para-
dise of God.

And vnto the Angel of the church of the
Smyr-

I know thy workes and tribulation
poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know
the blasphemy of them, which say that they
Jewes and are not, but are the Synagogue
of Satan.

10 Feare none of those things, which thou
shalt suffer: behold, it shall come to pass
that the devil shall cast some of you into
prison, that ye may be tried, and ye shall be
tribulation tenne dayes: bee thou faithful
vnto the death, and I will giue thee
crown of life.

11 Let him that hath an eare, heare what
the Spirit sayeth to the Churches: Hee
ouercometh, shall not be hurt of the second
death.

12 And to the Angel of the Church write,
This saith hee which hath the sharpe sword
with two edges,

13 I know thy workes, and where thou
dwellest, euerywhere Satans throne is,
thou keepest my Name, and hast not denyed
my faith, euery in those dayes when Antiochus
my faithfull martyr was slaine among you
where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I haue a few things against thee,
because thou hast them that maintain
the doctrine of Balaam, which taught Balac
to put a stumbling blocke before the childre
of Israel, that they should eate of things
sacrificed vnto idoles, and commit fornication
on.

15 Euen so hast thou them that maintain
the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which I
hate.

16 Repent thy selfe, or else I will come
to thee shortly, and will fight against thee
with the sword of my mouth.

17 Let him that hath an eare, heare what

overcommeth, which is hid, and which no man knoweth, saving hee that seeth it.

18 And vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Thyatira write, These things saith the Sonne of God, which hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, & his feete like fine saffe.

19 I know thy workes, and thy loue, and thy faith, and thy patience, and thy labours, and that they are more at the last, then at the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I haue a few things against thee, that thou sufferest the woman Jezabel, which called her selfe a Prophetesse to teach and to deceiue my seruants, to make them commit fornication, and to eat meate sacrificed vnto idoles.

21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Beholde, I wil cast her into a bed, and them that committed fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repent them of their workes.

23 And I wil kil her children with death: and all the Churches shall know that I am hee which search the reins and hearts: and I will giue vnto euery one of you according vnto your workes.

24 And vnto you I saye, the rest of them of Thyatira, as many as haue not this learning, neither haue knowen the deepenes of Jezebel (as they speake) I will put vpon you some other burden,

25 But that which ye haue already, hold fast till I come.

26 For hee that overcommeth and keepeth

with my wordes vnto the end, and
gibe power ouer nations.

27 And he shall rule them with a rod
of iron: and as the vessels of a potter, shall they
be broken.

28 Euen as I receiued of my Father,
will I giue him the morning starre.

29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what
the Spirit saith to the churches.

CHAP. III.

1 *The first Epistle sent to the Pastours of the
Church of Sardis, 7 Of Philadelphia. 14
of the Laodiceans 16, that they be not
warne, 20 but endeuor to further gods*

AND write vnto the Angel of the church
which is at Sardis, These thinges say
hee that hath the seuen Spirits of God,
the seuen starres, I knowe thy workes: for
thou hast a name that thou liuest, but thou
art dead.

2 Bee awake, and strengthen the things
which remaine, that are ready to die: for I
haue not found thy works perfite before me.

3 Remember therefore, how thou hast
receiued and heard, and hold fast and repent.
If therefore thou wilt not watch, I will come
on thee as a theefe, and thou shalt not know
what houre I will come vpon thee.

4 *Notwithstanding* thou hast a few names
yet in Sardis, which haue not defiled their
garments: and they shall walke with mee in
white: for they are worthy.

5 He that ouercommeth, shall be clothed
in white array, and I will not put out his
name out of the booke of life, but I will con-
fesse his name before my Father, and before
his Angels.

6 Let him that hath an eare, heare what
the Spirit saith vnto the churches.

7 *And write vnto the Angel of the church*

of Philadelphia, These things saith
that is holy, and true, which hath a key
which openeth, and no man shutteth,
and shutteth, and no man openeth.

I know thy workes behold, I haue set
before thee an open doore, and no man can
shut it: for thou hast a little strength & hast
kept my word, & hast not denied my Name.
Behold, I wil make them of the Syna-
gogue of Satan which cal themselves lewes
they are not, but doe lie: beholde. *I say*, I will
bring them, that they shal come, and wor-
ship before thy seeto, and shal knowe that I
haue loued thee.

Because thou hast kept the word of my
prophecy, therefore I wil deliuer thee from
the temptation, which wil come vpon all
the world, to them that dwel vpon the earth.
Behold, I come shortly: hold y^e which
I haue giuen thee, that no man take thy crowne.

He that ouercommeth, wil I make
a pillar in the Temple of my God, & he shal
goe no more out: and I will write vpon him
my Name of my God, and the name of the
City of my God, *which is*, the new Hierusalem,
which commeth downe out of heauen
from my God, and *I wil write vpon him* my
new Name.

I tell him that hath an eare, heare what
the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

And vnto the Angel of the Church of
Laodicea, write, These things saith A-
lpha, that faithfull and true witnesse, that be-
ginning of the creatures of God.

I know thy works, that thou art neither
colde nor hote, I woulde thou wert
colde or hote.

Therefore because thou art luke warme,
neither colde nor hote, it will come
that I shal spew thee out of my mouth.

17 For thou sayest, I am rich, & increased with goods, and have neede of nothing, and knowest not howe thou art wretched, and miserable and poore, and blinde, and naked.

18 I counsel thee to buy of mee gold tried by the fire, that thou mayest be made rich, & white raiment, that thou mayest bee clothed, and that thy filthy nakednesse doe not appere: and annoynt thine eyes wth eye salme, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I loue, I rebuke & chasten, be zealous therefore, and amend.

20 Behold, I stand at y^e doore, & knocke. If any man heare my voice & open y^e doore, I wil come in vnto him, and wil suppe with him, and he with me.

21 To him y^e overcommeth, wil I graunt to sit with me in my throne, euen as I overcame, and sit with my Father in his throne.

22 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Another vision conteining the glory of Gods Maiestie: 2. Which is magnified of y^e foure beasts, 10 and the foure & twentie Elders.*

After this I looked, and behold, a doore was open in heauen, & the first voyce which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet speaking wth me, saying, Come vp thither, & I will shew thee which must be done hereafter.

2 And immediatly I was raptified in the spirit, & beholde, a throne was set in heauen, and one sat vpon the throne.

3 And he that sat, was to looke vpon, like vnto a Iasper stone, and a Sardine, and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like to an Emeraud,

4 And round about the throne were foure and twentie seates, & vpon the seates I saw foure and twentie Elders, sitting, clothed in

And out of the throne proceeded light-
nings, and thundrings, and voyces, and there
were seuen lampes of fire burning before the
throne, which are the seuen spirits of God.
And before the throne there was a sea
like vnto cry stall: and in the midst of
the throne, and round about the throne were
seuerall beasts full of eyes before and behinde.
And the first beast was like a Lyon, & the
second beast like a calfe, & the third beast had
a face as a man, & the fourth beast was like
an eagle.
And the foure beasts had eche one of
them fixe wings about him, & they were full
of eyes within, and they ceased not day nor
night, saying, Holy holy holy Lord God Al-
mighty, Which was, and Which is, & Which
is to come.

And when those beasts gave glory, and
honour, and thanks to him that sat on the
throne, which liueth for ener and euer.
The foure and twentie Elders fell down
before him that sat on the throne, and wor-
shipped him that liueth for euermore, & cast
their crownes before the throne saying,
Thou art worthy O Lord to receive
glorie and honour, and power: for thou hast
created all things, & for thy willes sake they
were created, and haue bene created.

CHAP. V.

The booke sealed wth seuen seales. 3 which none
could open & that Lamb of God, 9 is thought
worthy to open. 12 euen by the consens of all
the company of heauen.

And I saw in the right hand of him that
sat vpon the throne a booke writtē with-
out, & on the backside sealed wth seuen seales,
And I saw a strong Angel which preached

REVELATION.

1 And a loud voyce, Who is worthy to
open the booke, and to loose the seale thereof.

2 And no man in heaven, nor in earth,
neither vnder the earth was able to open
the booke, neither to looke thereon.

3 Then I wept much, because no man was
found worthy to open & to read the booke,
neither to looke thereon.

4 And one of the Elders sayde vnto me,
Weepe not: beholde, that Lion which is of the
tribe of Iuda, that roote of David hath
conquered to open the Booke, and to loose
the seuen seales thereof.

5 Then I beheld, & lo in the mids of the
throne, and of the foure beasts, and in the mids
of the Elders, stood a Lambe as though
he had bene killed, which had seuen hornes
& seuen eyes, which are the seuen spirits of
God, sent into al the world.

6 And hee came and tooke the Booke out
of the right hand of him that sat vpon the
throne.

7 And when he had taken the Booke, the
foure beasts and the foure and twentie Elders
fel down before the Lambe. hauing euery
one harpes & golden vials full of odours,
which are the prayers of the Saints,

8 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou
art worthy to take the Booke, & to open
the seales thereof, because thou wast killed,
and hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood
of euery kindred and tongue, and people, and
nation.

9 And hast made vs vnto our God kings
and Priests. and we shal reigne on earth
for euer.

10 Then I behelde, and I heard the voyce
of many Angels round about the throne,
saying, about the beasts, and the Elders, and the
angels were ten thousand times ten thousand,
and the multitude of the angels.

... saying with a loude voyce, *Worthy is the Lambe* $\frac{1}{2}$ *was killed, to receiue power, riches, and wisdom, and strength, and glory, and praise.*

13 And al $\frac{1}{2}$ creatures which are in hea-
 uen, and on the earth, and vnder the earth,
 and in the sea, and al that are in them be-
 gins saying, Praise and honour, and glory, and
 power be vnto him that sitteth vpo $\frac{1}{2}$ throne
 vnto the Lambe for euermore:

14 And the foure beasts said, Amē, and
 the twentie Elders fel downe & wor-
 shipped him that liueth for euermore.

CHAP. VI.

*The Lambe openeth the first seale of the
 Booke. 3 the second, 5 the third, 7 the fourth
 9 the fift. 12 and the sixt, and the arise murders,
 famine, pestilēce, & outcries of Saints, earth-
 quakes, and diuers strange sights in heauen.*

After, I beheld whē the Lambe had ope-
 ned one of the seales, and I heard one
 of the foure beasts say, as it were the noise of
 thunder, Come and see.

Therefore I beheld, and loe, there was a
 white horse, and hee that sat on him, had a
 robe, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, &
 he went forth conquering that hee might o-
 vercome.

And whē he had opened $\frac{1}{2}$ second seale
 I heard $\frac{1}{2}$ second beast say, Come and see.

And there went out another horse, that
 was red, and power was giuen to him that
 sat thereon, to take peace from the earth, &
 that they should kill one another, and there
 was giuen vnto him a great sword.

And when he had opened $\frac{1}{2}$ third seale,
 I heard the third beast say, Come and see.

Then I behelde, and loe, a blacke horse, and
 that sat on him, had balāces in his hand.

6 And I heard a voyce in the midst of the
 saying

the beastes, say, & measure of wheat for a peny, and three measures of barley for a peny, and oyle, and wine hurt thou not.

7 And when hee had opened the fourth scale, I heard the voice of y^e fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse, and his name that sate on him was death, and hell followed after him, and power was giuen vnto them ouer the fourth part of the earth, to kil wth sword & with hunger, and wth death, and with the beastes of the earth.

9 And whē he had opened the fifth scale, I sawe vnder the altar the soules of thē that were killed for the word of God and for the testimonie which they maintained.

10 And they cried with a loud voyce saying, How long, Lord, which art holy and true, doest thou not iudge, & avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And long white robes were giuen vnto euery one and it was said vnto them, y^e they should rest for a little season, vntill their fellowe seruants, & their brethren y^e should be killed euen as they were, were fulfilled.

12 And I beheld, when hee had opened the sixt scale, & loe, there was a great earthquake. & the sunne was blacke as sackcloth of haire, and the moone was like blood.

13 And the starres of heauen fel vnto the earth as a figge casteth her greene figg, when it is shaken of a mightie winde.

14 And heauen departed away, as a scrole when it is rolled, and euery mountaine and yle were moued out of their places.

15 And the kings of the earth, & y^e great men, & the rich men, & the chiefe captains, and the mightie men, and euery bondmā, & euery freeman, hid themselves in dennes, and among the rockes of the mountaines,

16 And

And I saw the dead, both great and small, stand before him, and give unto him their reward. And he said unto them, 'I know you, because you have kept the commandments of the Lamb.'
17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who can stand?

CHAP. VII.

The Angels coming to hurt the earth, & stayed until the Elect of the Lord, & of all tribes were sealed. 13 Such as suffered persecution for Christs sake, 16 have great felicitie, 17 & 18.

And after that, I saw foure Angels stand on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure winds of the earth, that the winds should not blow on the earth, neither on the sea, neither on any tree.

And I sawe another Angel come vp from the East, which had the scale of the living God, and he cryed with a loud voyce to the foure Angels, to whom power was given to hurt the earth, & the sea, saying,

3 Hurt yee not the earth, neither the sea, neither the trees, til wee haue sealed the seruants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed, and there were sealed an hundred, and foure and fourtie thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar

11 4 were

were sealed twelve thousand
of Zabulon, were sealed

8 Of the tribe of Iudas
twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Iudas
were sealed twelve thousand.

9 After these things I saw a
great multitude, which no man could
of all nations and kinreds, and tongues,
stood before the throne, and before the
Lambe, clothed with long white robes,
and palmes in their hands.

10 And they cried with a loud voyce, say-
ing Saluation *commeth* of our God, that sitteth
vpon the throne, and of the Lambe.

11 And al the Angels stood round about
the throne, and about the Elders, & the four
beastes, and they fell before the throne on
their faces, and worshipped God.

12 Saying, Amen, Praise, & glory, & wil-
dome, and thanks, and honour, and power, &
might be vnto our God for euermore. Amen.

13 And one of the Elders spake, saying,
vnto mee, What are these which are arrayed
in long white robes? & whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him, Lord thou knowest.
And he said to mee, These are they,
which came out of great tribulation, & haue
washed their long robes, & haue made their
long robes white in the blood of y^e Lambe.

15 Therefore are they in the presence of
the throne of God, and serue him day and
night in his Temple, and he that sitteth on
the throne, wil dwell among them.

16 They shal hunger no more, neither
thirst any more, neither shal the Sonne light
on them, neither any heate.

17 For the Lambe, which is in the mids of
the throne, shal gouerne them, & shal leade
them vnto the liuely founraines of waters, &
God shal wipe away al teares frō their eyes.

CHAP

And I saw
of God
angels.

Then
the Al-
much odour
ser vwith
golden alta

And the
prayers of
out of the

And the
led it with
earth, and
and light

Then
saw trump
the trumpe

So the
there was
and they
part of tre
was burn

And
pet, & as i
with fire,
part of the

And the
were in the
part of the

10 Th

the seventh scale, & the
up with odours. 6
north with trum-
blowes, and fire fal-
turned into blood
bitter, 12 and the

had opened the seventh
was silence in heaven about
an hour.

And I saw the seven Angels which stood
before God, and to them were given seven
trumpets.

3 Then another Angel came and stood be-
fore the Altar, hauing a golden censur, and
such odours was giue vnto him y he should
offer with the prayers of al Saints vpon the
golden altar which is before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the odours with the
prayers of the Saints, went yp before God,
out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angels tooke the censer, & fil-
led it with fire of the altar, and cast it into
earth, and there were voyces, and murdrings
and lightnings and earthquakes.

6 Then the seven Angels which had the
seuen trumpets, prepared themselves to blow
the trumpets.

7 So the first Angel blew the trumpet, &
there was haile and fire mingled with blood
and they were cast into the earth, & y third
part of trees was burnt, and al greene grasse
was burnt.

8 And the second Angel blew the trum-
pet, & as it were a great mountaine, burning
with fire, was cast into the sea, and the third
part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which
were in the sea, & had life, died, & the third
part of ships were destroyed.

10 Then the third Angel blew y trumpet,

and there fel a great starre from heauen
like a torch, and it fell into the third
part of the riuers, and into the foure founteyns of
waters.

11 And the name of the starre is called
wormewood: therefore the third part of the
waters became wormewood, and many men
died of the waters because they were made
bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel bleweth $\frac{y}{y}$ trum-
pet, and the third part of the sunne was smit-
ten, and the third part of the moone, and the
third part of $\frac{y}{y}$ starres, so $\frac{y}{y}$ the third part of
them was darkened; and the day was smitten
that the third part of it could not shine, and
likewise the night.

13 And I behelde, and heard one Angel
flying through the mids of heauen, saying w
a loud voyce, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants
of the earth because of the sounds to come
of the trumpet of the three Angels, which
were yet to blow the trumpets.

CHAP. IX.

1 The first Angel bloweth the trumpet, 3 and
spoyleing locusties come out. 13 The sixth An-
gel bloweth, 16 and bringeth forth horse-
men. 10 to destroy mankind.

And the first Angell blew the trumpet,
and I sawe a starre fal from heauen vn-
to the earth, and to him was given the key
of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And he opened the bottomlesse pit, and
there arose the smoke of the pit, as $\frac{y}{y}$ smoke
of a great furnace, & the sunne, and the ayre
were darkened by the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of $\frac{y}{y}$ smoke locusts
vnto the earth, & vnto them was given pow-
er, as the scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commanded them, $\frac{y}{y}$ they
should not hurt the grasse of the earth, nei-
ther

neither any tree: nor
any green which haue not the scale of
their foreheads.

And to them was commanded γ they
should not kill them, but that they should be
wounded five moneths, & γ their paine should
be as the paine that commeth of a scorpion,
when he hath stung a man.

6 Therefore in those dayes shal men seeke
death, and shall not find it, and shall desire to
die, and death shall flee from them.

7 And the forme of the locusts was like
vnto horses prepared vnto battel, & on their
heads were as it were crowns like vnto gold
& their faces were like the faces of men.

8 And they had haire as the haire of wo-
men, & their teeth were as γ teeth of lyons.

9 And they had habergions like to ha-
bergions of yron: & the sound of their wings
was like the sound of charrets when many
horses runne vnto battel.

10 And they had tailles like vnto scor-
pions, and there were stings in their tailles, &
their power was to hurt men five moneths.

11 And they haue a king ouer them; which
is the Angel of the bottōlesse pit, whose name
in Hebrew is Abaddon, and in Greeke hee is
Named Apollion, *that is, destroying.*

12 One woe is past, and behold, yet two
woes come after this,

13 ¶ Then the sixt Angel blew γ trum-
pet, and I heard a voyce, frō the foure hornes
of the golden altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixt Angel, which had γ
trumpet, Loose the foure Angels, which are
bound in the great riuer Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were loosed,
which were prepared at an houre, at a day, at
a moneth, & at a yere, to slay γ third part of
men.

16 And

16 And the number of horsemen of war
weretwenty thousand times ten thousand
for I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I sawe the horses in a vision
& them that sate on a hē, hauing fire habey-
gions; and of Iacynth, & of brimstone, & the
heads of the horses were as the heads of ly-
ons: & out of their mouthes went forth fire
and smoke: and brimstone.

18 Of these three was the third part of
men killed, *that is*, of the fire, & of ſ smoke,
& of the brimstone, which came out of their
mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouthes,
and in their tailles: for their tailles were like
vnto serpents, & had heads, wherewith they
hurt.

20 And ſ remnant of the men which were
not killed by these plagues, repented of the
workes of their hands, that they should not
worship deuils, and idoles of gold and of sil-
uer, and of brasie, and of stone, & of wood,
which neither can see, neither heare nor ge-
t.

21 Also they repented not of their mur-
ther, & of their sorcerie, neither of their for-
nication, nor for their theft.

CHAP. X.

1 Another Angel appeareth clothed with a
cloud, 2 holding a booke open, 3 & crieth out,

ANd I saw another mighty Angel come
downe from heauen, clothed with a
cloud, and the rainebow vpon his head, & his
face was as the sunne, & his feete as pillars
of fire.

2 And hee had in his hand a litle booke o-
pen, & he put his right foote vpon the sea, &
his left on the earth.

3 And cryed with a loud voice, as when
a lyon roareth: and when he had cried, ſ
thunders vttered their voices.

And when the seven thunders had vt-
their voices, I was about to write : but
heard a voyce from heaue, saying vnto me,
Take vp those things which the seven thun-
ders haue spoken, and write them not.

And the Angel which I saw stood vpon
the sea, and vpon y^e earth, lift vp his hand to
swear.

6 And I sweare by him that liueth for ever-
more, which created heauen, and the things
that therein are, and the earth, and y^e things
that therein are, and the sea, and the things
which therein are, y^e time should be no more.

7 But in the daies of the voice of y^e seventh
Angel, when he shal begin to blow y^e trum-
pet, even the mysterie of God shall be fini-
shed, as he hath declared to his seruants the
prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from hea-
uen, spake vnto mee againe, and said, Goe, &
take the litle booke which is open in the hand
of the Angel, which standeth vpon the sea,
and vpon the earth.

9 So I went vnto the Angel, and said to
him, Giue me y^e litle booke. And he said vnto
me, Take it, and eate it vp, and it shall make
thy belly bitter, but it shalbe to thy mouth
as sweete as hony.

10 Then I tooke the litle booke out of
Angels hand, and ate it vp, and it was in my
mouth as sweet as hony: but when I had e-
aten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said vnto me, Thou must pro-
pheticie againe among the people & nations,
and tongues, and to many Kings.

CHAP. XI.

1 The Temple is commaunded to bee measured.

3 The Lord stirreth vp two witnessses .7 who
the beast murdereth, & no man burieth the.

Then was giuen me a reede, like vnto a
rodde, & the Angel stood by saying,

REVELATION.

life and mete the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein,

2 But the court which is without the Temple, cast out, & mete it not: for it is given vnto the Gentiles, and the holy city shall they treade vnder foote, two and fourtie monethes.

3 But I wil giue power vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousand, two hundred and threescore dayes, clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are two olive trees and two candlestickes, standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man wil hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouthes, and deuoureth their enemies: for if any man wold hurt this, thus must he be killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, & it raine not in the dayes of their prophesying & haue power ouer waters to turne the into blood, and to smite the earth with al manner plagues, as often as they wil.

7 And when they haue finished their testimony, the beast that cometh out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against the, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their corpses shall lie in the streets of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where our Lord also was crucified.

9 And they of the people and kinreds, & tongues, and Gentiles shall see their corpses three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their carkeises to be put in graues:

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, shall reioyce ouer them and be glad, & shall send gifts one to another: for these two Prophets vexed them that dwell on the earth.

11 But after three dayes & an halfe, the spirit of life commeth from God, shall enter

into

CHAP. 19.

and they shall stand upon their
: & great feare shall come vpon the which
them.

11 And they shall heare a great voyce from
men, saying vnto them, Come vphither,
they shall ascend vp to heauen in a cloud,
their enemies shall see them.

12 And the same houre shall these bee
great earthquake, and the tenth part of the
earth shall fall, and in the earthquake shall bee
killed in number seven thousand: and the re-
mainder were sore feared, and gaue glory to the
God of heauen.

13 The second vvoe is past, & behold, the
third vvoe vvil come anon.

14 And the seventh Angels blew his trum-
pet, and there were great voyces in heauen,
saying, The kingdomes of this world are our
Lords, and his Christs, and he shall reigne for
euermore.

15 Then the foure and twenty Elders,
which sat before God on their seates, fel vpon
their faces, and worshipped God.

16 Saying, We giue thee thanks, Lord
God Almighty, Which art, & Which wast,
& Which art to come: for thou hast receiued
thy great might, & hast obtained thy king-
dome.

17 And the Gentiles were angry, and thy
wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that
they should be iudged, and that thou shouldest
giue reward vnto thy seruants the Pro-
phets, & to the Saints, & to them that feare
thy Name to smal and great and shouldest
destroy them, which destroy the earth.

18 Then the Temple of God was opened
in heauen and there was seene in his Tēple
his Arke of his couenānt: and there were light-
nings, and voyces, and thundrings and earth-
quakes and much haile.

CHAP. XII.

1 A woman appeareth & trauailing with child
4 whose child the Dragon would deuoure,
but Michael overcommeth him. & casteth
him out, 12 and the more he is cast down
and vanquished, the more fiercely he exerci-
seth his subtilties.

AND there appeared a great wonder in
heauen: A woman clothed with sunne
and the moone was vnder her feet, and vpon
her head a crown of twelue starres.

2 And she was with child, and cried tra-
uailing in birth, and was pained ready to be
deliuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in
heauen: for behold, a great red dragon hauing
seuen heads, & ten hornes, & seuen crownes
vpon his heads:

4 And his taile drew the third part of the
starres of heauē, & cast the to the earth. And
the dragon stood before the woman, which
was ready to be deliuered, to deuoure her
child when shee had brought it forth.

5 So shee brought forth a mā child, which
should rule al nations with a rod of iron: &
that her child was taken vp vnto God, & set
in his throne.

6 And the woman fled into wilderness
where shee hath a place prepared of God,
they should feed her there a thousand, &
four hundred & three score dayes.

7 And there was a battell in heauen, Mi-
chael and his Angels fought ag'inst the dra-
gon and the dragon fought and his Angels.

8 But they preuailed not, neither was there
place found any more in heauen.

9 And the great dragon that olde serpent
called the deuil & Satan was cast out, which
deceiveth al the world: he was cast in

with, & his Angels were cast out with

Then I heard a loud voice in heaven,
Now is saluation, and strength and
power of our God, and the power of
his wrath for the accuser of our brethren is cast
down, which accused them before our God
day and night.

But they overcame him by the blood
of that lambe, and by that word of their tes-
timony, and they loved not their liues vnto
death.

Therefore reioyce ye heauens, & ye that
dwell in them, Woe to the inhabitants of the
earth, and of the sea : for the deluil is come
down vnto you, which hath great wrath,
knowing that he hath but a short time.

And when the dragon saw that he
was cast vnto the earth, he persecuted the
woman which had brought forth the man
child.

But to the woman were given two
wings of a great eagle, that she might flee
into the wilderness, into her place, where she
is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a
time, from the presence of the serpent.

And the serpent cast out of his mouth
water after the woman, like a flood, that he
might carie her to be caried away of the flood.

But the earth holpe the woman, & the
earth opened her mouth and swallowed vp
the flood, which the dragon had cast out of
his mouth,

Then the dragon was wroth with the
woman, and went and made warre with
her seed, which keepe the com-
mandments of God; and haue the testimo-
ny of Iesus Christ.

And I stood on the sea sand.

REVELATION.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The beast with many heads is described, which draweth the most part of the world to idolatry.

AND I sawe a beast rise out of the sea, hauing seuen heads, & ten hornes, and vpon his hornes were ten crownes, and vpon his heads the name of blasphemie.

2 And the beast which I saw, was like a Leopard, and his feete like a beares, and his mouth as the mouth of a lyon: and the dragon gaue him his power and his throne, and great authority.

3 And I sawe one of his heads as it were wounded to death, but his deadly wound was healed, and all the world wondered and followed the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gaue power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast! who is able to warre with him?

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth that spake great things and blasphemies, and power was giuen vnto him, to doe twofourty moneths.

6 And hee opened his mouth vnto blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his Name and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saints, and to overcome them: and power was giuen him ouer euery kinde and tongue, and nation.

8 Therefore all that dwell vpon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the booke of life of the Lambe, which was slaine from the beginning of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare.

10 If any lead into captiuitie, he shall

scribēd. **10** Capitūtie: if any kill with the sword, he shall not be killed by a sword: here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

11 And I beheld another beast coming out of the earth, which had two hornes like the Lambe, but he spake like the dragon.

12 And he did all that the first beast could do before him, and hee caused the earth, and they which dwell therein, to worship the beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he did great wonders, so that hee made fire to come downe from heauen on earth, in the sight of men,

14 And deceived them that dwell on the earth by the signes, which were permitted him to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make the image of the beast, which had the wound of a sword, and did live.

15 And it was permitted to him to give spirit vnto the image of the beast, so that the image of the beast should speake, and should cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16 And he made al both smal and great, rich and poore, free and bonde, to receiue a marke in their right hād or in their foreheade.

17 And that no man might buy or sell, save hee that had the marke, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath wit, count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundred threescore and sixe.

CHAP. XIII

The Lambe standeth on mount Sion. 4 worshippers.

Then I looked, and loe, a Lambe stood on mount Sion, and with him an hundred thors, fourty & foure thousand, having his face

the Name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voyce from heauen, as the sound of many waters, and as the sound of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers harping with their harpers,

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, & before the foure beasts and the Elders: & no man could learne the song, but the hundreth, fourty & foure thousand, which were bought from the earth,

4 These are they, which are not defiled with women: for they are virgins: these follow the Lambe whithersoever hee goeth: these are bought from men, being the first fruits vnto God, and to the Lambe.

5 And in their mouthes was founde no guile: for they are without spot before the throne of God.

6 ¶ Then I sawe another Angel flie in the midst of heauen, hauing an everlasting Gospel, to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to euery nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loude voice, Feare God, and giue glory to him: for the houre of his iudgement is come: and worship him that made heauen and earth, and the sea, and the fountaines of waters.

8 And there followed another Angel, saying, Babylon that great citie is fallen, it is fallen, for shee made all nations to drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 ¶ And the third Angel followed them, saying with a loude voyce, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receiue his marke in his forehead, or on his hand,

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, yea, of the pure wine which is powred into the cup of his wrath

shall be tormented in fire & brimstone
the holy Angels, & before the Lamb.
And the smoke of their torment shall
rise euermore: & they shall haue no rest
day nor night, which worship the beast and
his image, and whosoener receiueth the print
of his name.

Here is the patience of Saints: here
are they that keepe the commandments of
God, and the faith of Iesus.

Then I heard a voyce from heauen,
saying vnto mee Write, The dead which die
in the Lord, are fully blessed. Euen so saide
the Spirit: for they rest from their labours, &
their workes follow them.

¶ And I looked, and beholde, a white
cloude, and vpon the cloude one sitting like
unto the Sonne of man, hauing on his head a
golden crowne, & in his hand a sharpe sickle

And another Angel came out of the
temple, crying with a loud voyce to him
sate on the cloude, Thrust in thy sickle and
reape for the time is come to reape: for the
haruest of the earth is ripe.

¶ And he sate on the cloude, thrust in
his sickle on the earth, & the earth was reaped

Then another Angel came out of the
temple, which is in heauen: hauing also a
sharpe sickle.

¶ And another Angel came out from
the altar, which had power ouer fire, and cryed
with a loude crye to him that had the sharpe
sickle, and saide, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle,
and gather the clusters of the vineyarde of
the earth: for her grapes are ripe.

¶ And the Angel thrust in his sharpe sic-
kle on the earth, and cut downe the vines of
the vineyard of the earth, and cast them in-
to that great winepresse of the wrath of God

¶ And the winepres was troden without

REVELATION.

the citie, & blood came out of the winepress
vnto 5 horse bridles, by the space of a thousand
land and fixe hundredth furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

2 The seven Angels having the seven last
plagues. 3 They that conquered the beast
praise God. 6 To the seven Angels, 7 seven
vials full of Gods wrath: are deliuered.

AND I saw another signe in heauen, great
and marueilous, seven Angels hauing
the seven last plagues: for by them is fulfilled
the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a glassie sea, mingled
wth fire, and them that had gotten victory
of the beast, and of his image, and of his
marke, and of the number of his name, stand
at the glassie sea, hauing the harpes of God.

3 And they sung the song of Moses the
seruant of God, and the song of the Lambe,
saying, Great & marueilous are thy works,
Lorde God almighty: iust and true are thy
wayes, King of Saints.

4 Who shall not feare thee, O Lorde, and
glorifie thy Name! for thou onely art holy,
and all nations shall come and worship be-
fore thee: for thy iudgements are made ma-
nifest.

5 And after that I looked, & behold, the
temple of the tabernacle of testimony was
open in heauen.

6 And the seven Angels came out of the
Temple, which had the seven plagues, clothed
in pure and bright linnen, and hauing
their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beasts gaue vnto
the seven Angels seven golden vials full of
the wrath of God, which liueth for euermore.

8 And the Temple was full of the smoke
of the glory of God, & of his power, & no
man was able to enter into the Temple, till

17 T
th of G
liuers
rise the
the grea
Nd
Tem
ur way
the wr
3 And
al vpon
a griet
the mar
worship
3 An
all vpe
a dea
in the se
4 An
ial vpp
en, and
5 An
saye, Le
waffe:
these th
6 F
and Pr
them b
7 A
ary foy
and ri
8 A
vial o
him t
9
phean
er oue
seu
10 giu

plagues of the seven Angels were ful-

CHAP. XVI,

17 The Angels powre out the seven vi-
als of Gods wrath giuen vnto them, & so
seuerall plagues arise in the world. 18 to ter-
rifie the wicked, 19 and the inhabitants of
the great citie.

And I heard a great voyce out of the
Temple, saying to the seue Angels, Go
your wayes, and powre out the seven vials
of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

And the first went, and powred out his
vial vpon the earth: and there fell a poyson
and grievous sore vpon the men, which had
the marke of the beast, & vpon them which
worshipped his image.

And the second Angel powred out his
vial vpon the sea, and it became as y blood
of a dead man: and euery living thing dyed
in the sea.

And the third Angell powred out his
vial vpon the riuers and fountaines of wa-
ter, and they became blood.

And I heard the Angel of the waters
saye, Lord, thou art iust, Which art, & Which
wast: and holy, because thou hast iudged
these things.

For they shed the blood of y Saints,
and Prophets, and therefore hast thou giuen
them blood to drinke: for they are worthy.

And I heard another out of the Sanctu-
ary say, Euen so, Lorde God almighty, true
and righteous are thy iudgements.

And the fourth Angel powred out his
vial on the sunne, and it was giuen vnto
him to torment men with fire,

And men boyled in great heat, & blas-
phemed y Name of God, which had pow-
er ouer thes plagues, and they repented not
to giue him glory.

10 And the fift Angell powred
vpon the throne of the beaft, and the
kingdome waxed darke, and they gnawed
their tongues for sorow,

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen
for their paines, and for their sores, and re-
pented not of their workes.

12 And the fixt Angell powred our his vi-
al vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and $\frac{1}{2}$ wa-
ter thereof dried vp, $\frac{1}{2}$ the way of the Kings
of the East should be prepared.

13 And I sawe three yncleane spirits like
froges come out of the mouth of that dra-
gon, and out of the mouth of that beaft, and
out of the mouth of that false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of devils, wor-
king miracles, to goe vnto the kings of the
earth, & of the whole world, to gather them
to the battell of that great day of God Al-
mightie.

15 Behold, I come as a thiefe. Blessed is
he that watcheth and keepeth his garments,
lest he walke naked, & men see his filthines)

16 And they gathered them together in-
to a place called in Hebrew. Arma-gedon.

17 And the seventh Angell powred out
his vial into the ayre: and there came a loud
voyce out of the Temple of heauen from the
throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voyces, & thundring,
and lightnings, and there was a great earth-
quake, such as was not since men were vpon
the earth, euen so mightie an earthquake,

19 And the great citie was deuided into
three partes, and the citie, of the nations sel,
and that great Babylo came in remembrance
before God, to giue vnto her the cup of the
wine of the fierceneffe of his wrath.

20 And euery yle fled away, & $\frac{1}{2}$ moun-
taines were not found.

21 And

CHAP. XVII.

And there fell a greathail, like talents
 of haire vpon the men, & men blasphem-
 ed God because of the plague of the haire,
 for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

That great whore is described, & with whom
 the Kings of the earth committed fornication.

Then there came one of the seuen An-
 gels, which had the seuen vials, & tal-
 led with me, saying vnto me, Come: I will
 shew thee the damnation of the great whore
 that sitteth vpon many waters.

1 With whom haue committed fornication
 the Kings of the earth, & the inhabitants
 of the earth are drunken with the wine of
 her fornication.

2 So he caried me away into the wilder-
 nesse in the Spirit, and I saw a womā sit vpon
 a scarlet coloured beast, ful of names of
 blasphemie, which had seuen heads, and ten
 hornes.

3 And the woman was arrayed in purple
 and scarlet, and gilded with golde, and pre-
 cious stones, and pearles, & had a cup of gold
 in her hand, ful of abominations, and filthi-
 nesse of her fornication.

4 And in her forehead was a name writ-
 ted, A mysterie, that great Babylon that mo-
 ther of whoredomes, and abominations of
 earth.

5 And I sawe the woman drunken wth the
 blood of saints, and with the blood of the
 martyrs of Iesus: and when I saw her, I won-
 dered with great marueile.

6 Then the Angel said vnto me, Wherefore
 marueilest thou? I wil shew thee the myste-
 rie of that woman, & of that beast, that bea-
 reth her, which hath seuen heads and ten
 hornes.

8 The beast that was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and shall go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth, shall wonder (whose names are not written in the Booke of life, from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, & yet is.

9 Here is the minde that hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountaines, whereon the woman sitteth: they are also seven Kings.

10 Five are fallen, and one is, and another is not yet come: and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was & is not, is even the eight, and is one of the seven, & shall goe into destruction.

12 And the ten hornes which thou sawest, are ten Kings, which yet haue not receiued a kingdome, but shall receiue power, as Kings at one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shall give their power and authority vnto the beast.

14 These shall fight with the Lambe, & the Lambe shall overcome them: for hee is Lord of Lords, and King of kings: and they that are on his side, called and chosen, and faithful.

15 And hee said vnto mee: The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth are people, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou sawest vpon the beast, are they that shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall catch her flesh, and burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his wil, & to do it of one consent, for to

gus

The hor
out.

And a

Ang
ing great
ed with

3 And
voice, sayi

that great
on of deui

and a cage

3 For
wine of t

kings of
tion with

are waxe
pleasures

4 And
den say, c

be not pa
receiue o

5 For
and God

6 Rev
you, and

works: a
you, fill

7 In
liued in

ment an
sit being

see no m
8 Th
day, dea

And I saw the city, until the
of God.
And I saw the city which thou sawest,
that great citie, which reigneth over the
of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

The horrible destruction of Babylon is set
out.

And after these things, I sawe another
Angel come downe from heauen, ha-
ving great power, so that the earth was light-
ned with his glory,

2 And he cried out mightily with a loud
voyce, saying, It is fallen, it is fallen, Babylon
that great citie, and is become the habitation
of devils, and the hold of all foule spirits,
and a cage of every vncleane & hateful bird.

3 For all nations haue drunken of the
wine of the wrath of her fornication, & the
kings of the earth haue committed fornication
with her, & the marchants of the earth
are waxed rich of the abundance of her
pleasures.

4 And I heard another voyce from hea-
uen say, Goe out of her, my people, that yee
be not partakers of her sinnes, and that yee
receiue out of her plagues.

5 For her sinnes are come vp vnto heauen,
and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her euen as she hath rewarded
you, and giue her double according to her
works: and in the cup that she hath filled
you, fill her the double.

7 In as much as she glorified her selfe, &
liued in pleasure, so much giue ye to her sor-
row and sorow: for she saith in her heart, I
sit being a queene, and am no widow, & shall
see no mourning.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come at one
day, death & sorow, & famine, and she shall

for that God which con-
demned her, is a Strong Lord,
And the kings of the earth shall be-
wile her, and lament for her, which have
delighted in her, and lived in pleasure
with her, when they shall see that smoke of
her burning.

10 And shall stand a farre off for feare of
her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great ci-
ty Babylon, & mighty city: for in one hour
is thy iudgement come.

11 And the marchants of the earth shall
sweepe and waile ouer her, for no man buy-
eth their ware any more.

12 The ware of golde and siluer, and of
precious stone, and of pearles, & of fine lin-
nen, and of purple, and of silke, and of scar-
let, and of all maner of Thyne wood, and of
all vessels of yuorie, and of all vessels of most
precious wood, and of brasse, and of yron, &
of marble,

13 And of Cynamom, & odours, & oyna-
ments, and frankincense, & yvine and oyle,
and fine flowre and wheate, and beastes, and
sheep, and horses, and charers, and seruantes,
and soules of men.

14 (And the apples that thy soule lusted
after, are departed from thee, and all thinges
which are fatte and excellent, are departed
from thee, & thou shalt finde the no more);

15 The matchants of these things which
were waxed rich, shall stand a farre off from
her, for feare of her torment, weeping and
wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great city,
that was clothed in fine linnen and purple,
and scarlet, and girded with gold and preci-
ous stone and pearles.

17 For in one houre so great riches are
come to desolation. And euery shipmaster, &
all

the peo-
ple, and w
and a far
18 And
her bu
to this g
19 And
cry. w
10. y grea
that had
for in one
10 O h
Apostles a
shed her to
21 The
stone like
sea, saying
my Baby
more.
22 And
and of pi
more in t
euery craf
thee: & t
no more
23 An
no more
gropes an
more in t
great me
chantme
24 A
the Prop
that wer
1. The be
ging t
And
A voi
saying, H

the people that occupie the earth, and whoſoeuer traffike in the ſea, ſhall
and a farre off,

18 And cry, when they ſee the ſmoke of
her burning ſaying, What is this that
is ſo this great citie?

19 And they ſhal caſt duſt on their heads,
& cry weeping, and wailing, & ſay, Alas
the great citie, wherein were made rich
all that had ſhips on the ſea by her trading:
for in one houre ſhe is made deſolate.

20 O heauen, reioyce of her, and ye holy
Apoſtles and Prophets: for God hath puniſhed
her to be reuenged on her for your ſakes.

21 Then a mighty Angell tooke a
ſtone like a great milſtone, and caſt it into the
ſea, ſaying, With ſuch violence ſhall the great
city Babylon be caſt, and ſhalbe founde no
more.

22 And the voyce of harpers & muſicians
and of pipers, & trumpeters ſhalbe heard no
more in thee, and no craſtelman, of whatſo-
euer craſt he be, ſhall be founde any more in
thee: & the ſound of a milſtone ſhalbe heard
no more in thee.

23 And the light of a candle ſhall ſhine
no more in thee: and the voyce of the bride-
groom and of the bride ſhall be heard no
more in thee: for thy merchants were the
great men of the earth, and with thine in-
chantments were deceiued all nations.

24 And in her was founde the blood of
the Prophets, and of the Saints, and of all
that were ſlaine vpon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1. *The heauēly company prayſe God for an-
giſting the bloud of his ſeruants on the whore.*

And after theſe things I heard a grea-
t voice of a great multitude in heauen,
ſaying, Hallelu-iah, ſaluation, and glory and
honour

REVELATION.

1 Honour and power be to the Lord our God
2 For true, and righteous are his iudgements: for hee hath condemned that great
whore, which did corrupt the earth with
her fornication, and hath avenged the blood
of his seruants shed by her hand.

3 And againe they sayd, Hallelu-iah: and
that her smoke rose vp for euermore.

4 And the foure & twenty Elders, & the
foure beasts fel down & worshipped God
sate on y throne, saying, Amen, Hallelu-iah.

5 Then a voyce came out of the throne,
saying, Praise our God, al ye his seruants, &
ye that feare him, both smal and great.

6 And I heard like a voyce of a great
multitude, and as the voyce of many waters,
and as the voyce of strong thundrings, say-
ing Hallelu-iah: for the Lord that God that
Almightie one hath reigned.

7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, & giue glo-
rie to him: for the marriage of that Lambe
is comē. & his wife hath made her self ready

8 And to her was granted, that she should
be arrayed with pure fine linnen & shining,
for y fine linnen is y righteousnes of Saints

9 Then hee said vnto mee, Write, Blessed
are they which are called vnto the Lambes
supper. And he said vnto me, These words of
God are true.

10 And I fell before his feete, to worship
him: but he sai vnto mee, See thou do it not:
I am thy fellow seruant, and one of thy bre-
thren, which haue the testimony of Iesus
Worship God: for the testimonie of Iesus is
the Spirit of Prophecie.

11 And I saw heauen open, and behold, a
white horse, and he that sate vpon him, was
called Faithful and true, and he iudgeth and
fighteth righteously.

12 And his eyes were as a flame of fire,

And he had many crowns; & he was written, & no man knew but himself. And hee was clothed with a garment of blood, and his name is called, THE LORD OF GOD.

14 And the hostes which were in heauen followed him vpon white horses, clothed with linnen white and pure.

15 And out of his mouth went a sharpe sword, that with it he should smite the heathen; for he shall rule them with a rod of yron: for he is that treadeth the winepresse of the fiercenes & wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath vpon his garment, and vpon his thigh a name written, THE KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

17 And I saw an Angel stand in the Sun, who cryed with a loud voyce, saying to all the fowles that did flie by the mids of heauen, Come, and gather yourselves together vnto the supper of the great God.

18 That yee may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of his Captaines, and the flesh of mighty men, & the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all free men & bondmen, and of smal and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their hostes gathered together to make battell against him, that sat on the horse, and against his armie.

20 But the beast was taken, and with him that false prophet & wrought miracles before him, whereby hee deceived them that receiued the beastes marke, and them that worship his image. These both were cast into a lake of fire, burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sword of him that sitteth vpon the horse, which cometh out of his mouth, and all the fowles were filled full with their flesh.

1 The Angel bindeth Satan for a thousand
yeeres & being loosed, he stirreth vp Gog
Magog, that is, priue & open enemies against
the Saints.

And I saw an Angel come down from
heaven having the key of the bottom-
lesse pit, and a great chaine in this hand,

2 And he tooke the dragon that old
pent, which is the devil, and Satan, and
bound him a thousand yeeres:

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit
and he shut him vp, and sealed the doore
on him, that hee should deceiue the people
no more, til the thousand yeeres were fulfilled:
for after that he must be loosed for a little
season.

4 And I saw seates: and they sate vpon
them, & iudgement was giuen vnto them, &
I saw the soules of them that were beheaded
for the witnesse of Iesus, & for the word of
God, & which did not worship the beast, nei-
ther his image, neither had taken his mark
vpon their foreheads, or on their hands: & they
lived & reigned with Christ a thousand yeeres.

5 But the rest of the dead men shall not
liue againe, vntill the thousand yeere be finished:
this is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed & holy is he, that hath part in the
first resurrection: for on such the second death
hath no power: but they shall be Priests of God,
& of Christ, & shall reigne with him a thousand
and yeere.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are ex-
pired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison.

8 And shall go out to deceiue the people
which are in the foure quarters of the earth,
even Gog & Magog, to gather them together
to battell, whose number is as the sand
of the sea.

9 And they went vp into the plaine of the
earth.

and they compassed the tents of the
about, and the beloued city: but fire
downe from God out of heauen, and
burned them.

10 And the deuill that deceived the, was
cast into a lake of fire and brimstone, where
the beast and that false prophet are, & shall
be tormented euen day and night for euer-
more.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and
he that sat on it, from whose face fled a-
way both the earth and heauen, and their
people was no more found.

12 And I saw the dead both great & small
stand before God: and the books were ope-
ned, and an other booke vvas opened, vvhich
is the booke of life, & the dead vvere iudged
of those things vvhich vvere vwritten in the
books, according to their vworks.

13 And the sea gaue vp her dead, vvhich
were in her, and death and hel deliuered vp
the dead, vvhich vvere in them: & they vvere
iudged euery man according to their vworks.

14 And death, and hel vwere cast into the
lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And vvhosoever vvas not found vwrite-
n in the booke of life, vvas cast into the lake
of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

*He describeth newe Hierusalem descending
from heauen, & the Bride the Lambs wife*

And I saw a new heauen and a new
earth: for the first heauen, and the first
earth vwere passed away, and there vvas no
more sea.

2 And I Iohn sawe the holy city newe
Hierusalem come downe from God out of
heauen, prepared as a bride trimmed for her
husband.

with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and shall be their God with them.

4 And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes: and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, neither crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the first things are passed.

5 And he that sat upon the throne said, Beholde, I make all things new: and he said unto me, Write, for these words are true, and true.

6 And hee sayde vnto me, It is done: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end: I wil giue to him that is athirst, of the water of life freely.

7 He that ouercommeth, shall inherit all things, and I wil be his God, and he shall not come to death.

8 But the fearefull and vnbeleeuing, and the abominable, and murtherers, & whoremongers, and forcerers, and idolaters, and all liars shall haue their part in the lake which burneth with fire & brimstone, which is the second death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen Angels which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come: I wil shew thee the Bride, the Lambs wife.

10 And he caried me away in the spirit to a great & high mountaine, & he shewed mee that great city, that holy Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God,

11 Having the glory of God: & her shining was like vnto a stone most precious, as Iasper stone cleare as cryстал,

12 And had a great wal and high, & had twelve gates, and twelve

of Israel,
And there were three gates
on the three gates, on the South
and on the West side three

And the wall of the citie had twelue
portions, and in them the Names of the
twelue Apostles.

And he that talked with mee had a
reede to measure the citie withal, &
the wall thereof,

And the citie lay foure square, & the
length is as large as the breadth of it, and he
measured the citie with the reede, twelue
thousand furlongs: & the length, & the breadth,
and the height of it are equal.

17 And he measured the wal thereof, an
hundredth, fourtie and foure cubites by the
measure of man, that is of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wal was of
Iasper, and the citie was pure gold, as
it were cleare glasse,

19 And the foundations of the wal of the
citie were garnished w^{al} maner of precious
stones: the first foundation was Iasper: the
second of Saphir: the third of a Chrysolite:
the fourth of an Emerauld:

20 The fift of a Sathonix: the sixt of a
Jardius: the seueneth of a Chrysolite: the
eight of a Beryl: the ninth of a Topazo: the
tenth of a Crysoprasus: the eleuenth of a
Iach: the twelfth an Amethist.

21 And the twelue gates were twelue
pearles, and every gate is of one pearle, &
the street of the citie is pure gold, as shining glasse.

22 And I saw no Temple therein: for the
Lord God Almighty and the Lambe are the
Temple of it,

And this city hath no need of sunne
neither of the Moone to shine in it: for the
glory of God did light it: and the lambe is
light of it.

14 And the people which are saued, shall
walke in the light of it: and the Kings of the
earth shall bring their glory & honour vnto
it.

15 And the gates of it shall not be shut by
day: for there shall be no night there.

16 And the glory & honour of the Gentiles
shall be brought vnto it,

17 And there shall enter into it none vn-
cleane thing, neither whatsoever worketh
abomination or lies: but they which are writ-
ten in the Lambes booke of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The river of water of life is shewed, 2 and
the tree of life: 6, 7 Then followeth the con-
clusion of this prophesie.

And he shewed me a pure river of wa-
ter of life, cleare as crySTALL, proceeding
out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe
1 In the middes of the streete of it, and of
either side of the river, was the tree of life,
which beareth twelue manner of fruits, & giueth
fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree
serued to heale the nations with.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but
the throne of God, and of the Lambe shall be
in it, and his seruants shall serue him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his name
shall be in their foreheads,

5 And there shall be no night there: and
they neede no candle, neither light of the
sunne: for the Lord God giueth them light
and they shall reigne for evermore.

6 And he said vnto me, These works are
faithful & true: & the Lord God of the hea-
uens sent his Angel to shew vnto
seruants

things which must shortly be fulfilled.

Behold, I come shortly, Blessed is he that keepeth the words of the prophesie of this Booke.

8 And I am Iohn, which sawe and heard these things: & when I had heard & scene, I fell downe to worship before the feete of the Angel, which shewed me these things.

9 But he sayd vnto me, See thou ~~doe~~ it not: for I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keep the wordes of this Booke, worship God.

10 And he said vnto me, Seale not the wordes of the prophesie of this Booke: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is vniust, let him be vniust still: & he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: & he that is righteous let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And beholde, I come shortly, and my reward is with me, to giue euery man according as his vvorke shalbe.

13 I am Alpha & Omega, the beginning & the end, the first and the last.

14 Blessed are they that do his comandements, that their right might be in the tree of life, & may enter in through the gates into the city.

15 For without shalbe dogs, & enchatens, and whoremongers, & murderers, & idolaters, and whosoever loueth, or maketh liars.

16 I Iesus haue sent mine Angel, to testifie vnto you these things in the Church: & I am the roote and the generation of Dauid, the bright morning starre.

17 And the Spirit & the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say Come: and let him that is athirst, come: and let whosoever wil, take of the water of lyfe freely.

18 For I protest vnto every man that heareth

And if any man shall add vnto these things, God
shall add vnto him y^e plagues that are writ-
ten in this booke.

And if any man shall diminish of the
things of the booke of this prophecie, God
shall take away his part out of the booke of
life, and out of the holy citie, and from those
things which are written in this booke.

So He which testifieth these things, sayth,
Surely I come quickly, Amen, Euen so, come
Lord Iesus.

21 The grace of our Lorde Iesus Christ
be with you al, Amen.

THE END.



AT DORT
Printed, by Isaac Canin.
1601.

God
writ-

of the
God
oke of
those
e.

sayth,
, come

Christ

in.